

THE GREAT RULER

BOOK 02

Heavenly Silkworm Potato

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Great Ruler

(大主宰)

by

Heavenly Silkworm Potato

Tian Can Tu Dou

(天蚕土豆)

Synopsis

The Great Thousand World. It is a place where numerous planes intersect, a place where many clans live and a place where a group of lords assemble. The Heavenly Sovereigns appear one by one from the Lower Planes and they will all display a legend that others would desire as they pursue the road of being a ruler in this boundless world.

In the Endless Fire Territory that the Flame Emperor controls, thousands of fire blazes through the heavens.

Inside the Martial Realm, the power of the Martial Ancestor frightens the heaven and the earth.

At the West Heaven Temple, the might of the Emperor of a Hundred Battles is absolute.

In the Northern Desolate Hill, a place filled with thousands of graves, the Immortal Owner rules the world.

A boy from the Northern Spiritual Realm comes out, riding on a Nine Netherworld Bird, as he charges into the brilliant and diverse world. Just who can rule over their destiny of their path on becoming a Great Ruler? In the Great Thousand World, many strive to become a Great Ruler.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Thyaeria @ WuxiaWorld

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 101 – Heavenly Fusion Stage

The entire temple was enshrouded by an amazing Spiritual Energy pressure. Underneath this pressure, everybody's face changed, and they stared in horror at the grey-robed old man.

This was a Spiritual Energy pressure that surpassed a Spirit Stage powerhouse. It could only have been coming from someone who stepped into the first stage of the Three Heavens Stage, the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

The so-called Three Heavens Stage was not a single stage. Rather it referred to three separate levels. The first level was known as the Heavenly Fusion Stage, the second level was known as the Heavenly Transform Stage, and the third level was the Heavenly Completion Stage.

Right now, the Spiritual Energy Pressure emitted from the grey-robed old man was something that only a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse would possess.

Heavenly Fusion Stage!

Everybody within the temple felt their mouth stiffen. How many years had it been since a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse appeared in the Northern Spiritual Realm? A powerhouse of this level would be considered as a genuine powerhouse even within the Hundred Spirit Heavens, not to mention within the Northern Spiritual Realm!

There were no less than 10 Spirit Stage powerhouses present at the scene. However, even with this number, they were completely powerless in front of a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse.

This is because the gap between them was just too big.

Just as its name suggested, the Heavenly Fusion Stage was able to integrate with the world and manipulate a portion of the Spiritual Aura within the world. The power from simply their gestures

could destroy a mountain. It was not something that an ordinary Spirit Stage powerhouse could compare with.

"He's Liu Jingshan, the previous Territory Lord of the Liu Territory, and once the strongest person within the Northern Spiritual Realm. So he was actually still alive!"

Within the temple, numerous gazes met with a bit of dismay. They could feel a bit of unease. The Northern Spiritual Realm could only maintain the current setup because a few forces had a relatively similar strength. Nobody was able to make another submit to them completely. Therefore, the Northern Spiritual Realm, because of this, had remained peaceful for so many years. However, Liu Jingshan, who had suddenly appeared, instantly broke the balance between the forces.

A Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse would instantly increase the Liu Territory's strength to an exponentially terrifying extent.

Mu Feng's gaze fixated itself onto Liu Jingshan as he clenched his fists. Beside him, Mu Chen's face turned serious. It seemed that the news they obtained was true.

At this moment, Mu Chen turned around to look at the other Territory Lords. He discovered that their expressions were exceptionally ugly. Hint of fear emerged in their eyes, when they stared at Liu Jingshan. This reaction made Mu Chen sigh. If the 8 territories were to join forces, they wouldn't be particularly afraid of Liu Jingshan. But unfortunately, none of them had the courage to fight against a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse.

Inside the temple, a few individuals could not breathe due to the atmosphere. As he slowly walked in, Liu Jingshan glanced at everybody. Seeing this, Liu Qingtian hurriedly handed over his seat. However, Liu Jingshan waved his hand. His eyes stared at the crowd as he said faintly: "It's been a while since we've met with each other. I wonder if you still remember this old man?"

"Ohoho, Senior Liu was the strongest person within the

Northern Spiritual Realm back in the days. Although you'd disappeared for 3 years, your prestige still remained. How could we forget you?" Tang Shan let out a dry cough and spoke with an unnatural, forced smile.

Liu Jingshan smiled faintly and muttered, "Since everybody remembers me, you should know my personality as well. I have endured this 'scattered setup' within the Northern Spiritual Realm for many years. Now it's time to resolve it."

Hearing this, everybody's face changed.

"Senior Liu. We do not have much ambition within the Northern Spiritual Realm and do not wish to fight against the other large realms within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. Ohoho, isn't it quite nice right now," A Territory Lord asked.

Liu Jingshan glanced at him and answered, "Although you do not have much ambition, I do... From today onwards, the Liu Territory will form the Northern Spiritual Alliance, and I will bear the responsibilities of being the chieftain. As for the rest of you, it is voluntary whether you decide to join or not. However, although I said that, there are only allies and enemies within my eyes. If you're not willing to be my allies, then I can only treat you as my enemies."

Numerous faces inside the temple froze. Implied in Liu Jingshan's words was an obvious threat.

Liu Qingtian and the others smiled as they stared at everybody's changing complexion. With a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse, the Liu Territory had surpassed all the other forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Liu Qingtian glanced at Mu Feng, who had a calm expression, and smiled wickedly. Mu Feng, Mu Feng, there is no chance of you turning the tables this time.

"Ohoho, what Senior Liu said is correct. We cannot just occupy a

corner of the land throughout our lives. My White Horse Clan is willing to join the Northern Spiritual Alliance and serve Senior as our chieftain." The clan leader of the White Horse Clan, who spoke earlier, was the first to reply. He had a flattering expression, which made many curl their lips in disgust at him.

Although they were disgusted by his act, the situation had gone beyond many people's expectations. Under Liu Jingshan's indifferent gaze, the leaders of many forces did not dare to argue back. At this moment, Lie Yan was still lying down on the ground. He was a Spirit Stage powerhouse, yet he didn't possess the strength to fight back against Liu Jingshan.

The true difference between a Spirit Stage and a Heavenly Fusion Stage had been revealed.

Thus, a few forces immediately followed the White Horse Clan and accepted the union. However, the remaining 8 territories' Territory Lord did not present their views yet. It was evident that they were struggling unwillingly within their hearts.

Liu Jingshan watched this scene calmly. Then, his eyes turned towards the 8 Territory Lords as he said slowly: "What about you?"

The 8 Territory Lord exchanged gazes with each other. Every single one of them had an exceptionally ugly expression plastered on their face.

"Senior Liu..." Tang Shan sighed and cupped his hand, "The Tang Territory is the something that I've devoted my life to. Therefore, I'm afraid that I cannot accept your invitation to join this union."

"So it seems that Territory Lord Tang Shan isn't interested in becoming an ally of mine. if that's the case..." Liu Jingshan smiled faintly. However, the smile gradually turned cold. The Spiritual Energy Pressure that filled the temple instantly gathered at Tang Shan's location.

Tang Shan's body suddenly became tense. In the next moment, dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from his body. The Spiritual Energy lights formed a golden tiger behind him, as a powerful Spiritual Energy emitted out.

"Roar!"

The golden tiger unleashed a roar. Ferocity flashed through Tang Shan's eyes, as he charged forward. The Spiritual Energy surged out and formed a golden claw. Then, it smashed viciously towards Liu Jingshan at lightning speed.

Tang Shan knew how powerful Liu Jingshan was. Therefore, he had to put all of his strength into his attacks. When facing a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse, he must have the mindset of going all out from the very beginning.

But against Tang Shan's violent offense, Liu Jingshan remained motionless. A touch of ridicule flashed through his murky eyes. He extended his bony hand out and smacked casually.

Buzz!

The instant Liu Jingshan smacked downwards with his palm, the Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to be affected by it. It gathered at his palm at an extraordinary speed and instantly turned into a giant clump of Spiritual Energy. Afterwards, it smacked down and collided against Tang Shan's fierce offensive.

Boom!

Shockwaves of Violent Spiritual Energy spread throughout the temple. Cracks suddenly spread through the ground, and even a few pillars were smashed to pieces.

Puchi.

Flying through the sky, Tang Shan suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood. The golden tiger behind his back dimmed as he flew backwards.

In just one attack, Tang Shan, who was close to being a Spirit Stage Late Phase, had been completely defeated.

“Dad!” Seeing Tang Shan gravely injured, Tang Qian’Er’s face turned pale and she urgently called out.

Liu Jingshan remained motionless with an indifferent expression. Separated by air, he let out a punch. Rampaging Spiritual Energy surged out and smashed fiercely towards Tang Shan. Judging from his appearance, it seemed that Liu Jingshan was going to land the killing blow in order to set an example.

Seeing this, Mu Feng’s eyes turned cold. He tilted his head and quickly said to Zhou Ye: “Zhou Ye, if the situation goes terribly, take Mu Chen and leave. Go hide inside the Northern Spiritual Academy!”

Zhou Ye’s face twitched. He knew that even Mu Feng did not have the slightest confidence of dealing with this crisis. To them, a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse was much too powerful. It was enough to break the balance within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Mu Chen remained silent. However, he was clenching his fists tightly. At the same time, a hint of madness flashed through his slightly drooped eyes.

He did not enjoy watching his loved ones being killed while he escaped to a place far away, in order to get revenge a few years later. It wasn’t part of his character to just sit and watch. He would rather fight with all he’s got and seek a chance for survival amidst the near-death situation.

Swish!

After Mu Feng quickly informed Zhou Ye, his body rushed out and appeared in front of Tang Shan. Spiritual Energy rushed out unreservedly from his body as he fired off a punch.

Bang.

A fiery red Spiritual Energy swept out like flames. It collided

heavily against the Spiritual Energy attack that was blasted out.

Again, Violent Spiritual Energy shockwaves erupted out. Mu Feng's body shook and he quickly retreated a dozen steps. His fist was also shaking. Then, he stared solemnly at Liu Jingshan and said in a deep voice, "Senior Liu, is it necessary to act this savagely?"

"Mu Feng, huh? When you built a reputation for yourself, you were still a young boy. I never expected that you would be able to obtain the accomplishments you have today. You're quite amazing."

Liu Jingshan looked calmly at Mu Feng. A flash of coldness appeared within his sunken eyes as he said: "However, no matter who it is, I will personally kill them if they dare to interfere with the Liu Territory dominating the Northern Spiritual Realm today!"

"Then, I'll want to seek guidance from Senior Liu!"

Mu Feng's eyes turned cold. He knew that the Mu Territory and Liu Territory were enemies. Liu Jingshan would never let them go this easily. If that's the case anyway, why not fight to the bitter end?

"Brother Mu, I'll fight with you," Tang Shan exclaimed. Mu Feng by himself definitely was not Liu Jingshan's opponent. If they did not join forces during this moment, they wouldn't have the chance to do so in the future.

"Everyone. I do not want to hand over the efforts that I have devoted half my life to, to the Liu Territory. If you're still worrying about the consequences, the next one to be targeted will be you!" Tang Shan glanced at the other Territory Lords as he shouted out these words.

Hearing Tang Shan's cry, the other 6 Territory Lords' expressions changed. If they attacked, it would mean that they chose that camp. However, if they let Mu Feng and Tang Shan be

defeated, they wouldn't have another choice and could only grovel beneath the Liu Territory.

"Senior Liu. You've really gone overboard this time. My Hong Territory is doing fine right now. We do not want to join the Northern Spiritual Alliance!" Hong Territory's Territory Lord, Hong Ling, gritted her teeth and screamed out loud.

"My Luo Territory does not wish to join either!" Luo Territory's Territory Lord also agreed.

"My Yan Territory as well!" Lie Yan, who was injured by Liu Jingshan earlier, shouted out in anger.

In a few seconds, including Mu Feng and Tang Shan, a total of 5 Territory Lords stepped forward against Liu Jingshan. The remaining 3 Territory Lords were still wavering. A Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse simply gave off far too much pressure for them.

Inside the temple, many leaders watched the scene progress. Their faces turned pale. How many years had it been since they'd seen such a formation?

"Five Territory Lords, huh, is there anyone else?" Liu Jingshan's eyes glanced at Mu Feng and the others. He actually grinned and let out a cold smile.

"A group of ignorant fools..."

Liu Jingshan suddenly straightened up his hunched-over body. His grey robe fluttered without any winds as an amazing Spiritual Energy stormed out within the temple. In an instant, more cracks began to appear throughout the temple.

Boom!

Liu Jingshan's murky eyes turned ferocious. He took a step forward fiercely, as if he was an avalanche raining down from above. The large temple could not withstand the massive Spiritual Energy and began to collapse.

Accompanied with an amazing Spiritual Energy, Liu Jingshan’s voice, which was dripping with killing intent, resounded out through the sky.

“Since these are your decisions, don’t blame me for being merciless!”

Both the mother and daughter's name is pronounced Hong Ling.

Chapter 102 – Deal

Boom!

Within Nine Territory City, an amazing Spiritual Energy exploded into the sky in a pillar of light. Fierce winds suddenly started blowing and everyone in the city felt the Spiritual Aura within the world tremble.

Numerous shocked gazes stared at the source of the light pillar. They had never seen such a powerful fluctuation of Spiritual Energy in their lives. The extent of the Spiritual Energy wasn't something that a Spirit Stage powerhouse could compare with.

When did a powerhouse of this level appear in the Northern Spiritual Realm?

"No matter who attempts to stop my Liu Territory today, I will kill them all!"

An old figure slowly emerged from within the towering Spiritual Energy light pillar. He did not need to borrow external strength in order to stand within the air. His sharp gaze was like a hawk and his cry resounded throughout the entire city.

Swish!

From the collapsing temple, five figures charged out. Each of them relied on their dense Spiritual Energy in order to stay afloat in midair. These five lights occupied a different direction, yet, they were all facing the old figure.

"That's Mu Feng and Tang Shan…They're actually five Territory Lords!"

"What are they doing? Just where did that old man come from? He has such a terrifying Spiritual Energy!"

"Holy! That's Liu Jingshan. That old man is still alive! Moreover, with this strength… Did this guy break past the Spirit Stage to

advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage?”

The commotion in midair instantly attracted everybody’s gaze. Furthermore, shocked voices rang out when they noticed the confrontation in the sky. It immediately caused an uproar in the city.

“It seems that the Liu Territory is attempting to form a Northern Spiritual Alliance and wants to gobble up the other forces. Five of the Territory Lords disagreed, so they joined forces to fight against the Liu Territory!”

Soon, news regarding the commotion spread out, which undoubtedly caused a bit of a shock to the people within the city. To the Northern Spiritual Realm, this major event was definitely sufficient to cause chaos.

“Mu Feng, do you really believe that you can defeat me if the five of you join forces? Based on the fact that you’re all pretty strong, I will give you another chance. After all, it would be a severe blow to the Northern Spiritual Alliance if all of you were killed!” In the sky, Liu Jingshan stared at Mu Feng and the others as he said this in a deep voice.

“Senior Liu, I think you should give up on this. We aren’t that ambitious and would only like to guard our own territories. Regarding the conquering of the Hundred Spirit Heavens, you should do it by yourself,” replied Mu Feng with a faint smile.

“How stubborn!”

A small chill flashed through Liu Jingshan’s eyes. He did not speak anymore. It seemed that the battle today was inevitable. Otherwise, the Liu Territory would not be able to scare the other forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

“Boom!”

A powerful Spiritual Energy erupted like a volcano from within Liu Jingshan’s body. The overwhelming Spiritual Energy surged

out and turned into a black double-headed dog behind him as a vicious aura emitted from the giant dog's body.

Seeing the black double-headed giant dog behind Liu Jingshan's body, Mu Feng and the others' expressions turned serious. This was a Double-Headed Hellhound, which was ranked 98th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. It was able to spew both winds and flames. Although it was not considered to be a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, it was not far behind. Within the High Rank Spiritual Beasts, it was regarded as a top existence.

The Double-Headed Hellhound formed by Liu Jingshan's Heavenly Fusion Stage strength seemed as if it was truly there. Compared to the Spiritual Beasts condensed by Mu Feng and the others, it was clearly more powerful.

"Today, I'll let you experience a Heavenly Fusion Stage's true strength!"

Liu Jingshan stepped on the air and immediately spun his hands around. The Spiritual Aura in the air gathered in his palm forming red-hot flames and black winds.

Exhaling wind and flame was the Double-Headed Hellhound's ability. Since Liu Jingshan had ingested its Soul Essence, he was naturally able to use this ability, Windfire Spiritwave!

Liu Jingshan smacked out with his palms. From one hand, flames twisted around like a giant fire python while black winds condensed into an enormous black tempest on the other hand.

Boom!

Together with an extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation, the fiery python and black tempest stormed towards Mu Feng and the others.

Seeing Liu Jingshan's powerful attack, Mu Feng and the others' expression had turned completely solemn. They did not dare to treat it with the slightest neglect. The Spiritual Energy within

their bodies was pushed to the extreme. Behind them, five powerful Spiritual Beasts were formed from Spiritual Energy light.

Among these 5 Spiritual Beasts, the fiery giant bird behind Mu Feng was naturally the most powerful. After all, the Dragonfire Bird was the only one that had truly reached Heaven Rank.

In the sky, the five territory lords used all their strength to form an attack with their dense Spiritual Energy. The overwhelming attack swept out and collided with the fiery python and the black tempest.

Boom!

The collision caused a massive rumble through the sky endlessly. Waves of Spiritual Energy rolled outwards and forcefully razed the buildings beneath the battlefield.

Countless individuals watched the battle in the sky with shocked expressions. Mu Feng, Tang Shan and the others were all reputed top-class powerhouses within the Northern Spiritual Realm. At this moment, all of them had pushed their strength to the limit. However, Liu Jingshan, who was facing them, remained motionless as he stood in the sky. Under his palms, wind and fire surged. He could actually mobilize the Spiritual Aura within the world casually, and so, with an unmovable state like a mountain, he blocked the fierce offensive from Mu Feng and the others.

So a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse was actually this terrifying. Even when he was against 5 Spirit Stage powerhouses, he still had complete control over the situation.

From within the temple, Mu Chen and the others rushed out. When they noticed the amazing confrontation in the sky, their faces turned grim. A Heavenly Fusion Stage's strength had completely surpassed their imaginations.

"Dad." Tang Qian'Er's pretty face was filled with anxiety. Her beautiful eyes were slightly red. It was evident that the current

situation was making her feel extremely uneasy.

Beside Tang Qian'Er, Hong Ling also bit her lips tightly. Her father had died when she was young. Through all these years, she and her mother had depended on no one but each other. If something were to happen to her mother here, it would be a severe blow to her.

"Don't worry," Mu Chen said. He looked at the panicked expressions of the two girls and reached out to hold their slender wrists. Then, he pulled both of them behind him and said with a gentle voice, "They'll be fine."

Tang Qian'Er and Hong Ling stared at this boy's calm, handsome face. At this moment, they seemed to get affected by his calmness and the anxiety within their hearts faded away slightly.

"They'll be fine? What a foolish dream. My grandfather hasn't even gotten serious yet. Do you really believe that it was possible for them to defeat a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse if they joined forces? How naïve." At a corner of the collapsed temple, Liu Mubai stared at Mu Chen with a mocking expression.

Mu Chen glanced at him and could not be bothered to respond. At the same time, Tang Qian'Er and Hong Ling winced behind Mu Chen's back.

"Hmph, Hong Ling. You should come over to my side. If you persuade your mother to join the Liu Territory, I'll guarantee your safety!" Liu Mubai grunted as he stared at Hong Ling, who was wincing behind Mu Chen's back. He had always liked her. Although they seemed fairly close within the Northern Spiritual Academy, they were only friends. He had always wanted to advance their relationship, but had failed to do so.

Hong Ling glanced at Mu Chen and immediately gritted her teeth. She reached out with her icy and petite hand to hold onto the corner of Mu Chen's clothes, as if this act could ease her anxiety a little.

Seeing this, Liu Mubai's face turned blue. Then, he immediately shot a vicious glance at Mu Chen. Soon, I'll make it so that you would wish that you were dead!

"Uncle Zhou, how is it?" Mu Chen ignored Liu Mubai and asked Zhou Ye, who was standing next to him and was staring at the sky with a serious expression.

"Not good. That old fart Liu hasn't used his true strength yet..." Zhou Ye's face darkened: "Even for the five Territory Lords together, it's unlikely that they can be his opponent."

"Then Uncle Zhou should help as well." Mu Chen proposed.

"No, I must protect you. If the situation turns out bad, I will take you away with me. We can die, but you can't!" Zhou Ye said in a deep voice.

"I won't leave dad behind." Mu Chen clenched his hands and replied slowly.

"Little Mu, you can't act recklessly. While there's life, there's hope. As long as you enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, you would be able to surpass the old fart within 3 years. When that happens, we need you to take revenge for us!" Zhou Ye snapped.

"If there is no other choice, I will do that." Mu Chen gritted his teeth. Within his eyes, a hint of scarlet color emerged.

"However, I will use everything I have to find a chance within the despair first. I won't let you die in front of me!"

Zhou Ye stared at the boy and let out a bitter laugh as he firmly patted Mu Chen's shoulder. How could there be a chance within the current situation? When Liu Jingshan became a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse, they were doomed to fail.

Mu Chen took a deep breath. Then, he glanced one more time at Mu Feng and the others, who were fighting with all they had in the sky. He slowly closed his eyes and his consciousness entered his

aurasea.

Inside, he saw the Nine Netherbird staring at him lazily from on top of the mandala flower.

“What? You want me to help? Dream on.” A hint of ridicule passed through the Nine Netherbird’s eyes as a thought was conveyed over.

“If I die, it would not be good for you either. Once you’re discovered, countless powerhouses would target you. This is because you are too powerful. However, you are way too weak right now.” Mu Chen’s voice was impervious to desires and passions. It was so calm that the Nine Netherbird was surprised as well.

“Within my body, you can gradually recover. However, if you fall into the hands of those powerhouses, your situation would be several times worse than it is now, staying within my body.”

The Nine Netherbird’s long eyes narrowed and it folded its wings against its body. It was evident that it was not deeply moved by Mu Chen’s words. Although the situation outside was quite dangerous, it still had other measures it could take.

“Let’s make a deal. You help me and I’ll make you a promise.” Mu Chen said slowly.

“A promise?”

“I will promise that I won’t ingest you.” Mu Chen’s voice was steady and firm.

A hint of light flashed in the Nine Netherbird’s eyes, but it immediately responded sarcastically, “Bah! Stop with the act. You can’t even imagine how much benefit you’ll obtain if you ingest my Soul Essence. Thus, your words have no credibility at all.”

“You’ve been in my body for a while, so you should understand my personality.”

Mu Chen said in a faint voice: “You are indeed powerful. I need to help my father now, otherwise, if he dies, rage will fill my heart. The hatred within me would also end up affecting you; I would definitely ingest you when I obtained the power to do so.”

“Don’t try to question whether or not I can do it. The black paper, which trapped you within my body isn’t that easy to deal with. It would not be difficult to deal with you once I unlock its secrets. You should also realize this.”

The Nine Netherbird’s wings spread out. A cold thought was conveyed over: “Are you threatening me?”

“I’m offering to make a promise which will be of great benefit to you. Moreover, if you do not help me in this situation, you will be Liu Jingshan’s accomplice. I, Mu Chen, can distinguish hatred and kindness clearly. If you help me, I will naturally be grateful to you. Otherwise, I will not forgive anyone involved, when I have the ability to do so!” Mu Chen’s voice was filled with decisiveness. If the Nine Netherbird does nothing to help, he will let it go easily in the future.

Feeling the stubborn decisiveness within Mu Chen’s voice, the Nine Netherbird gradually turned silent. It laid down on the mandala flower. Shortly after, it slowly answered: “If I help you, you truly will not attempt to ingest me?”

“Once you have the ability to form you true body, you can decide whether or not you want to leave!” Mu Chen said in a deep voice.

“If you want me to help, it’s possible.” The Nine Netherbird stared sharply at Mu Chen: “However, you must accept a condition of mine!”

Mu Chen did not hesitate and nodded heavily.

“Okay!”

In an earlier chapter, it mentioned that the Top 100 Spiritual Beasts were Heaven Ranks.

Chapter 103 – Borrowing Strength

Seeing Mu Chen accept its condition so easily, the Nine Netherbird was stunned. A hint of suspicion emerged within its eyes.

“I have no choice right now. Therefore, there’s no need for you to doubt me like this,” Mu Chen said as if he knew the Nine Netherbird’s thoughts. He added with a calm voice: “No matter how much benefit I’ll get from ingesting you, it’s worthless compared to my father’s life.”

The Nine Netherbird turned silent for a moment. It could feel the unwavering conviction within Mu Chen’s voice. From the time it had hidden inside Mu Chen’s body, it indeed gained some understanding in the latter’s personality.

“As for the condition I want you to accept, there’s no need to mention it now. We can talk about it after we overcome the current dilemma.” The Nine Netherbird extended its burning wings elegantly and said: “We’ll first discuss how we’ll defeat that old geezer at the Heavenly Fusion Stage.”

“If I was in my peak condition, I would be able to defeat that old geezer in one attack. However, you should understand that I’m currently quite weak. Therefore, I can’t help you get rid of him personally. So, everything is still up to you.”

Mu Chen shook his head and replied, “I’m not his opponent.”

“I will lend you my power temporarily. However, I must tell you that you are too weak right now. I don’t know if your frail body can withstand my power. If a problem occurs, I won’t have any way of resolving it either.” The Nine Netherbird slowly asked: “Do you still dare?”

“Lend me your power!” Mu Chen nodded without any hesitation.

“By relying on my power, you will temporarily reach the

Heavenly Fusion Stage. However, you must remember that it's only temporary. If you cannot kill the old geezer during that period of time, you'll be the one that suffers misfortune." The Nine Netherbird explained.

"Okay!" Mu Chen nodded again. No matter what, he would never just watch Mu Feng die in front of him!

"In a while, you should control the mandala flower and weaken its suppression. I will then transmit my powers to you."

The Nine Netherbird had a calm expression as it said: "Of course, if you don't believe me and think that I will harm you the instant you weaken the mandala flower's suppression, then there's no need for us to talk anymore."

"I trust you," Mu Chen smiled and responded.

"Oh?" A hint of interest flashed through the Nine Netherbird's eyes: "You believe me this easily? Should I call you innocent or just plain naïve? Could it be that you've already forgotten that I've secretly attacked you before?"

"This situation is different from back then. Inside your bones, there is a sense of pride that humans cannot compare with. Since you've given me your word, you won't do anything else aside from that." Mu Chen smiled.

The Nine Netherbird did not speak, as it didn't want to respond to the comment.

"No matter what, I will have to thank you this time. I will remember this favor deep within my heart." Mu Chen took a deep breath. A hint of sincerity could be found in his voice. No matter how it does it, the Nine Netherbird was the only one that could help him right now. Moreover, since the latter was willing to lend its power to him at this critical moment, Mu Chen would be grateful towards it, regardless of its reasons.

"This is only a deal, stop attempting to make friends," The Nine

Netherbird grunted impatiently and said: “Instead, you should prepare yourself.”

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. Then, his consciousness slowly exited his aurasea and his closely shut eyes opened up. At this moment, a rumbling sound rang within his ears. In the sky, an amazing Spiritual Energy Pressure was being emitted in waves.

“Are you alright?” Tang Qian’Er stared at Mu Chen in concern. She noticed that Mu Chen had closed his eyes suddenly and thought that something had happened to him.

Mu Chen shook his head. He saw the anxiety in Tang Qian’Er’s expression and smiled slightly: “Tang Qian’Er, don’t worry. Believe me. It won’t go as how Liu Jingshan wishes.”

Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling were somewhat surprised as they stared at Mu Chen. At this moment, the boy’s handsome face still maintained its calmness. However, compared to before, it somehow made them feel more at ease.

It was as if the boy had some sort of confidence now.

Although Tang Qian’Er did not understand where Mu Chen’s confidence stemmed from, she believed in the latter. Thus, she smiled.

Beside him, Zhou Ye secretly let out a bitter laugh. This boy, he really knows how to comfort others. Based on the situation right now, he would have to knock him unconscious if he was unwilling to leave. It was fine if he and Mu Feng died in this place, but if Mu Chen died, it would be completely over.

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the sky. The battle had reached its climax, as Mu Feng and the others had pushed their Spiritual Energy to the limit. Every single fierce attack would make any Spirit Stage powerhouse turn pale. However, Liu Jingshan’s face did not change at all. A powerful Spiritual Energy surged out from his palm. Flame and black wind gushed out like two giant

whips and completely suppressed Mu Feng and the others.

Although the battle seemed to have reached a stalemate stalemate, everyone could tell that Liu Jingshan was acting leisurely. It was evident that he was not using his full strength. On the other hand, Mu Feng and the others' faces had turned completely red.

The enormous gap between the Spirit Stage and the Heavenly Fusion Stage was slowly being revealed.

In the city, numerous forces watched as Liu Jingshan calmly fought 5 Spirit Stage powerhouses. The observer's faces also turned pale and fear emerged slowly within their hearts. A few of them secretly sighed. It seemed that the Northern Spiritual Realm would belong solely to the Liu Territory.

The previous balance was destroyed.

Liu Qingtian smiled, and he stared at the sky while his hands were behind his back. Not far away, the other 3 Territory Lords that did not attack also had pale expressions. A hint of bitterness emerged on their smile. So a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse was actually this terrifying. It was unlikely that it would have helped if they joined the fight to help Mu Feng and the others. In the future, it would be best to please the Liu Territory. With the Liu Territory's strength, it would not need to suppress them too much. The other Territory Lords would be able to obtain a decent status at least.

"Ohoho, the 3 Territory Lords, please rest assured. From now on, you are friends of my Liu Territory. My Liu Territory has always treated friends kindly." Liu Qingtian glanced at the 3 Territory Lords and smiled.

Hearing this, the 3 Territory Lords let out a hollow laugh. They quickly displayed a respectful and submissive attitude.

"Haha."

Seeing the Territory Lords, who were at an equal footing with him before, display such an expression, Liu Qingtian could not help but laugh out loud. The sound of his laughter was filled with pride.

A hint of fury surged through the 3 Territory Lords when they heard Liu Qingtian's laughter. However, they forcibly suppressed it. The situation right now wasn't the same as before.

"Ohoho. It seems that father is about to use his true strength." Liu Qingtian did not care much about them and suddenly lifted his head.

Hearing this, the 3 Territory Lords' hearts jumped. They quickly raised their head.

In the sky, the flame and the black wind faded from Liu Jingshan's palms. He stared indifferently at Mu Feng and the others, who had a vigilant and serious expression, as he called out: "Have you had enough yet?"

"If you've had enough, then it's time to end this game. I'm quite old, and I do not have that much energy to play with you all."

Liu Jingshan took a step forward. At that moment, numerous individuals could see that the Spiritual Aura within the world was gathering quickly beside him. The surging Spiritual Aura was like an enormous wave and was an impressive display of power.

"Myriad Waves Mountain Pulverizing Palm!"

Liu Jingshan had a cold expression, as he suddenly fired off a palm. Billowing Spiritual Energy surged out from his palm and formed a gigantic handprint. A devastating Spiritual Energy radiated from the handprint.

Boom!

The instant that the handprint appeared, it enveloped the entire sky. It directly and fiercely suppressed Mu Feng and the others.

Boom!

Underneath the handprint, the air exploded. Countless waves swept out, and crashing sounds resounded through the sky. It made the air tremble violently. Even the buildings beneath the handprint were instantly smashed to the ground.

Feeling the devastating Spiritual Energy fluctuation that enveloped them, Mu Feng shouted, “We’ll attack together!” The five of Territory Lords instantly pushed their Spiritual Energy to the limit and the Spiritual Beasts behind them roared up at the sky. Five light beams containing all their Spiritual Energy exploded out.

Bang Bang Bang!

The attacks from both sides collided fiercely in midair. A Spiritual Energy shock wave that could be seen with the naked eye was created by the collision. In the sky, endless explosion sounds rang out and brought forth an amazing gale.

Puchi!

As the gale emerged, Mu Feng and the others’ bodies trembled. Then, they spat out a mouthful of blood as they each tumbled downward like broken kites.

Just when Mu Feng was about to hit the ground, he forcibly stabilized his body. He wiped the blood from his mouth and shouted out in the direction of Zhou Ye: “Run!”

“Mu Territory’s troops, kill them!”

Hearing Mu Feng’s cry, the Mu Territory’s troops stationed outside of the temple instantly let out bloodthirsty cries. Then, they rushed towards the temple like a flood.

“Stop them!”

Liu Qingtian sneered and waved his hand. From the opposite direction, troops flooded in and blocked the Mu Territory’s troops.

“Dad!”

“Mom!”

Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling stared at Tang Shan and Hong Ling, who were covered with blood on top of a stone tower. Their pretty faces were completely pale and their bodies trembled.

“Brother Zhou, please bring them away with you!” Tang Shan’s face was pale. He immediately turned his head towards Zhou Ye and shouted out.

Zhou Ye’s face was gloomy. He stared at the chaotic situation appearing within his eyes and gritted. Then, he grabbed onto Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling as he shouted towards Mu Chen: “Little Mu, let’s go!”

Mu Chen’s body did not move. It seemed to be trembling slightly.

“You want to leave?!”

Liu Qingtian was also aware of the situation over at this side. He instantly let out a sneer and his body turned into a light figure as he charged over. A dense Spiritual Energy gathered beneath his palm. Then, he blasted the palm over.

Zhou Ye hurriedly appeared in front of Mu Chen and fired off a punch. The dense Spiritual Energy caused the ground to crack open as it collided against Liu Qingtian’s palm.

Bang!

Waves of air swept out. A muffled sound suddenly emitted from Zhou Ye’s throat as he was forced back a dozen steps or so. After all, he was only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase while Liu Qingtian was at the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

“Boy from the Mu Family, don’t even think about going to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. You will be buried in this Northern Spiritual Realm!”

After knocking aside Zhou Ye with a palm, Liu Qingtian appeared in front of Mu Chen as quickly as a ghost. He sneered as he fiercely

fired off a palm filled with Spiritual Energy at Mu Chen.

“Asshole Liu, you’re seeking death!”

Seeing the attack on Mu Chen, Zhou Ye was extremely angry. He issued a fierce cry and charged madly at Liu Qingtian.

Not far away, Mu Feng noticed the situation appearing over there and instantly lost his spirits. It was as if his brain had turned completely empty.

“Haha, Mu Feng. I’ll help you get rid of your genius son!” Liu Qingtian’s face was extremely hideous. The palm winds were becoming increasingly sharp as the palm smacked down.

But just when the palm winds were about to hit him, Mu Chen, who had made no movements until now, suddenly raised his head. In his eyes, a mysterious black flame arose. Then, the corner of the boy’s lips slowly lifted up in Liu Qingtian’s narrowed eyes.

Boom!

Mu Chen’s hand instantly appeared in front of him and completely blocked off Liu Qingtian’s fierce attack.

The fierce Spiritual Energy impact emitted beneath Mu Chen’s feet caused the earth to crack open.

At this moment, countless people widened their eyes. This is because Mu Chen, who endured Liu Qingtian’s fierce attack, stood motionless like a boulder.

“How is this possible?!”

Surprise instantly filled Liu Qingtian’s eyes. He stared at the strange smile of the boy in front of him and a hint of unease appeared within his heart. But just when he was about to retreat backwards, Mu Chen’s palm turned into a claw and it clawed downwards. An irresistible force emitted out and Liu Qingtian’s body smashed down to the ground, causing the hard ground to shatter.

Mu Chen's eyes were cold. He lifted his feet and stepped fiercely on Liu Qingtian's back. At this moment, the earth instantly collapsed.

Puchi.

Liu Qingtian spat out a mouthful of blood. Horror filled his eyes. He never imagined that a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase boy would suddenly possess such fearful strength.

Naturally, he wasn't the only one that was surprised. Even Zhou Ye, who was rushing over, suddenly stopped moving and stared at the scene in daze.

Numerous gazes gathered at this location as well. Tang Qian'Er and Hong Ling could not help but cover their mouths with their hands. In the rear, Liu Zong, Liu Mubai and the others were all stunned.

"Mu Chen..." Mu Feng was also stunned. Everything that was happening there was beyond his imagination.

"Asshole, you're seeking death!" Liu Jingshan's eyes turned cold. A hint of killing intent filled his eyes.

Mu Chen ignored his voice and lifted his feet. He kicked Liu Qingtian's chest and sent the latter flying. For hundreds of meters, long, deep tracks appeared in the ground.

Many people sucked in a cold breath. Just what had happened?

After sending Liu Qingtian flying, Mu Chen slowly lifted his head. The eyes, that had burning black flames within them, stared at Liu Jingshan like a vicious beast. Then, a hoarse voice echoed throughout the sky.

"Old geezer, you haven't asked whether or not I'll agree to you killing my dad!"

Mu Chen gripped his hands tightly. Black Spiritual Energy surged out like flames from his body. At this moment, a powerful

Spiritual Energy pressure emitted throughout the entire city.

As they felt the Spiritual Energy pressure, everybody, including Liu Jingshan, changed complexions.

This is because the strength of the Spiritual Energy had actually reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

Chapter 104 – Fighting Liu Jingshan

The moment that amazing Spiritual Energy pressure was emitted from Mu Chen's body, everybody within the city was completely dumbfounded. Countless individuals stared blankly at the boy's figure, as rumbling waves flooded their hearts. Their minds had stopped completely.

How could he possess such terrifying strength?

"Impossible!"

Liu Zong, Liu Ming and Liu Mubai were speechless. They had an incredulous expression plastered on their face as if they had just seen a ghost.

"Heavenly Fusion Stage?!"

In the sky, Liu Jingshan, who had maintained an indifferent expression all this time, suddenly narrowed his eyes. His gaze fixated itself onto Mu Chen's body, which had black flames rising up from the surface. The pressure of this Spiritual Energy was in no way inferior to his. It had become evident that Mu Chen had also reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage at this moment.

The entire city was perfectly silent.

Moreover, under numerous surprised gazes, Mu Chen's eyes focused on Liu Jingshan's body. He seemed to smile as he spoke, "Old geezer, don't think that you can act recklessly within the Northern Spiritual Realm just because you have reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage. I'm afraid that the Liu Territory's wish to create the Northern Spiritual Alliance will not be realised today."

"Brat, don't get too carried away. Although I don't know why your strength has exponentially increased, that power does not belong to you. If you want to stop me with that power, I'm afraid you're still too naïve." Within Liu Jingshan's voice, fury surged and pressured one's soul.

“Then, we’ll have to see if that’s true.”

Mu Chen smiled. He clenched his hands and the skin on the back of his hands cracked open. Tiny amounts of blood oozed out. The Nine Netherbird’s power was too strong for him. It was clear that his body was being forced to suffer a tremendous burden in order to withstand this strength. However, he couldn’t afford to care about that right now.

Swish.

Mu Chen appeared in the sky and confronted Liu Jingshan, who was far away from him. The pressure from two Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouses’ Spiritual Energy surged out in waves as they fiercely collided with each other.

A thunderous sound seemed to echo throughout the entire space.

At this moment, Mu Feng, Tang Shan and the other 3 Territory Lords had landed on the ground. They exchanged gazes with each other before their eyes fell onto Mu Feng. However, the latter could only let out a bitter laugh. The current situation had already surpassed his expectations. He too did not understand where Mu Chen obtained this power.

But this wasn’t the time to care about it. Mu Chen’s strength had suddenly increased to the point of being able to compete with Liu Jingshan. To them, this was a pleasant surprise. The originally irreparable situation had now truly changed.

From here on, they could only watch to see if Mu Chen would be able to overturn this unfavorable situation single-handedly.

As these thoughts were flashing through the Territory Lords’ minds, the figures confronting each other in the sky, gradually intensified their Spiritual Energy pressure. Although they hadn’t taken action yet, this imposing manner had completely enveloped the city.

Boom!

A muffled sound rang out as another wave of Spiritual Energy pressure collided once again. At the same time, a hint of coldness flashed through the eyes of Mu Chen and Liu Jingshan.

Swish!

Their bodies seemed to have moved at the same moment. They rushed through the sky like lightning, and ,in an instant, they collided with each other above the city.

Liu Jingshan's expression darkened. Since Mu Chen's power increased suddenly, he did not dare to underestimate him. A punch accompanied with rumbling Spiritual Energy was blasted out. With its momentum, it could have easily shattered an entire mountain.

Against Liu Jingshan's powerful attack, Mu Chen did not show the slightest signs of dodging. Instead, a mysterious black flame emerged from within his eyes. Black Spiritual Energy surged out from the Nine Netherbird and appeared on the surface of his fists. Within that black Spiritual Energy, there was a smoldering black flame.

Dong!

Two powerful fist winds, containing extremely powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations, fiercely collided with each other. A rumbling sound resounded instantly. Then, visible shockwaves were emitted from their fists. As these shockwaves touched tall buildings inside the city, the buildings instantly turned into powder.

In midair, the two figures both retreated back dozens of steps. A hint of seriousness filled Liu Jingshan's eyes as he stared at Mu Chen. In the earlier Spiritual Energy collision, he could feel that Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy was extremely bizarre. The strange black flame within the black Spiritual Energy seemed to scorch his Spiritual Energy whenever they collided.

“The source of this boy’s strength is quite mysterious and strange. I must use my full strength to deal with it.” This idea floated within Liu Jingshan’s mind. He instantly clicked his tongue, and a rumbling sound rang out from his mouth.

Behind Liu Jingshan, the Spiritual Aura within the world surged and gathered. The density and power emitting from it made a few Spirit Stage powerhouses’ heart jump. A Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse was just too powerful.

Take this!

Liu Jingshan took a step forward. At this moment, the entire sky seemed to tremble a little. He issued out a cry as he fiercely punched out with both hands.

Jingshan’s Punch!

Buzz!

Liu Jingshan’s punch was like the wind. Billowing Spiritual Energy was being turned into yellow Spiritual Energy clumps, as it accompanied the winds from the fist. In a few seconds, the entire sky was filled with the violent Spiritual Energy clumps as they rushed towards Mu Chen.

Every single Spiritual Energy clump had the power to gravely injure a Spirit Stage powerhouse. It was even more terrifying because there were so many of them gathering together.

Mu Chen stared at the fierce offense that enshrouded him. A hint of light flashed through his black eyes. Then, he actually charged over.

Swish!

The Spiritual Energy clumps that filled the sky howled. However, at the very last moment, Mu Chen’s body turned extremely blurry, and after images emerged behind him. He directly passed through the fierce offensive with a phantom-like speed.

“What speed!”

Liu Jingshan was slightly shocked by Mu Chen’s speed. It seemed that this boy had trained in a Movement Spiritual Art as well.

“Swish!”

Mu Chen’s body passed through the clumps of Spiritual Energy that filled the sky. Then, he straightened out two fingers, as a dazzling golden light radiated from them.

“Try one of my attacks as well,”Mu Chen shouted out coldly, as he stabbed at the air with his two fingers. An extremely overbearing golden light exploded out from within his fingers. It tore through the air and fiercely charged towards Liu Jingshan.

With Mu Chen’s current strength, the destructive power of the Spirit King Finger could almost destroy a mountain.

“Hmph!”

Liu Jingshan watched the golden light surge over. The domineering fluctuation within it made him focus even more. He immediately let out a muffled shout and lifted his arm slowly. Then, he blasted out a punch with an extremely heavy expression.

“Buzz!”

Right when Liu Jingshan’s slow and strange punch was shot out, the Spiritual Aura in front him shook. It vaguely seemed to turn into a gigantic mountain of approximately 300 meters tall.

Dong!

Liu Jingshan’s heavy punch landed on the gigantic mountain and caused the mountain to tremble. Soon, it turned into a deep yellow light which had the power of a mountain as it collided with the golden light that ripped through the sky.

Boom!

As the two lights collided, an amazing Spiritual Energy shockwave was sent out. At this moment, a storm was raging

fiercely within the area.

“You’re quite capable. Let’s see how many punches you can block!”

Liu Jingshan’s sleeves instantly disintegrated. His bony arms expanded rapidly. His veins trembled as a feeling of power was emitting from them.

“Mountain God Tactics, Regretful Mountain God Fist!”

A cold cry resounded from Liu Jingshan. At this moment, his fists energy detonated and numerous, gigantic mountains were formed beneath the fists. These mountains were formed of dense Spiritual Energy, and suddenly, heavy fists of wind surged out endlessly at Mu Chen.

“I’ll receive as many punches as you throw!”

Facing Liu Jingshan’s overwhelming offensive, Mu Chen did not back down. Brilliant golden light spewed out from his two fingers like a peerless divine spear, tough and overbearing.

Take this!

Mu Chen’s fingers suddenly thrust out and the air in front was instantly torn apart. Numerous golden lights erupted from Mu Chen’s fingers. Moreover, hints of black flames surged around on the surface of the golden lights.

Buzz!

Everybody within the city raised their heads at this moment. They watched the boundless mountains and the domineering golden lights with astonished expressions.

A battle of this level was too impressive.

Dong Dong!

The overwhelming offensives that covered the sky collided fiercely. As the golden lights collided heavily with the mountains, amazing Spiritual Energy shockwaves exploded out.

The Spiritual Energy shockwaves set off a storm in the sky. As the storm swept out, cracks appeared within the city. A few buildings even collapsed directly.

At this instant, everybody was awkwardly dodging the powerful and matchless Spiritual Energy impacts.

Mu Feng and the others lifted their heads. The entire sky was filled with golden and yellow lights. It was as if the sun's rays were obscured by it.

As they watched the collisions, they sighed deeply. They could clearly feel how powerful a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse was once again. When they fought against Liu Jingshan earlier, there was no need for him to use his true strength.

"Heavenly Fusion Stage."

Mu Feng clenched his hands tightly. He had been stuck at the pinnacle of the Spirit Stage Late Phase for many years and failed to take the final step. However, he seemed to have understood something vaguely after his fight with Liu Jingshan and watching this huge battle.

This feeling made him understand that he might be able to step into the stage that he had dreamed of, as long as he secluded himself for a while after the fight.

Just when Mu Feng was enlightened, the fiercely domineering battle in the sky had finally ended. As the lights that filled the sky faded away, an old figure and a young figure reappeared in everybody's eyes.

Both of them were unscathed. However, the Spiritual Energy rumbling near their bodies made everybody understand that their fight had entered the climax.

On Liu Jingshan's arms, his snake-like veins were writhing. He stared sharply at Mu Chen, who was nearby, as he let out a dark expression. He never imagined that he would fail to defeat Mu

Chen with his fierce offensive earlier.

The latter's strength had surpassed his expectations. However, it was still not enough!

Liu Jingshan took a deep breath and slowly formed seals with his hand. At this moment, his face turned solemn. Then, an indescribable heavy pressure emitted out quietly.

"Mu Chen, I trained tirelessly for many years before I finally mastered the Mountain God Tactics. Today, I'll test it out on you!"

Liu Jingshan's eyes were cold. As his shout faded away, deep yellow lights swept out overwhelmingly behind him. Within those lights, a yellow mountain that was approximately 3000 meters tall was gradually formed.

On this mountain, the cliffs and boulders were vivid and realistic. It was like a genuine object. Once it appeared, the sky was forcibly oppressed. Even the ground below was crumbling.

Mu Chen's eyes focused as he witnessed this scene.

Liu Jingshan's hand seals changed and he fired off a palm. With an enormous shadow, the 3000 meter tall mountain actually soared and charged towards Mu Chen.

"Mountain God Tactics, Earth Sealing Mountain!"

I don't know if this is a name of a technique or just the Liu Jingshan's attack using his fists. The words used here are the same as Liu Jingshan's name. If it is the name of a technique, it will be translated as Frightening Mountain Fist.

Chapter 105 – Rank 3 Spiritual Array

The towering mountain, which seemed frighteningly realistic, was forcibly tossed up from the ground. It soared across the sky and emitted out such heavy fluctuations of force, that it caused the earth below to fracture. When it reached him, it enveloped Mu Chen and fiercely suppressed him.

As the mountain descended, the air within the world seemed to let out the sound of compressed explosions. An enormous arc of air swirled together into a circular shape underneath the mountain.

Mu Feng and the others watched this attack and could not help but gulp. Their scalps began to feel a little numb. If the mountain descended down, at least half of the city would be destroyed.

The destructive power that a Heavenly Fusion Stage possessed was too far beyond that of the Spirit Stage.

“I wonder if Mu Chen can defend against this attack.” Mu Feng and the others stared worriedly at the thin figure of the boy in the sky. Underneath the massive mountain, he was tiny, just like an ant.

Hu.

Under countless gazes, Mu Chen slowly spat out white air. A hint of seriousness flashed through his eyes, which had a black flame burning inside of them.

His hands suddenly formed a few mysterious seals.

As his hand were changing between the seals, a dense, dark-black Spiritual Energy was gathering in the center of his palm. In a couple of seconds, the dark-black Spiritual Energy had formed into two black seals which were approximately 3 meters tall.

These black seals naturally came from the Limitless Death Seals that Mu Chen had trained in, but the Limitless Death Seals he had condensed at his current level were many times stronger than

before.

Even after Mu Chen had condensed two Limitless Death Seals, he did not stop. Instead he continued on. From the center of his palm, dark black Spiritual Energy gathered once again. As the Spiritual Energy gushed in and out, a seal of black light emerged once again.

The third Limitless Death Seal!

Mu Chen stared at the third Limitless Death Seal, which emitted an extraordinary Spiritual Energy pressure. However, his eyes were still flashing as he continued to change seals. Another dark-black light ring emitted out endlessly from the center of his palm.

Rumble.

The fluctuations from the dark-black light ring seemed to emit muffled sounds of Spiritual Aura as they collided with each other. Then, the black light ring shrank within Mu Chen's palm as if it was going to become yet another dark black light seal soon.

Mu Chen was actually attempting to condense a 4th Limitless Death Seal in one go!

Although Mu Chen had always been training hard ever since he had obtained the Limitless Death Seal, he was never able to succeed in condensing the 3rd Limitless Death Seal. However, this time, he relied on the Nine Netherbird's power and finally completed it.

He could feel how terrifying the backlash would be once he formed the 4th Limitless Death Seal. If it wasn't for Nine Netherbird's domineering Spiritual Energy, coupled with the black flame's magical effect of being able to ignite Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen might have already destroyed his meridians during the backlash.

Four 3-meter-tall Limitless Death Seals floated beside Mu Chen and every one of them emitted a black lightwave. It actually enveloped Mu Chen's surroundings within a range of dozens of

meters. Inside this field, the air seemed to become distorted and would seem like a mysterious black hole if looked at from far away.

As the four Limitless Death Seals emerged, Mu Chen took a deep breath, and his eyes turned sharp. He waved his sleeves and formed a fist with his hand. Then, he fired off a punch towards the mountain descending down at him.

Bang!

When the punch blasted out, an enormous sound rang out from the air. The 4 Limitless Death Seals trembled before shooting out with a swishing sound.

The 4 Limitless Death Seals surged out in a straight line, and black light waves rippled over the place where they passed by. Looking from afar, it seemed that there truly was a black hole flashing across the sky.

Every single one of the Limitless Death Seals was extremely fast. In the blink of an eye, they appeared beneath the mountain and fiercely collided with its base without any sign of stopping.

Bang!

As they collided with each other, an amazing shockwave of Spiritual Energy radiated outwards at a maddening pace.

Kacha.

The 1st Limitless Death Seal soon shattered underneath the impact.

“How fragile!” A cold sneer flashed across Liu Jingshan’s face when he noticed this.

Dong!

But just when Liu Jingshan was about to sneer again, the 2nd Limitless Death Seal, which contained overbearing Spiritual Energy that surpassed the first one, charged over. The black light waves quickly spread out, and the massive mountain shook

violently as the speed of its descent began to slow down.

The would-be sneer on Liu Jingshan's face turned ever so serious.

Dong!

The 3rd Limitless Death Seal followed closely. A black light imprint covered the base of the mountain. Then, an extremely overbearing energy emitted out and forcibly halted the mountain's descent.

And just when the mountain was unable to descend down, the 4th Limitless Death Seal rushed over. It quietly released the most terrifying energy out of all the previous attacks.

Boom!

A black light emerged from the bottom of the mountain. It was like the darkness that appeared in the sky after sunset. Underneath this black light, even the sunlight vanished.

The entire world's colors seemed to have turned slightly dim at this moment.

Dong!

As numerous individuals watched in shock at the darkness that was radiating, a muffled sound rang out. Then, the numerous eyes that were watching this scene narrowed.

From the base of the mountain, a massive black beam pierced through the mountain like a pillar supporting the sky. In the end, it even penetrated through the peak of the mountain.

It was a stupendously spectacular scene.

"How is this possible?!"

Liu Jingshan's body trembled. As he trembled, a hint of doubt emerged in his eyes. He had already pushed his strength to such a degree, yet it was blocked by Mu Chen?

“Hu.” In the city, Mu Feng and the others let out a sigh of relief.

Buzz!

At this moment, the black light beam expanded and affected the entire mountain. Finally, a loud bang rang out as the mountain was forcibly destroyed by the light beam before it faded away in the distance.

The all-out attack by Liu Jingshan was perfectly defeated by Mu Chen like this.

“That bastard!” Liu Qingtian, Liu Zong and the others had a grim expression as they watched this scene occur in front of their eyes. Within their incredulous eyes, a hint of panic emerged. They never imagined that a boy, who seemed insignificant in their eyes, would suddenly possess such terrifying strength. Not even Liu Jingshan, who stepped into the Heavenly Fusion Stage, could defeat him.

In the sky, the black lights on Mu Chen’s fingertips faded away slightly. He lifted his head and stared at Liu Jingshan, who was staring at him grimly from nearby.

As they stared at each other, they actually did not attack again. It was evident that they could tell how powerful the other person was.

“To be able to corner me to this extent, you are quite amazing.”

Liu Jingshan stared at Mu Chen as he let out a deep breath. It was as if he wanted to let out all the grievance within his heart through this singular breath. However, his eyes remained cold and he warned: “Although I don’t know where this power of yours appeared from, it ultimately does not belong to you. Therefore, you probably can’t endure this power for a long time. On top of all that, you only have the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. It’s impossible for your body to endure this sort of power. Don’t think that you can hide this from me. I’m not that blind.”

Mu Chen’s eyes flashed. Liu Jingshan was indeed a Heavenly

Fusion Stage powerhouse. His keen eyesight was not something an ordinary person could compare with. As he continued to use the Nine Netherbird's power, his body started to show signs that it could not endure the power anymore. Under his clothes, a fine trail of blood had appeared on his skin. Fresh blood slid down from his body and dropped down from his fingertips.

"What the old geezer said is true. You can't endure it any longer. If you can't kill him, I'll advise you to immediately take your father and leave." The Nine Netherbird's cold thoughts resounded within Mu Chen's mind.

Mu Chen curled his lips and nodded: "I know."

Liu Jingshan stared at the silent Mu Chen. However, he had a faint smile on his face. It was evident that he had spotted what Mu Chen feared he would. He waved his sleeves and said: "For my following moves, I only need to maintain a stalemate with you. Your strength will gradually become weaker, and when that happens, it will be all too easy for me to kill you."

In the city, Mu Feng, Tang Shan and the others quieted down. Although they didn't know what had happened to Mu Chen that made his strength swell, that power clearly did not belong to him. And regardless of how this power appeared from the outside, he did not possess the endurance of a true Heavenly Fusion Stage like Liu Jingshan.

Liu Qingtian and the others were relieved when they heard these words. They started to stare wickedly at Mu Chen. This boy is too mysterious. They must eliminate him. Otherwise, they wouldn't be able to rest or eat in peace.

In midair, Mu Chen stared at Liu Jingshan, who had a mocking expression on his face. He smiled and said: "As expected, the older you are, the wiser you become."

"Then what are you planning to do now?" Liu Jingshan smiled mockingly. He already knew Mu Chen's weakness. The latter

currently possessed a Heavenly Fusion Stage strength, but it wouldn't be enough to kill him. As long as he keeps dragging it on, Mu Chen will definitely die.

"Everything will be fine so long as I kill you before I lose this power," Mu Chen smiled and replied.

"Interesting." Another hint of seriousness flashed through Liu Jingshan's eyes as he retorted: "However, I'm afraid you aren't capable of doing that, even if you borrowed more external strength!"

Mu Chen directed an enigmatic smile towards Liu Jingshan. Then, his eyes gradually turned cold before he closed them tightly. At the same time, his body retreated quickly. As he retreated, his fingers danced around. Then, many individuals were becoming mere witnesses, as Spiritual Seals began to emerge at a rapid pace from his fingertips before they floated around his surroundings.

In a couple of seconds, Mu Chen's surroundings were filled with dazzling Spiritual Seals. The amount was nearly equal to 100 seals!

In the city, there were a few Spiritual Array Masters present. However, they started to gape as if they had seen a ghost when they saw the hundred seals dancing around Mu Chen.

100 Spiritual Seals?

That is something which could only be done by an excellent Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master!

Could it be that Mu Chen is going to arrange a Rank 3 Spiritual Array?

Chapter 106 – Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array

"100 Spiritual Seals?!"

When the hundred spiritual seals emerged, sparkling like stars near Mu Chen, Liu Jingshan's face instantly changed. A hint of horror appeared within his eyes.

Although he wasn't a Spiritual Array Master, he had experienced numerous events within his lifetime. Naturally, he understood that a Spiritual Array which was arranged with a hundred Spiritual Seals would be considered extremely powerful even among Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays. Once this level of Spiritual Array was arranged successfully, it's power could truly tremble the heavens and shock the world.

"A Rank 3 Spiritual Array!"

These words exited out from the gaps of Liu Jingshan's teeth. An extremely dense murderous intent filled his eyes. This time, he was finally able to feel a small sense of danger from the situation. Although he did not know whether or not Mu Chen could really arrange a Rank 3 Spiritual Array, there was no doubt that Mu Chen made him feel that it was possible for him to die.

"I must not let him arrange this Spiritual Array!"

The murderous intent within Liu Jingshan's heart surged out. Although a Spiritual Array of this level was extremely powerful once it was arranged, a Spiritual Array Master still possesses a fatal weakness. That weakness is that it requires time for them to arrange a Spiritual Array. Moreover, they could not be overly disturbed during this period of time. And yet currently, Mu Chen was actually daring enough to to arrange a Spiritual Array during this fierce fight. In many people's eyes, it was an extremely foolish and desperate thing to do.

“Go to hell!”

At this moment, Liu Jingshan’s face was extremely gloomy. He did not hesitate at all and turned into rainbow light as he charged towards Mu Chen. At the same time, he blasted both his fists out. Dense Spiritual Energies surged out and formed into numerous mountains as they fiercely suppressed Mu Chen.

But facing Liu Jingshan’s attack, Mu Chen’s eyes remained tightly closed. A dark Spiritual Energy emitted out from his feet, then, his figure instantly became blurry and brought forth numerous afterimages. While floating in the sky, he was dodging everything with a phantom-like speed.

Boom!

The giant mountains that were condensed from fist winds carried an extremely heavy and sharp Spiritual Energy as they charged towards Mu Chen. However, they failed to touch his body.

“What a fast speed!”

Seeing Mu Chen’s phantom-like speed, Liu Jingshan was surprised and immediately gritted his teeth. Right now, it was evident that Mu Chen was planning to stall for time as he arranged the Spiritual Array. Therefore, all his concentration was placed on avoiding his attacks.

But the more it was like this, the more he couldn’t let Mu Chen succeed with it.

“Fish Roaming Spiritual Art!”

At this moment, Liu Jingshan’s body trembled. His entire body seemed to have softened up and he tore through the air with an alarming speed towards Mu Chen.

Liu Jingshan’s body looked extremely strange, as he travelled across the sky. The scene looked like a fish swimming in the ocean. However, his speed was extraordinary. It was evident that he had used a Movement Spiritual Art right now in order to catch up with

Mu Chen's speed.

Liu Jingshan's body quickly approached Mu Chen. A hint of seriousness flashed through his eyes and he formed claws with his hand. On his claw-like hands, violent Spiritual Energy flashed as he attempted to grab onto Mu Chen's throat.

As the winds coming from the claws surged out, the air seemed to explode.

But just when Liu Jingshan's air slashes were about to touch Mu Chen's body, the latter seemed to have perceived in advance, and his body shook. Numerous afterimages layered themselves on top of one another and the winds from the claws passed through the afterimages.

"Damn it!"

Liu Jingshan's complexion changed. Not only were Mu Chen's movements strange, but, more importantly, he seemed to be able to perceive his attacks in advance. He would instantly change trajectories when he perceived Liu Jingshan's attacks, causing the attacks to miss completely.

"I won't believe that you can keep dodging forever!" Liu Jingshan gnashed his teeth and his attacks suddenly became even more ferocious. Sharp claw winds tore across the sky and overwhelmingly attacked Mu Chen.

Swish Swish Swish!

Facing Liu Jingshan's attacks, Mu Chen's figure turned even more phantom-like. His eyes remained closed, yet his body danced around like a leaf floating in a storm. He allowed the storm to do whatever it wanted, yet it would not tear him apart.

As Mu Chen constantly evaded Liu Jingshan's attacks, everybody could see that the hundred Spiritual Seals had gradually integrated into the air. At that location, extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuations were being endlessly emitted. All the Spiritual Aura

within the world seemed to be converging in that direction.

Mu Feng and the others watched the scene nervously. Whether or not they could break through the dilemma today would depend on Mu Chen successfully arranging that Spiritual Array.

The suffocating battle continued in the sky. However, as time passed by, everybody could tell that Liu Jingshan wasn't as calm as earlier. It was evident that he noticed he wouldn't be able to disturb Mu Chen if this continued on. The latter seemed to be separated from the world. Moreover, what was truly surprising everybody was that he could dodge Liu Jingshan's fierce offensive even when he had shut off all interference from the outside world.

All of this made people secretly wonder if the boy in front of them could accomplish this seemingly impossible matter.

"Swish!"

In the sky, Liu Jingshan had suddenly stopped moving. At this moment, his face was slightly distorted. The murderous intent within his eyes had condensed to the point that it was almost corporeal.

He fixed his gaze on Mu Chen's phantom-like figure. Behind him, a dark color had already emerged. The air was distorted and a massive Diagram Array was taking shape.

It seemed that it was impossible for him to obstruct Mu Chen from completing the Spiritual Array.

"Today, I'll see what you're made of!"

A shout filled with killing intent rang out from Liu Jingshan. He immediately retreated backwards. As he retreated, a dense Spiritual Energy surged out from his body.

At that moment, an extremely strange fluctuation emitted from Liu Jingshan's body.

Everybody directed their gaze over to Liu Jingshan. Then, they

were surprised to see that Liu Jingshan's body was swelling up rapidly. Black light completely covered the surface of his body.

Kacha,

Liu Jingshan's clothes ripped as his body quickly swelled up. In a few seconds, he had actually discarded his human form and changed into a massive giant beast.

It was a huge black hound. The two heads on the hound had hideous mouths filled with sharp fangs from which saliva dripped. As it appeared, even the air fluctuated a little bit.

The huge black hound spat out a couple of breaths. One of its hideous mouths spewed out flames while the other mouth had black winds forming within it. An extremely evil fluctuation emitted endlessly as it rippled through the sky.

Liu Jingshan had actually transformed into the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that he ingested, Double-Headed Hellhound!

At this moment, numerous individuals' expressions changed. Even Mu Feng and the other Territory Lords took a deep breath. They were naturally aware that the Double-Headed Hellhound that Liu Jingshan had transformed into was not an illusion. It was a Double-Headed Hellhound that possessed its true strength and aura!

"So a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse could ingest a Soul Essence to such a degree!"

Mu Feng and the others' hearts trembled. Although all of them had ingested Spiritual Beast's Soul Essences, they could only condense the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence using their Spiritual Energy at most. It was absolutely impossible for them to directly transform into a true Spiritual Beast like Liu Jingshan.

Right now, Liu Jingshan not only possessed his original body's strength, he also possessed the toughness and true ability of the Double-Headed Hellhound. It was amazing to an extent that it was

terrifying.

Roar!

The Double-Headed Hellhound which Liu Jingshan transformed into roared at the sky. Within its scarlet eyes, a hint of fierceness emerged. Although he had changed into such a form right now, Liu Jingshan was still Liu Jingshan. He still possesses a clear rationality and would not behave like a Spiritual Beast just because of this change.

However, this was truly a combination of a Spiritual Beast's tough body with a human's wisdom. It was only because of this that it was terrifying.

Bang!

The Double-Headed Hellhound opened its hideous mouths. A fire dragon as well as a black storm erupted out. It was evident that this violent Spiritual Energy was many times more powerful and vicious compared to his human form.

Mu Chen's body quickly brought out afterimages as he avoided the attacks. Although he managed to avoid being hit in a vital point, his clothes were ripped in half and he revealed his body covered with fresh blood.

"Roar! Roar! Roar!"

The Double-Headed Hellhound roared madly and the Spiritual Aura within the world became violent. Under many horrified gazes, numerous fire dragons and black storms erupted out in the sky overwhelmingly. This time, it had enveloped the entire region's sky. It was impossible for Mu Chen to retreat!

As they watched this scene, Mu Feng and the others' hearts were beating especially fast. Even their palms were covered with cold sweat.

Rumble!

The fire dragons and black winds were like ferocious beasts and they revealed a hideous appearance as they charged towards Mu Chen.

In the city, everybody immediately held their breath. They did not dare to even mutter a single word.

The heat brought by the fire dragons had already caused the scraps of clothes on Mu Chen's body to turn into ashes as the fierce winds dispersed the ashes. This violent offensive was getting closer...

But just when Mu Chen was about to be enveloped in the violent offensive, his tightly shut eyes opened up.

Within his black eyes, a black flame arose. It was extremely mysterious.

Chi Chi.

On Mu Chen's body, numerous bloody fissures began to crack and form. Fresh blood oozed out, yet Mu Chen remained motionless. His bloody hands slowly formed another seal as a hoarse voice rang out.

"Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, Activate."

Buzz!

When the final syllable was uttered, a strong black light erupted out from the space behind Mu Chen. Under many gazes, the black light extended and formed into an extremely complicated dark Spiritual Array.

The light beams from the Diagram Array emitted out. They could vaguely see a mysterious black lotus slowly blooming.

Numerous black lotus petals descended down and landed in front of Mu Chen. It allowed the flame dragons and black storms to bombard it as much as they wanted.

Boom Boom Boom!

Violent Spiritual Energy fluctuated crazily in the sky. However, when the flames and black winds dissipated away, everybody's eyes narrowed. This was because the black lotus petal that protected Mu Chen had remained unharmed.

"Next up..."

Mu Chen's hands trembled slightly, and he wiped the blood off the corner of his mouth. Even this minor action caused a tremendous amount of pain to him. His body had reached its limits in enduring the Nine Netherbird's power.

But it wasn't the time for him to fall now.

Mu Chen's eyes, which had burning black flames in them, stared quietly at the distant Double-Headed Hellhound. Then, he immediately tapped the sky with his slender finger which was covered with blood. Sounds of mutters rang out.

"It's time to slay the hound..."

When the voice faded away, the massive and mysterious black demonic lotus emitted a deathly wave of energy.

Chapter 107 – Exterminate

Boom!

As it illuminated the sky with a black light, the massive and mysterious black lotus soared through the sky at an alarming speed and emerged above Liu Jingshan, who was still transformed into the Double-Headed Hellhound.

While the black lotus slowly rotated, numerous lotus petals began to bloom. The entire world seemed to become dim at this moment as the Spiritual Aura within the world converged on the black lotus.

This fluctuation was extremely alarming.

Within Liu Jingshan's blood-red eyes, a hint of unease flashed. From the mysterious black lotus, he could feel a hint of death.

At this moment, the only thing he could do was to use all of his strength to resist it. This was definitely Mu Chen's last resort. As long as he managed to block it, it was certain that Mu Chen would die.

Roar!

A roar filled with killing intent rang out from Liu Jingshan's mouth. A ferocious aura surged out from his body as the two hound heads opened their hideous mouths.

Flames and black winds gathered rapidly within the respective mouths, distorting the surrounding air.

Everybody in the city watched this scene nervously. They could tell that the two people in the sky were using their last resorts.

"Blackwyrm Firestorm!"

At this moment, all of the Spiritual Energy within Liu Jingshan's body began to circulate. The fiery light and black winds, located at each of their hideously respective mouths, expanded hundreds of

meters in size. In an instant, a roar containing a murderous intent bellowed out once again.

Boom!

The entire sky seemed to tremble at this moment. Then, countless individuals were witnesses as a flame dragon and a black wind dragon, each hundreds of meters tall, rushed out from Liu Jingshan's mouth.

The two enormous dragons charged towards the sky and entwined with each other. As the two dragons converged, the flames were fanned by the winds, and it burned more furiously. The violent ferocity of the Spiritual Energy also increased exponentially and was extremely shocking.

This attack was truly Liu Jingshan's strongest technique!

Everybody watched the entwined twin dragons in awe. These dragons carried a peerless Spiritual Energy as they charged directly towards the mysterious black lotus. Behind them, a long tail formed by shining lights emerged.

At this moment, the final lotus petal slowly bloomed on the mysterious lotus.

A dark-black light, like darkness that invaded the earth, converged swiftly at the center of the black lotus. In the center of the lotus, a black liquid seemed to be dripping down.

At this moment, the dark-black light suddenly became stronger.

Swish!

Everybody noticed that the mysterious black lotus trembled slightly at this moment. Then, a black beam that was hundreds of meters wide silently erupted from the black lotus.

From the looks of it, this black light beam did not possess an overly violent Spiritual Energy. It was like a black pillar of water that descended down from the sky as it surged through the sky.

Under many people's nervous gazes, it collided with the fire and wind dragons.

Dong!

A Spiritual Energy shockwave emitted from the point of contact, and the entire world seemed to tremble at this moment.

Roar!

The twin dragons roared and struggled to breakthrough. Waves of matchless and violent Spiritual Energy emitted out and attempted to dissipate the black light pillar that descended upon it. However, what shocked everyone was that no matter what the twin dragons did, the black light beam remained motionless. It was like a pillar supporting the sky and was unmoved by the confronting dragons.

As Liu Jingshan watched this scene, the uneasiness within his eyes increased. Although the black light beam was not extraordinarily imposing, it still gave him the chills.

In the distance, Mu Chen watched the confrontation in the sky calmly. He immediately moved his fingers gently and the black lotus in midair crumbled. It turned into a black liquid and fused with the black light beam.

Swish

As the black lotus faded away, an enormous black lotus imprint emerged on the surface of the black light beam. The hidden brilliance within it had finally been exposed.

Hidden dark-black lights erupted from the light beam. At this moment, the twin dragons gave a shrill cry. Then, many people were aghast to see that cracks had surfaced on the fire and wind dragons' bodies.

At that instant, Liu Jingshan's eyes narrowed.

Boom!

A shocking sound resounded out. The black light beam had actually penetrated through the fire and wind dragons forcibly.

In the instant that the twin dragons were penetrated, horror poured out from Liu Jingshan's eyes. A feeling of death swarmed through and consumed his heart in terror.

Under the threat of death, he immediately turned into a black light and retreated. He could feel that he would definitely die if that mysterious black light landed on him!

Waa!

Sounds of shock broke out in the city as they noticed Liu Jingshan fleeing suddenly. Even Liu Qingtian's expression had turned pale.

"You want to escape?!"

Mu Chen's cold eyes stared at the black light that was Liu Jingshan. He had used all possible measures in order to force Liu Jingshan to this hopeless situation. If he allowed him to escape, everything he did would be completely useless. After all, the latter would come back after he rested for a period of time. As for Mu Chen, he wouldn't be able to borrow the Nine Netherbird's power every time.

Therefore, he must eliminate Liu Jingshan so there wouldn't be any future troubles.

Swish!

As the killing intent within Mu Chen's heart surged, the black light beam that had pierced through the twin dragons suddenly made a turn. It tore through the sky and chased after Liu Jingshan at an intense speed.

The black light beam was as swift as lightning. In only a few seconds, it had appeared behind Liu Jingshan.

"No!"

Liu Jingshan shouted in horror. He furiously roused his Spiritual Energy and placed a massive Spiritual Energy barrier behind his body.

Boom!

However, the black light beam did not care and charged straight at it. Finally, it landed on the Spiritual Energy barrier.

Kacha.

The seemingly powerful Spiritual Energy barrier was completely ineffective at this moment. The black light beam was like the sickle of a death god, and it easily ripped through the Spiritual Energy barrier. Then, it smashed into the Double-Headed Hellhound, which was Liu Jingshan, fiercely.

“Ah!”

At that instant, Liu Jingshan’s cries of despair and fear resounded throughout the sky.

Dong!

Amidst the screams, the black light beam forcefully pierced through Liu Jingshan’s body before it shot off to a distant mountain. The entire earth trembled as the mountain instantly vanished.

At this moment, the entire city was completely silent.

This was because they had witnessed the Double-Headed Hellhound disappearing completely as the black light beam passed by, not even its bones remained.

It was a scene as though he had been forcefully erased from the world.

In the sky, the violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations subsided quickly. Even the extraordinary battle earlier had completely faded away.

Within the city, numerous people exchanged glances with each

other as they stared at the empty sky. Liu Jingshan was killed just like this?

A Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse had fallen like this?

Liu Qingtian, Liu Mubai and the others stared blankly at the place where Liu Jingshan had vanished. A feeling of dizziness emerged from their minds and they could not help but sit down on the floor.

The excellent situation they had originally, the ambitions of dominating the Northern Spiritual Realm, all of this was completely destroyed?

And everything was caused by Mu Chen, who they did not think of highly before?

“How could this be...” Liu Qingtian’s body trembled. His eyes no longer had the sharpness they had earlier. What replaced it was a deep sense of fear. This time, the Liu Territory had offended all the forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Yet, the only person they could have possibly relied on had been killed. From now on, the Liu Territory would definitely take a severe blow within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Beside Liu Qingtian, the other 3 Territory Lords that did not help out Mu Feng and the others also took a deep breath. They stared grimly at Liu Qingtian and slowly moved away. It was evident that they did not want to have any relation to the Liu Territory anymore.

“Brother Mu Feng. I never imagined that your Mu Territory would actually have hidden such a trump card,” Tang Shan muttered as he recovered from his shock.

A few Territory Lords nearby also looked at Mu Feng with a complex expression. Within their eyes, fear arose. They were genuinely shocked by the attack that Mu Chen had unleashed.

No wonder Mu Chen was able to become the only person that

qualified for the Spiritual Road within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Hearing this, Mu Feng could only smile bitterly. He knew nothing about this. Moreover, he did not expect that Mu Chen possessed such power...

In the sky, Mu Chen glanced at the place where Liu Jingshan had vanished. After he confirmed that the latter's aura had completely vanished, he finally let out a sigh of relief.

But just as he sighed, the power within his body rapidly subsided. A feeling of powerlessness quickly emerged. At the same time, intense pain rose throughout his body and he felt that his body had become completely useless.

Powerlessness surged through Mu Chen's mind. In the end, his body wobbled and he lost consciousness as he fell from the sky.

Seeing this, Mu Feng hurriedly rushed out and caught Mu Chen, who was completely covered in blood. Then, he landed on the ground carefully.

"Uncle Mu, is he alright?" Tang Qian'Er hurriedly approached. She could not help but bite her lips when she noticed that Mu Chen was covered in blood.

"His is still breathing. He should only be unconscious."

Mu Feng examined Mu Chen for a while before letting out a heavy sigh of relief. Then, he exchanged gazes with Tang Shan and the others. A hint of chill flashed through their eyes.

"Qian'Er, please take care of this boy."

Mu Feng handed over the unconscious Mu Chen to Tang Qian'Er. When the girl saw this, she hurriedly grabbed onto Mu Chen's waist without caring about the tainted blood all over his body. The robust feeling and manly aura made her blush. Then, she secretly stared at the unconscious boy's handsome face as her heartbeat increased.

As Tang Qian'Er's heartbeat increased, many people within the city were staring at the Territory Lords, who approached the Liu Territory's troops with expressions devoid of compassion. They secretly sighed to themselves. Next up, it would be the concluding act. The Liu Territory's position within the Northern Spiritual Realm would definitely plummet. On the other hand, by relying on the fear of Mu Chen, the Mu Territory would undoubtedly become the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

The setup of the Northern Spiritual Realm would still change. However, it was still many times better than having been forcibly annexed by the Liu Territory...

All of this was due to this boy.

A few gazes stared at the boy in the beautiful girl's arms. Their hands covered their mouths, and a touch of admiration passed through their eyes. The Mu Territory's Little Lord had definitely exceeded his father.

After this battle, Mu Chen's name would definitely become known to everyone in the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Chapter 108 – Conclusion

The large battle in Nine Territory City had ended with Mu Chen killing off Liu Jingshan. Moreover, everything that had happened here spread throughout the Northern Spiritual Realm at an extremely rapid pace.

As predicted, the Northern Spiritual Realm was completely shaken by this news.

There were only a few people that could remain calm after hearing about the shocking battle. Most of them gradually widened their eyes and were startled within their hearts.

That person, Liu Jingshan, had been a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse!

How many years had it been since a powerhouse of this level appeared in the Northern Spiritual Realm at all?

But now a powerhouse of this level had finally emerged, yet he was killed without displaying its might. Furthermore, the most shocking thing was that the person who killed him was only a youthful boy!

Nobody could fathom exactly how this outcome occurred. However, it was a cold truth that many people had personally witnessed. No one was foolish enough to question it, and they could only keep the shock to themselves. Just exactly how powerful was the Mu Territory's Little Lord?

Amidst the shock, Mu Chen's name spread through every corner of the Northern Spiritual Realm. By relying on it, the Mu Territory's reputation also soared and far surpassed the Liu Territory. Already, there were signs that they were becoming the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

As for the Liu Territory, ever since their ambitious plan was ruined, it was as if a fatal blow had been dealt to them. Originally,

Mu Feng and the others planned on eradicating the Liu Territory from the Northern Spiritual Realm, but ultimately they did not. This was because the Liu Territory still possessed immense power even though Liu Jingshan was killed and second, their opinions did not coincide. During this Nine Territory Meeting, the Mu Territory's reputation had increased significantly due to Mu Chen. It was evident that some of the forces were afraid that the Mu Territory would become arrogant. If they were to join forces and eliminate the Liu Territory, it would be most favorable to the Mu Territory.

Since there was no consensus, the Liu Territory was preserved. However, they still suffered heavy losses. Half of the Liu Territory's lands were divided by the other territories. Furthermore, the Liu Territory would have to pay various compensations, which would make their family bankrupt.

And since the Liu Territory was going downhill, everybody chipped in and gave them a push. Right now, the Liu Territory was extremely unpopular. The Liu Territory's powerhouses, who submitted to them, had all left, and this caused the Liu Territory to suffer another severe blow. However, they could only swallow it down like harsh medicine. After offending many forces and losing Liu Jingshan, the Liu Territory was no longer the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

In the future, it was highly likely that they would continue to weaken until they truly vanished from this realm.

However, they could not resist this painful consequence of their actions and could only submit to suffer.

Not only was Liu Jingshan killed during the battle in the Nine Territory City, even Liu Qingtian's ambition and courage were destroyed. From now on, it was unlikely that they would have the guts to start another battle similar to this...

The trauma planted in them this day was too terrifying.

…

As the Northern Spiritual Realm was being strongly affected by the Nine Territory Meeting, Mu Chen remained unconscious. In regards to his unconscious state, even Mu Feng had no solution. When he attempted to use Spiritual Energy to investigate Mu Chen's situation, he discovered that his Spiritual Energy vanished completely once it entered Mu Chen's body. After repeated tries, he could only give up.

Fortunately, he was relieved by the color gradually being restored to Mu Chen's face while he was unconscious. The injuries within his body must be gradually healing. However, the speed of recovery was quite slow…

This slow recovery lasted for nearly two weeks. Finally, Mu Chen awoke from unconsciousness.

In the quiet and refreshing room, Mu Chen's eyes twitched as they opened slightly. Faint sunlight entered his eyes and caused them to sting.

This pain gradually vanished. As he adjusted to the intensity of the sunlight, he opened his eyes completely.

What he saw was a familiar environment. This was his room, so he should have returned back to the Mu Territory?

At this moment, bursts of pain emerged within his head and Mu Chen's throat made a dry, muffled sound. It took a while for his head to gradually recover. Then, he placed his palms on the side of his bed and struggled to get up. However, he noticed that his hand was pressing onto supple hair. He hesitated slightly before turning his head around. At the side of his bed, there was a slender figure resting as she was laying down on the side of the bed.

"Sister Qian'Er?"

Mu Chen stared at the familiar figure and was a bit surprised. Why was she here?

As if she was aware of the movements on the bed, the girl beside the bed opened her beautiful eyes in a daze. Then, she looked blankly at Mu Chen, as he stared at her.

Seeing that the boy in front of her had awakened, the daze within Tang Qian'Er's eyes vanished. A hint of delight surged out: "Mu Chen, you're finally awake?"

Mu Chen directed a smile towards Tang Qian'Er and sat up properly on the bed. As she saw this, Tang Qian'Er hurriedly lifted him up with her slender hands as she simultaneously placed a pillow behind Mu Chen.

Her soft and fragrant hair stroked his face and caused it to itch. At this moment, Mu Chen could not help laughing as he noticed that the girl had become this thoughtful.

"What is it," Tang Qian'Er asked when she noticed Mu Chen laughing inexplicably.

"It's rare to see Miss Tang taking care of others," Mu Chen continued to laughed.

Tang Qian'Er's pretty face turned red. She pouted as she said: "Who wanted to take care of you? It's because my father has been talking business with Uncle Mu recently. Since I'll be bored in the Tang Territory anyways, I followed along with him. Furthermore, Uncle Mu didn't have time to take care of you, so that's why I came to take care of you."

Mu Chen smiled, but he did not expose the girl's act. Moreover, he was truly powerless at the moment. This time, his injuries were too grave.

"I'll go get some water for you." Tang Qian'Er muttered to Mu Chen before turning around to leave.

Mu Chen stared at Tang Qian'Er's figure as she left, before he finally closed his eyes tightly. His consciousness entered his body. The majority of the injured meridians in his body had already

recovered while he was unconscious. However, the Spiritual Energy light wheel within his aurasea had become quite dim and lacked Spiritual Energy. It seemed that it would only become abundant again after he cultivated it for a while.

However, Mu Chen did not care about this at all. Instead, he headed to a location within aurasea. At that location, the Nine Netherbird was lying down on top of the mandala flower. The black flames on the surface of its body had become dim. It was evident that Mu Chen wasn't the only one who was injured this time. Even the Nine Netherbird had suffered greatly.

The Nine Netherbird seemed to be aware of Mu Chen's glance and opened its eyes slightly. It stared coldly at Mu Chen before a mocking thought was conveyed over: "You're sure long-lived. You actually survived."

Mu Chen smiled and ignored the ridicule from the Nine Netherbird. He only replied seriously and sincerely: "It's all thanks to you this time."

Sensing the sincerity within Mu Chen's voice, a hint of unnaturalness flashed through the Nine Netherbird's eyes. Although the thoughts conveyed were still cold, it no longer taunted him: "What thanks? I didn't help you for free. You should remember what you've promised me, otherwise, I'll make you pay a price if you fail to keep that promise."

"Relax. What I promised is still valid. I won't ingest you, and you can leave whenever you want." Mu Chen nodded.

"As for the other condition, I'll try to help you if I can. But what is the condition?"

Hearing this, a hint of light appeared within the Nine Netherbird's eyes. It hesitated for a moment before asking: "You're going to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

"Yes."

“Then I want you to obtain an item from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy,” The Nine Netherbird replied.

“What item?”

“The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has an Ancient Divine Beast known as the Northern Sea Dragon. Its blood essence possesses an Ancient Divine Beast’s blood. If I manage to obtain that, I will be able to use it as a catalyst and awaken the ancient blood sleeping within my body. By doing this, I will finally be able to complete my evolution and advance to a Divine Beast.”

“Northern Sea Dragon…” Hearing this, Mu Chen sucked in mouthful of cold air. It was a terrifying existence within the Myriad Beast Record’s Heaven Rankings. For the Nine Netherbird to ask him to obtain its blood essence, isn’t it thinking too highly of him?

“Relax. Although the Northern Sea Dragon’s blood essence is valuable, it wouldn’t cause much harm to it if a bit was taken out. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy probably has a stock of it, so you should be able to get it as long as you can think of a way.” The Nine Netherbird’s thoughts were conveyed over.

Mu Chen gave a bitter smile as he replied, “I’ll do my best.”

The Nine Netherbird nodded. The Northern Sea Dragon was indeed troublesome. Even in its peak condition, it was impossible for the Nine Netherbird to defeat the Northern Sea Dragon. The only method it could suppress the Northern Sea Dragon was to complete its evolution to the Nine Netherworld Bird and fully awaken the ancient Undying Bird’s blood.

Therefore, it had placed all its hope on Mu Chen. If he was able to perform exceptionally well within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there should be a chance to obtain it.

“Next up, I’ll have to rest for a while. Therefore, you shouldn’t think of borrowing my strength all the time. You should just

behave yourself and protect your life, so you won't die too early." The Nine Netherbird reminded him.

Mu Chen nodded reluctantly. To be honest, he did not want to borrow this strength again. This was because the cost of borrowing it was too great. If it wasn't for the fact that the Liu Territory had cornered them, he wouldn't have been forced into using such measure.

After Mu Chen finished his conversation with the Nine Netherbird, his consciousness exited his aurasea. Just as he opened his eyes, he noticed Tang Qian'Er pushing open the door and entering with a water kettle in her hands.

"How long was I unconscious for?" Mu Chen took the cup and asked.

"About half a month." Tang Qian'Er thought for a moment before replying.

Hearing this, Mu Chen clicked his tongue. He had actually fallen unconscious for such a long period of time. It seemed that the aftereffects of borrowing the Nine Netherbird's power were indeed quite heavy.

"That's right...Half a month...Doesn't that mean I missed the time to go to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Mu Chen thought of something and quickly asked.

"What's the hurry? There is still 5 days." Tang Qian'Er batted an eye at Mu Chen.

Only then, Mu Chen was relieved. If his entry to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was delayed because of this, it would be a severe loss to him.

"Hmph, are you thinking about the fact that nobody would bother you once you've entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Tang Qian'Er's face turned sour as she asked coldly.

"How is this possible? With Sister Qian'Er's beauty, you will

definitely be in the top ranks, even if you enter the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. Although the students within the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy are all female, the five academies would often communicate with each other. When that happens, wouldn't you completely captivate all the other academies' students? You'll probably be unhappy if I beg you to bother me then." Mu Chen smiled and replied.

Tang Qian'Er chuckled. She raised her chin proudly and said: "That's correct. There are many outstanding youths in the Five Great Academies. Once I fall for someone, who would care about you?"

After saying this, Tang Qian'Er raised her fists at Mu Chen and muttered: "Moreover, you shouldn't act too arrogantly. I will surely cultivate properly within the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. If by some chance I meet you again, I'll show you how amazing I am!"

"That's enough for now. I'll call Uncle Mu and the others over. You should rest for a while."

Tang Qian'Er smiled at Mu Chen as she ended the conversation. Then, she stood up and headed outside.

Mu Chen stared at the girl's figure as she departed. He inhaled deeply as his closed his eyes. At the same time, he slowly clasped his hands together.

The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I'm really looking forward to you.

Chapter 109 – Recovery

During the next few days, Mu Chen spent all his time fully recovering himself. In a few days, it was time to head back to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. According to Mister Hao, there will be a true examination when they enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Comparatively, it seemed that this examination was not on the same level as the Northern Spiritual Academy's Entry Competition. This was because the opponents this time around were not limited to a tiny group from the Northern Spiritual Academy but instead consisted of genius from various locations, far and wide.

Moreover, there would also be some monsters that passed through the Spiritual Road.

It would not be a simple matter to stand out during the examination. Thus, Mu Chen must recover completely before that day arrives.

Fortunately, Mu Chen did not meet many obstacles during his recovery. In just three days, the dim Spiritual Energy light wheel within his aura sea was once again starting to emit light.

Furthermore, its Spiritual Energy density was many times more powerful than before. It was evident that the battle and heavy injuries were actually beneficial to Mu Chen.

Although the Spiritual Energy within the Spiritual Wheel had become denser, there was still no feeling of advancement. However, Mu Chen was not disappointed. If he thought it was this simple to advance to the Spirit Stage, wouldn't he truly be underestimating this level?

Even though his Spiritual Energy did not show any significant signs of breakthrough, Mu Chen obtained an unexpected harvest. He detected that the amount of Spiritual Seals had finally broken through to 21 Seals...

Breaking through from 20 Seals to 21 Seals was a qualitative advancement.

This was because by breaking through this level, it meant that Mu Chen possessed a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master's strength!

To a certain extent, a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master was already comparable to a Spirit Stage powerhouse. Originally, Mu Chen thought that it would take at least a month before he could accomplish this step, but who would have imagined that the battle, that had left his body in ruins, would provide such a benefit to him.

Furthermore, with this hidden card, Mu Chen finally felt a bit of confidence towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's true examination.

Moreover, after Mu Chen broke through to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, the amount of Spiritual Seals he could condense increased significantly. In just two short days, the amount of Spiritual Seals he could condense had reached a staggering 26 Seals. Moreover, as time passed, the amount would gradually keep increasing.

Although the battle brought numerous benefits to Mu Chen, it also caused a bit of trouble for him. The trouble was that his father kept insisting that he reveal and explain the source of the sudden power boost from the day of his battle.

Mu Chen knew that Mu Feng only asked him because he was worried; after all, that power was far too strong. With Mu Chen's strength, it was evident that he could not control it completely.

At first, Mu Chen did not want to talk about this matter, because he was afraid that Mu Feng would just become more worried. After all, even if Mu Feng knew about it, it was impossible for him to drag the Nine Netherbird out of his body and would only cause both of them to develop a concern for no reason.

However, the situation with the Nine Netherbird had changed. Although the Nine Netherbird was still cold, its hostile attitude had softened a lot; and it would not attack him in secret. Therefore, Mu Chen didn't need to worry about mentioning it to Mu Feng.

Therefore, Mu Chen told the truth to Mu Feng.

After his explanation, he noticed Mu Feng entering a daze suddenly. After a while, the latter gradually recovered from the shock and stared strangely at Mu Chen.

Despite the significant effort the Liu Territory and Mu Territory put into obtaining the highly-coveted Nine Netherbird from the Black Eerie Swamp, they had both failed. Who would have imagined that during their time in the Black Eerie Swamp, the Nine Netherbird would have actually taken refuge inside of Mu Chen's body on its own?

Under Mu Feng's gaze, Mu Chen could only shrug helplessly. He didn't know why this had happened either. Perhaps, this could only be explained as fate.

After Mu Feng's look of surprise lasted a while, he gradually got over the shock. However, he immediately frowned. As a Spirit Stage powerhouse, he had once ingested a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. He naturally knew how rebellious a Spiritual Beast of that level could be. Back in those days, he had gone through great pains in order to ingest the Dragonfire Bird; yet the Nine Netherbird within Mu Chen's body was many times stronger than the Dragonfire Bird.

Considering Mu Chen's strength, Mu Feng could not determine whether it was good or bad for him to host such a vicious beast within his body.

Seeing that Mu Feng was concerned, Mu Chen consoled him for a while. Only after he explained the current status of his relationship with the Nine Netherbird did Mu Feng relax a bit. However, Mu

Feng still told him to remain vigilant. A Spiritual Beast of that level had an intelligence that was not inferior to that of a human. Also, given the Nine Netherbird's previous schemes, Mu Feng did not hold any doubts about its viciousness. That thing was definitely an extremely dangerous existence.

Hearing this, Mu Chen replied with a smile.

Time flew by quickly and in the blink of an eye, it was the day before his departure.

In the quiet courtyard, Mu Chen was currently cultivating with his eyes closed when he heard familiar footsteps approaching. He opened his eyes and noticed Mu Feng entering the courtyard.

"Dad." Mu Chen directed a smile at Mu Feng as he spoke.

Mu Feng walked up next to Mu Chen and rubbed the latter's head. A hint of reluctance and affection emerged in his eyes as he smiled: "Brat, you'll be leaving tomorrow. This time, you probably won't be able to come back for a while. You should properly cultivate in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even though there are geniuses everywhere over there, I won't allow you to disgrace me!"

Mu Chen could see the reluctance within Mu Feng's eyes, and his heart suddenly felt a hint of warmth. He smiled and replied: "Dad, just relax. Your son isn't someone who can be easily bullied..."

Mu Feng was slightly depressed. Over these years, he had brought up Mu Chen alone. Although Mu Chen was always sensible, Mu Feng could have always helped him when he was in trouble in the Northern Spiritual Realm. But once he left the Northern Spiritual Realm and entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he would not be able to give any protection to Mu Chen.

"You'll have to leave tomorrow. Your father has nothing to give you. However, I've heard that you've advanced to a Rank 2

Spiritual Array Master, so I've been searching for Diagram Arrays during the past two days..."

Mu Feng directed a smile to Mu Chen and gripped his hand tightly. Then, a glowing scroll emerged within his hand: "This is a Rank 2 Diagram Array, it should be of use to you."

Mu Chen was stunned and touched as he immediately accepted the glowing scroll. In the Northern Spiritual Realm, a Rank 2 Diagram Array was considered rare. Mu Feng must have gone to extraordinary lengths in order to find this Diagram Array. No wonder he was busy during the past two days. He had clearly been spending his spare time for this reason.

"Thanks dad."

Mu Chen placed the Diagram Array within the Mustard Seed Bracelet. Although he had become a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, he did not have any Rank 2 Diagram Arrays. Although he had the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array", which was comparable to a Rank 3 Spiritual Array, Mu Chen could not arrange it unless he borrowed the Nine Netherbird's strength.

Therefore, right now, he urgently needed this Rank 2 Diagram Array.

Mu Chen pondered before he asked, "Dad, after I leave, managing the Mu Territory will be all up to you. Is it truly fine that you did not get rid of the Liu Territory?" He probably would have to leave the Northern Spiritual Realm for quite a long period of time. Naturally, he wanted Mu Feng to be safe here.

"Right now, the Liu Territory is greatly weakened and is nothing to be feared." Mu Feng smiled: "Moreover, you shouldn't underestimate your father. This time, I gained some inspiration and can vaguely feel the threshold of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. If I were to train for a while, I should be able to advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage."

“Oh?”

A hint of surprise emerged in Mu Chen’s eyes. If Mu Feng successfully advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, nobody would dare offend him in the Northern Spiritual Realm, and the Mu Territory would be completely stable as well.

“Haha, you should rest well today. I’ll send you to the Northern Spiritual Academy tomorrow.” Mu Feng smiled proudly and patted Mu Chen’s shoulders before he left.

Mu Chen stared at Mu Feng’s broad back. He suddenly felt that his mouth was slightly blocked and could only gently mutter: “Dad, remember the promise that I said to you. There will come a day when I bring mother back here. Our family will definitely be reunited.”

Mu Feng’s silhouette suddenly stopped at the entrance of the courtyard. He lifted his head and sighed. His eyes were slightly wet, and he slowly nodded his head.

“Brat, just cultivate properly. Your father will wait for that day.”

…

In the early morning of the following day, Mu Chen had gotten up early and left his room. He noticed that Mu Feng and Zhou Ye were waiting for him outside.

Zhou Ye escorted Mu Feng and Mu Chen out of the Mu Estate, before he rubbed Mu Chen’s hair. “Little Mu, good luck. I hope that you can surprise Uncle Zhou the next time you come back to the Northern Spiritual Realm,” he said with some emotion.

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded to Zhou Ye: “Relax Uncle Zhou. Instead, shouldn’t you worry about finding a wife?.”

“Damn brat.” Zhou Ye could not help but laugh.

“Let’s go.” Mu Feng waved his hand and took the lead towards the Transfer Spiritual Array within the Mu City. Mu Feng waved at

Zhou Ye before he quickly followed.

As the two passed through the Mu City, numerous gazes were projected over towards them. Most of the gazes were fixed at Mu Chen's body and curiosity and awe were within them.

It was evident that Mu Chen had become a well-known figure, after the battle above the Nine Territory Meeting. The fame had even surpassed Mu Feng and the other Territory Lords.

"Right now, your name is even more dazzling than mine," Mu Feng laughed as he noticed the surroundings gazes.

Hearing this, Mu Chen also smiled: "When I return, I will use my own strength to obtain these gazes."

"Daring and resolute. I'll wait for that to happen."

Mu Feng smiled as he stepped onto the Transfer Spiritual Array while Mu Chen quickly followed. Then, Mu Feng quickly waved his sleeves, and a light emerged as Spiritual Energy surged out. Their figures quickly vanished under countless estranged gazes.

Chapter 110 – Departure

Currently, the spacious training ground of the Northern Spiritual Academy was crowded with Northern Spiritual Academy's students. All of them were gazing enviously at the stage. At that location, there were five giant arrays floating in thin air that emitted a vague yet powerful pulse of Spiritual Energy.

It is said that these light arrays were Transfer Spiritual Arrays, leading to the Five Great Academies. After passing through them, one would be able to enter any of the holy grounds that they'd wished for all over these years.

However, these people currently did not have the qualifications.

At the training grounds, Tang Qian'Er, Hong Ling and Mo Ling had already arrived. Even Liu Mubai was present at the scene. However, he did not have the arrogance he had had previously. Instead, his face was slightly pale and was covered with a dejected expression. It was obvious that he had suffered a heavy blow mentally.

"Mu Chen's coming!"

A commotion of noise suddenly rang out outside of the training grounds, and numerous fiery gazes immediately turned away from the training grounds. Then, they noticed a familiar boy, and a tall burly figure slowly walking in from the training ground entrance.

As they stared at the boy's figure, countless Northern Spiritual Academy students lowered their voice. In their eyes, curiosity and awe emerged. During this period of time, the news about Mu Chen slaying Liu Territory's Liu Jingshan had spread throughout the entire Northern Spiritual Realm.

To them, the Heavenly Fusion Stage was too dazzling. They could not measure up to the power that someone of that level would possess. But no matter what, it must be stronger than Teacher Mo,

Teacher Xi and even the Principal, right?

And a powerhouse of that level was actually killed by Mu Chen? Just how terrifying, then, was he?

Under numerous astonished gazes, Mu Chen entered the stage and cupped his hands in salute towards Teacher Mo, Teacher Xi, Principal Xiao and Mister Hao as he said: “My apologies, I arrived late.”

“It’s fine. You’re not considered late.” Teacher Mo smiled. The eyes he used to look at Mu Chen were quite peculiar. Just after he heard of this event, even he, himself, felt tremendous shock. Now that he met with Mu Chen again, a mysterious feeling emerged within his heart.

This boy had too many secrets.

“Ohoho, we still have to modulate the Transfer Spiritual Array for a while, so you’ll have to wait for a bit.” Principal Xiao waved his hands and replied with a smile.

Mu Chen nodded and stood beside Tang Qian’Er. At this moment, Chen Fan and the others were staring at him strangely. This caused Mu Chen to glance at them helplessly.

“Hehe.” Seeing Mu Chen look over at them, Chen Fan and the others let out a hollow laugh. They felt slightly unnatural. After all, they used to be able to joke around with Mu Chen. But now, they could feel that they weren’t at the same level.

As he noticed this, Mu Chen did nothing to explain the situation to them. Instead, it was Tang Qian’Er who glanced over and asked: “Are your injuries all healed?”

Mu Chen nodded and smiled: “With Sister Qian’Er taking care of me, it would be difficult for them not to heal.”

Hearing this, Tang Qian’Er let out a sweet smile before she crooned: “You’ve only spoken nicely right before we depart, how insincere.”

Mu Chen felt completely helpless. When facing a girl's unreasonable expectations, it was best to remain silent.

"You should look at Liu Mubai. Right now, he looks at you as if he had seen a ghost..." Tang Qian'Er glanced across to the opposite side as she muttered.

Mu Chen's gaze followed and intersected with Liu Mubai's gaze. The latter quickly turned his head away. Currently, his appearance had none of the former prestige of someone who had previously been the number one individual of the Northern Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen calmly retracted his gaze in order to not stare at Liu Mubai as if he had won against someone. During the path of cultivation, he would meet enemies one by one. If he wanted to improve, he would have to constantly look towards the future and review the past. Only then, he would be able to improve slowly.

Liu Mubai was considered to be outstanding. However, he was not worthy for Mu Chen to treat him as an unforgettable rival.

"All of you should listen up..."

From the side, Mister Hao suddenly spoke to the crowd: "I have mentioned this to you before. Although you have passed the Northern Spiritual Academy's examination, it has only granted you the opportunity to enter the Five Great Academies. It does not mean that you are already regarded as a student in the Five Great Academies."

"The Five Great Academies will test all of you themselves. That will be the true test of the Five Great Academies. If you pass, you will become a student within the Five Great Academies and have a promising future.

"However, if you fail to pass, we will not send you back, but you will not be able to enter the Five Great Academies anymore. Instead, we will send you to other major Spiritual Academies."

“Therefore, each one of you will have to work hard to become a true student of the Five Great Academies.”

“Yes!”

Hearing this, Mu Chen and the others’ faces turned serious.

The Great Thousand World was endless and vast. Nobody could detect the ends of it. The Hundred Spirit Heavens, that the Northern Spiritual Realm belonged to, was only considered to be a speck of sand within a desert. It was completely insignificant.

The area outside of the Hundred Spirit Heavens was known as the Hundred Spirit Continent. In this continent, there were numerous territories that were similar to the Hundred Spirit Heavens. Moreover, there were countless territories and continents outside of the Hundred Spirit Heavens. If they did not use a Transfer Spiritual Array, a powerhouse at the Three Heavens Stage would not be able to travel across all the continents, even if they devoted a whole lifetime.

The Great Thousand World was too mysterious and extensive. There were as many forces as there were stars in the sky. Among these stars, the Five Great Academies were considered to be bright and dazzling stars. Even within the entire Great Thousand World, they were quite well-known.

The geniuses from the various continents would gather at the Five Great Academies. Therefore, it would not be easy to stand out in such a place.

Mu Chen would have to use all his strength in order to pass the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s test.

As these thoughts flashed through Mu Chen’s mind, he looked towards Mister Hao and inquired: “Mister Hao, may I know what the test will be for the Five Great Academies?”

Mister Hao glanced at Mu Chen and shook his head. He replied: “The Five Great Academies each have their respective test.

Therefore, I am unclear about them. However, someone will receive you after you pass through the Transfer Spiritual Array. At that time, you will come to learn more about the test."

Although this wasn't useful information, Mu Chen still nodded.

After some time, the five Transfer Spiritual Arrays gradually emitted out an intense light. The violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations, which were originally there, had stabilized.

"It's about there."

Seeing this, Mister Hao nodded towards Principal Xiao. Then, he looked at Mu Chen and the others as he said: "Saint Spiritual Academy, please go to the second Transfer Spiritual Array from the left."

Hearing this, Liu Mubai quickly stepped forward and stood within the Transfer Spiritual Array. As he entered the Transfer Spiritual Array, he finally regained a bit of courage. Then, he stared at Mu Chen and gritted his teeth as he clenched his hands: "Mu Chen, I admit that you're powerful. However, just you wait. There will be a time when we meet again. When that happens, I will defeat you!"

Hearing this, Mu Chen's black eyes stared at Liu Mubai. Under his gaze, Liu Mubai's body shuddered. It seemed that he was being reminded of the terror that Mu Chen had inflicted upon his family that day within the Nine Territory City. His legs and stomach felt a little weak, and he struggled to remain standing up.

It was as if he had been completely traumatized by Mu Chen that time, and this trauma made him feel intense fear.

"I'll welcome it anytime."

Mu Chen smiled faintly. The Saint Spiritual Academy, huh? Ji Xuan is also there, right? Compared to him, Liu Mubai was truly unworthy.

"Azure Sky Spiritual Academy, please go to the third Transfer

Spiritual Array from the left."

Hearing Mister Hao's instructions, Chen Fan and Huo Yun hurried forward. Their faces were filled with excitement and tension.

"Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy, the fourth Transfer Spiritual Array."

Tang Qian'Er bit her lips and clasped her hands. She thumped Mu Chen's chest as she said: "Good luck in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although there are many geniuses there, I believe that you won't fall behind. Otherwise, I will be embarrassed to say that I know you when we meet again."

"Yes, you too." Mu Chen stared at the girl in front of him. A hint of depression filled his heart due to the separation.

Tang Qian'Er nodded and no longer spoke. She twisted her slim waist as she entered the fourth Transfer Spiritual Array together with Hong Ling. However, her beautiful eyes remained fixed at Mu Chen.

"Mu Chen, Mo Ling. The two of you should enter here." Mister Hao pointed at the Transfer Spiritual Array beside him.

Mu Chen's gaze stared at Mu Feng, who had been behind him all this time. The latter smiled and nodded towards him. Then, under countless gazes, Mu Chen immediately took a deep breath and entered the Transfer Spiritual Array without hesitation. Seeing this, Mo Ling quickly followed.

"Brother Mu, good luck. Please bring glory to our Northern Spiritual Academy. Even in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, you must be the strongest!" At the edge of the training grounds, Su Ling and the others shouted out.

"Please act as the advance party for us. In the future, we will come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to leech off you!" The other students also yelled out.

Hearing this, Mu Chen could not help but smile. He nodded towards them.

“Concentrate, we’re beginning the transfer!” Mister Hao said in a deep voice. He waved his sleeves and numerous light seals shot into the Transfer Spiritual Arrays. Then, a powerful light shone from the Spiritual Array and completely enveloped the figures within it.

The powerful light gradually obscured Mu Chen’s vision. He gazed at Mu Feng, who was nearby. The latter also stared at him in daze. Then, a hint of loneliness emerged on his resolute face. After Mu Chen departs, he would be the only one remaining in the family...

“Dad, don’t worry. I will definitely bring mother back!”

Mu Chen clenched his hands and muttered to himself. Then, he slowly closed his eyes.

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I’m coming.

Luo Li, I’m coming.

Chapter 111 – Northern Heavens World

This place was a vast, endless landscape with blue skies and drifting clouds. In the distance, a boundless ancient forest could be seen.

Within the forest stood giant trees, that were comparable in size with mountains. Groups of Spiritual Beasts would fly above the forest as their sharp cries echoed throughout the world.

Even further away, there would be massive Spiritual Beasts fighting against each other occasionally. Their thunderous roars came from far away.

This land was like an ancient prehistoric land where no person had ever set foot on.

However, the absence of human activity was quickly destroyed. A massive bluestone platform appeared out of thin air in the sky. Mist surrounded the platform like it was a fairyland.

At this moment, numerous light pillars emerged on the bluestone platform. As these light pillars descended, countless figures appeared on the platform.

In half an hour, the originally empty platform was completely filled and their chatter gradually echoed throughout the area.

At the corner of the platform, another light pillar descended. As the light faded, two figures emerged.

Once he detected that the light gradually weakening, Mu Chen opened his eyes slowly. In the next moment, he became somewhat surprised when he looked at the bluestone platform he was currently standing on.

On the platform, there were numerous figures. However, all of them were wary as they looked around. It was evident that they were also unfamiliar with this situation.

“Brother Mu. Is this the place for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s examination?” Behind Mu Chen, a weak voice rang out. Mo Ling was cautiously glancing around. His voice was weak because he could feel that even the weakest person on the platform had the strength in the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. Furthermore, many of them gave him a feeling of pressure.

Mu Chen nodded and smiled.

“These people should be the others who obtained entry to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, right?” Mo Ling could not help but smack his lips. Awe for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy formed within his heart. The number of people that obtained entries to the Five Great Academies was limited to the fingers of both hands. But in this location, there were at least a thousand people.

“Although all of the people here are quite powerful, there’s no need to be afraid. If you lack courage, how could you compete with others?” Mu Chen smiled. He knew that Mo Ling felt slightly inferior. After all, the Northern Spiritual Realm was quite a small place. Many of these people probably came from large Spiritual Academies. The background and strength they possessed wasn’t something that a student from the Northern Spiritual Academy could compete with.

“Okay.”

As he looked at Mu Chen’s comforting, handsome face, Mo Ling’s timid heart calmed down. That’s right. There was nothing to be afraid of. The one beside him had once killed a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse. Although Mo Ling did not understand the quality of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students, he did not believe many of them could surpass Mu Chen.

Mu Chen comforted Mo Ling for a bit before he too glanced carefully around the platform. Right now, there were at least 1000 people on the platform. However, there weren’t many

conversations taking place; only small groups of people would stick together. Based on this, they probably hailed from the same location.

“As expected of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy…”

Mu Chen glanced around and immediately praised the academy within his heart. From what he sensed, everybody here had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage. Moreover, there were no less than 6 individuals who reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

Furthermore, the people in front of him were only a handful of those that had entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Based on this, one could see how terrifying the competition was for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

The Northern Spiritual Academy’s Entry Competition could not be compared to this competition!

Dong!

Just as Mu Chen looked around, a soft bell sound rang at the center of the platform. Everybody’s gaze quickly shifted, and they saw a stone tablet suddenly emitting a dazzlingly bright light.

As the light converged above the stone tablet, an old figure formed from the light emerged.

“Little ones, I am one of the monitors for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s examination…”

The old figure smiled as it stared at the numerous boys and girls on the platform and said: “Next up, I will inform you of the rules here.”

On the platform, everybody remained silent. Their eyes were fixated on the old figure.

“The space you’re currently residing in, is known as the Northern Heavens World. It is the place where the Northern

Heavens Spiritual Academy specifically tests students. Moreover, the platform you are standing on is known as the Escort Platform. In the Northern Heavens World, there are hundreds of Escort Platforms like this one. Therefore, the one you are standing on is just one of many."

As the words were spoken, many people were secretly shocked. Didn't that mean there were at least tens of thousands of people participating in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's examination? This number was too terrifying to imagine!

"Ohoho. Due to there being too many individuals, the number of Northern Heavens Worlds totals four. Of course, the other three Northern Heavens Worlds are also executing the same examination. However, these are unrelated to all of you." The old figure smiled.

Mu Chen could not help but grin. There are four of these Northern Heavens Worlds? The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is truly one of the Five Great Academies. This could only be described as terrifying.Wouldn't this mean that his chance of meeting with Luo Li would be reduced to at most 25%?

"Eh, I hope that she's in this Northern Heavens World as well." Mu Chen shook his head helplessly and could only look forward to it.

"The Northern Heavens World is extremely vast. There are numerous powerful and vicious Spiritual Beasts all over the place. Your goal is to pass through these obstacles and enter the Northern Heavens Hall in the center of the Northern Heavens World. At that location, there will be a Transfer Spiritual Array that leads to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and we will welcome you there."

"That doesn't seem too difficult." Mu Chen frowned. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy shouldn't be limited to just this, right?

“Ohoho. These aren’t all the rules yet. Each of you must touch this stone tablet first. Of course, you will all be divided into ranks. The ranks will be divided from 1-9. Normally speaking, the students that obtained the ordinary entry will be ranked initially at 1. The students that obtained the seeded entry will start at 3; The core entries will begin at 5.”

When everybody heard this, they hesitated for a moment. Then, people came up one after another to touch the stone tablet. As they touched it, a light beam would shoot out from the stone tablet and land on their foreheads.

Once the light beam faded away, a shining symbol appeared on the students’ foreheads. However, the symbol given revealed a dark yellow color and the number [1] appeared within the symbol.

It was evident that these people were assessed as Rank 1.

Everybody stared at the dark yellow symbol on their respective foreheads and felt a bit frustrated. It was truly a terrible sight to possess the lowest rank.

Buzz!

Just as the crowd was feeling bitter, a powerful light beam erupted from the stone tablet. The light beam revealed a dark red color and converged on the forehead of the boy who was in front of the stone tablet.

As a dark red symbol emerged, the number [3] slowly formed.

“Rank 3? He’s actually a student that obtained the Seeded Entry!” The dark red light was too different than the rest of them. Therefore, many surprised gazes shot over immediately and they smacked their lips enviously.

As the boy in white clothes noticed at the envious glares nearby, he raised his chin slightly. A hint of pride emerged on his face. The people that obtained a seeded entry could look over the students who only obtained an ordinary entry. This is because it

represented that they were at different levels.

The boy's arrogant gaze caused the students to feel slightly uncomfortable. However, they knew that the latter was truly stronger than ordinary students. It was best not to provoke this sort of person.

On the platform, the crowd continually obtained their symbols. And after the boy in white, there were two other individuals that possessed a seeded entry. This made many people exclaim secretly. Just in their Escort Platform, there were already 3 seeded entries. Just how many seeded entries were there within the Northern Heavens World?

Furthermore, above the seeded entries, there was the core entry.

Many of the people weren't clear how terrifying the people who obtained a core entry were. However, it was certain that a person who obtained a core entry would be a monster!

Mu Chen and Mo Ling did not hastily head forward. They waited for the crowd to lessen before lining up. Because Mo Ling only possessed an ordinary entry, he also obtained a Rank 1 assessment. As for Mu Chen, he was assessed as Rank 3 like the other seeded entries.

When the dark red light emerged on Mu Chen's forehead, many astonished gazes glanced over. Even the three individuals with seeded entries had their gazes focused on Mu Chen. It was evident that Mu Chen, who had obtained a seeded entry, was worthy of their attention.

After everybody was assessed, a strange smile seemed to appear on the old figure. He continued to explain: "Since all of you have been assessed ranks, I will continue to speak. Based on the rules, any students who are ranked lower than 4 will be eliminated at the end. In other words, they will lose their qualifications to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

WAHHH!

The platform suddenly shook. Everybody was stunned. Wouldn't this mean that nobody here was qualified?

"Little ones. There's no need to worry. The ranks aren't fixed and can be increased. Moreover, the method of increasing rank isn't difficult. You only need to kill Spiritual Beasts or obtain worldly treasures that have accumulated Spiritual Aura, and the symbol on your forehead will automatically absorb some of the Spiritual Aura. Through that, your rank will increase."

Everyone was relieved. So they could increase their ranks through hunting Spiritual Beasts and obtaining worldly treasures.

"Of course, this isn't the fastest way to increase it. The fastest method is to steal the Spiritual Aura within other people's symbols. This will allow you to quickly raise your rank."

Once this was said, countless people's bodies stiffened. Then, their faces gradually changed.

"Especially the symbols that are ranked high. For example, you are all only Rank 1 currently. However, if you managed to defeat the seeded entry students and obtained the Spiritual Aura within their symbols, you will immediately increase from Rank 1 to Rank 3." The old figure had a huge smile plastered on his face as if he was a sly fox trying to lure people to perform this act.

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed slightly. This rule basically encourages students to steal from one another. As expected, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's examination isn't that simple. So this is the examination system, huh?

Because at this moment, Mu Chen could feel the gazes nearby change. Many of them revealed a hint of greediness as they stared at the symbol on his forehead.

Chapter 112 – Girl in a Black Dress

Suddenly, the atmosphere on the Escort Platform turned strange. A few boys' gazes became vigilant, and they all stepped away from one another.

This rule had made it extremely clear. Aside from being careful of the vicious lands and Spiritual Beasts, the greatest threat they could face were their fellow students.

"Little ones. This rule was made to give everyone a chance. A chance to escape the ordinary. Even a person with Core Entry will be disqualified and denied their right of entry to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy if he fails to reach Rank 4." The old figure's chuckle rang out again.

Mu Chen snorted upon hearing this. A person who had obtained Core Entry would definitely not a kindhearted person. Even if they had an accident and had their symbol robbed, would it really be difficult for them to regain a Rank 4 symbol with their abilities?

"Regarding the Ranks, it will determine your position within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The higher your rank, the more you will valued by the academy. Therefore, in order to not be disqualified and obtain a better status and resources within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, you should work hard on increasing your rank. I will wait for your arrival at the Northern Heavens Hall..."

"By then, the difference between all of you will be reflected by your success."

"Finally, a reminder to everyone: If you want to give up, you only need to shatter the symbol on your forehead. After that, a monitor will come over and take you away. But in that case, the person who has lost their symbol will be eliminated."

"Okay, right now, I want to solemnly tell all of you that the

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Examination has now officially begun!" The old man directed a slight smile at the crowd before his figure slowly faded away.

With the disappearance of the old figure, the Escort Platform became completely silent. A few people's eyes were twinkling.

Mu Chen felt the pressure of this atmosphere and glanced at his surroundings. Most of the people on the platform were gathering in groups of two or three. The only exceptions were the Seeded Entry participants and Mu Chen. Next to the Seeded Entry participants, there was a humongous crowd that had formed. Judging from the appearance, these participants came from a rather large-sized Spiritual Academy and thus had many followers.

Compared to them, Mu Chen's side looked pretty shabby. After all, the only one beside him was Mo Ling, who was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase.

The 3 Seeded Entry participants' gazes swept across the platform. They were slightly afraid of each other. Therefore, they simply waved their hands and jumped off the Escort Platform as they charged into the depths of the ancient forest.

In the Northern Heavens World, the amount of students participating was numbered in thousands. Thus, there was no need for them to fight against such tricky opponents when they had time to pick their prey.

"Let's leave as well." Mu Chen whispered to Mo Ling.

After he spoke, he charged away from the Escort Platform. Seeing this, Mo Ling hurriedly followed. However, countless gazes twinkled on the escort platform as they noticed Mu Chen's action.

On the platform, there were no less than six people whose strength had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. However, there were only four people who obtained a seeded entry. It was evident that the other individuals at the Spiritual

Rotation Stage Late Phase felt this was somewhat unfair. After all, they too possessed the ability to obtain a seeded entry. They just lacked the luck...

Fortunately, this examination gave them a chance.

On the Escort Platform, three of the four seeded entry participants had many followers beside them. It was relatively troublesome to attack them. However, Mu Chen's force seemed pretty weak and appeared to them to be the easiest target.

As long as they defeated Mu Chen, they would instantly obtain a Rank 3 Symbol.

In the crowd, many eyes narrowed as they stared at the direction Mu Chen had taken. The corners of their lips immediately lifted up as if they had spotted a prey.

A Seeded Entry? In this place, it was only a title that attracted trouble.

Mu Chen brought Mo Ling away from the Escort Platform. His calm face made it seem as though he was not aware of others plotting against him. His eyes would only stare into the distance with slight hope. Luo Li, are you here?

When Mu Chen entered the ancient forest, an Escort Platform that was relatively far away was quite bustling.

This Escort Platform appeared to be larger than the one Mu Chen was on. There were a lot more people as well. However, aside from the scattered individuals, the dense crowd was clearly divided. There were many boys with prideful expression. The Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitting from their bodies clearly showed that the majority of them were at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Furthermore, on their foreheads, a dark red symbol appeared which represented that they were winners of the seeded entries.

At this location, they were considered as the best of the bunch.

Buzz!

On the Escort Platform, a light pillar suddenly descended and numerous people glanced over lazily. Soon, the originally lazy expression they had immediately vanished. Instead, it was replaced with shock.

WAHHH!

Muffled cries spread throughout the platform like ripples. Many people were affected by it and turned over to take a look. In front of their eyes, a slender figure emerged.

As the light pillar slowly dispersed, a girl in a black dress emerged. She had an exquisite figure and had curves underneath her dress. Her silver hair shone like the Milky Way and fluttered in the sky as the breeze blew. It was exceptionally moving.

The girl's skin was white as snow while her eyebrows were like crescent moons. While she moved gently, it seemed that it teased people's hearts. Underneath the moon-like eyebrows were a pair of clear glass-like eyes. These eyes were so beautiful those who stared into them would lose themselves in them. Not many males of the same age were able to maintain their calm under her gaze.

Moreover, she possessed an extremely refined face. The only shortcoming it had, was that it did not have a smile. It wasn't that the face was cold and detached; instead, it was as calm as a lake. Her glass-like eyes blinked gently and gave off a feeling that nothing in this world would attract her gaze.

The originally bustling Escort Platform had instantly turned quiet by such a scene. Many people secretly stole a glance at her. However, it was unknown why few of them dared to stare at the girl's clear and beautiful crystalline eyes.

The boys with a flashing red symbols on their forehead, which proved that they were extraordinary, had fiery eyes. There was no doubt that it was the first time they had ever seen such elegance

and temperament.

The girl in the black dress glanced around the Escort Platform quietly. Then, she walked over to the stone tablet located at the center of the platform. As she walked gracefully, many people noticed that a pitched-black sword was on her back.

The gazes on the scene moved together with her.

Finally, a tall boy, who was relatively handsome, could not endure it and walked over. On his forehead, a red symbol shone. This was the ability that attracted other person's attentions.

"Hello, I'm Gu Ge from the Dayuan Continent's Dayuan Spiritual Academy. Do you need any help? Since you've arrived slightly late, I can explain the rules here for you." The boy revealed a gentle smile to the girl in black dress. His tone was also quite soft, making it difficult for her to refuse.

The girl in the black dress glanced at the boy for a moment with her clear glass-like eyes, and in that moment, the latter felt his heartbeat increase. A hint of passion flashed through the depths of his eyes. If he was able to obtain a girl like this, just how maddening and moving would it be when he hugged her in his arms as she acted shy?

However, the girl in black dress only glanced at him for a moment. She did not speak to him and only walked around him as she headed towards the stone tablet.

Seeing this, Gu Ge let out a smile. He followed over and began to explain the rules as if he was in a world all by himself. Then he smiled and asked: "It seems that you're by yourself. It will be quite dangerous. I have many companions. Therefore, I would like to join teams with you, so you can be safe as well."

When she heard the word "teams", the girl's clear eyes seemed to flash. However, she remained uncommunicative and gently extended her slender hands to touch the stone tablet.

Buzz!

As her hands touched the stone tablet, it suddenly shook. A distinctive golden light shot off and formed at the center of the girl's eyebrows.

Gu Ge's voice instantly faded away. Moreover, many people, who had fiery expressions, instantly became dumbfounded. This is because they noticed signs of a [5] appearing on the girl's forehead.

A Rank 5 Symbol?

Everybody sucked in a mouthful of cold air. Even the people who obtained a seeded entry took a big gulp. The girl in front of them actually obtained a Core Entry?

Gu Ge's face twitched. A Core Entry. Only the people, who were assessed as "King" Class in the Spiritual Road would be able to obtain it!

The seemingly weak and beautiful girl in front of them was actually this terrifying?

The girl slowly turned around and her clear glass-like eyes looked at Gu Ge. Her slender lips finally opened. Her voice was crisp and quiet.

"You mentioned earlier that the symbol's rank could increase through stealing other people's symbols?"

Gu Ge was stunned and immediately nodded his head.

The girl in the black dress spoke gently: "Then, all of the seeded entry participants here should hand over their symbols to me."

WAHHH!

An uproar instantly broke out on the Escort Platform. There were a dozen boys whose eyes were filled with rage. They were all individuals who obtained a seeded entry.

"Hmph. Although you are someone who obtained a Core Entry, don't you think it's unrealistic for you to steal so many people's

symbols!?" A boy sneered.

The girl in the black dress shook her head. She stared at the boy and replied seriously: "I don't think so."

Hearing this, his face immediately turned black with rage. He gritted his teeth as he shouted: "Everyone. Let's all attack her together and see how amazing she is!"

The other seeded entry participants also nodded when they heard this. A dozen individuals slowly surrounded the girl. At this moment, Gu Ge also shrugged his shoulders. The girl had ignored him earlier, and this had made him feel slightly irritated. Thus, he gloated and said: "It seems that I can't help you either."

A dozen boys, who were all at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, surrounded the girl. Powerful waves of Spiritual Energy suddenly erupted. In the next instant, all of them were lunging towards the girl in black dress.

However, the girl remained motionless. She only blinked and brushed away the hair on her forehead.

Boom!

Just when the dozen individuals were about to touch her body, a black light suddenly erupted from her body.

Bang Bang Bang Bang!

A dozen figures instantly flew back and landed on the ground. Every single one of them spat out a mouthful of blood as horror filled their eyes.

The crowd immediately inhaled a breath of cold air. A dozen Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase powerhouses were completely defeated without even being able to touch her body?

The girl in black dress walked over. She made a small action with her hands and the dozen individuals' symbols quickly turned dim. A few lights flashed and entered the golden symbol on her

forehead.

By stealing many Rank 3 symbols, the girl's golden symbol had turned a lot brighter. However, it had not reached Rank 6. It was evident that it wasn't easy to rank up.

After taking away the unfortunate fellows' symbols, the girl in black dress walked towards Gu Ge, who was completely pale. She stared at him with her clear eyes: "Yours."

Cold sweat slid down Gu Ge's forehead. He smiled stiffly and had no intention of attacking. As he concentrated, the Spiritual Aura within his symbol emitted out and entered the golden symbol on the girl's forehead.

Once she was done robbing away the seeded entry participants' symbols, the girl in black dress did not attack the ordinary students. She only turned away and headed towards the edge of the Escort Platform. Her eyes stared at the distance. Finally, ripples appeared in her quiet eyes. Her mouth twitched and a shallow smile bloomed.

I said that I'll wait for you. But if you do not come, I will hate you.

Chapter 113 – Targeted

In the ancient forest, giant trees towered into the sky. The thick branches and leaves grew outwards and gave the impression that they were covering the sky. Moreover, shocking roars would bring about powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations when they were heard from time to time in this boundless forest.

Roar!

Currently, somewhere within the forest, Mu Chen was staring in surprise at the Spiritual Beast in front of him. The Spiritual Beast's body was covered with a golden color. It had a shape similar to a cow and even had a golden horn on top of its head. However, its tail was close to a crocodile's tail and had many sharp spikes. As it swung around, it caused the wind to whistle and the air seemed to be torn apart.

Golden Crocodile. Middle Rank Spiritual Beast. It had strength comparable to a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Furthermore, the golden scales that covered its body made it impregnable.

Beside the Golden Crocodile, there was a giant black tiger as well. Although it was not as bold and powerful when compared to the Golden Crocodile, it still possessed the strength of the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase.

"Leave this big guy to me. You can deal with the other."

Mu Chen pointed at the Golden Crocodile. Although he had the ability to resolve the situation by himself, this would not benefit Mo Ling. Since everybody required honing their abilities to improve, it would not be beneficial for him to protect Mo Ling too much. Otherwise, it would limit the latter's progress.

"Okay." Mo Ling nodded. He also understood that he could not rely on Mu Chen for everything. If he didn't improve his strength, he would only be a burden to Mu Chen.

Seeing this, Mu Chen no longer said anything. He immediately lunged over towards the Golden Crocodile. As he extended two of his fingers, the fingertips shone a golden light. An extremely sharp and overbearing aura emitted from them.

Roar!

The Golden Crocodile roared as it noticed Mu Chen rushing over. It lashed its tail, which was strong enough to crush boulders, fiercely towards Mu Chen and appeared to hit him. However, its tail mysteriously passed through Mu Chen's body, for little did it know, the thing it had hit had actually been an afterimage.

"Up here."

Mu Chen moved swiftly and appeared above the Golden Crocodile's head. He smiled slightly, and his Spiritual Energy erupted out. The energy forcibly made the Golden Crocodile collapse on the ground. Then, his fingers stabbed mercilessly into the Golden Crocodile's head .

Clang!

Sparks burst out. Mu Chen's fingers, that were hardened like tempered steel, actually penetrated through the Golden Crocodile's tough golden scales. Fresh blood instantly sprayed out.

Roar!

The Golden Crocodile instantly entered a frenzy due to it being severely injured. However, no matter how it struggled, it failed to touch Mu Chen's phantom-like figure. With the latter's strength, it was quite easy to deal with a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Spiritual Beast.

In two short minutes, the Golden Crocodile was completely covered with its own blood. Finally, it stopped struggling and crashed onto the ground, which instantly shook due to the impact.

Mu Chen clapped his hands and squatted down. He extracted a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, which was shining a golden light,

from the Golden Crocodile's head. As the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence emerged, a faint golden light shot out and entered the symbol on Mu Chen's forehead. The dark red symbol instantly brightened up.

"This item created by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is quite unusual." Seeing this, Mu Chen frowned. He could detect that the golden light was quite subtle, thus, it did not affect the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence overall. Moreover, it seemed that the symbol would actively absorb any Spiritual Energy nearby that was not bound to a Spirit Beast in order to achieve the effect of ranking up.

Furthermore, the symbol rejected the Spiritual Aura within a human's body. In other words, it was ridiculous for anyone to use their own Spiritual Energy to increase the symbol.

Mu Chen held onto the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. A Middle Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence wasn't something he would care about. But just when he was about to place it inside his Mustard Seed Bracelet, he detected a black light surging through the center of his palm and held onto the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Then to Mu Chen's dismay, the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence quickly turned dim. With a banging sound, it scattered away into lights.

After the black light absorbed the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence's energy, it returned back into Mu Chen's body.

Mu Chen stared dumbfounded at this scene. He immediately recovered from the shock. It was the Nine Netherbird!

"The Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence has a small effect of helping me recover. In the future, you should hunt more and speed up my recovery." The Nine Netherbird's thoughts was conveyed in Mu Chen's mind.

"You're really rude." Mu Chen curled his lips and spoke.

“If it wasn’t for you borrowing my strength last time, I wouldn’t be in such a weak state in the first place.” The Nine Netherbird replied coldly.

“Okay, I’ll try my best.” Mu Chen shook his head helplessly. It really wasn’t great to owe the Nine Netherbird a favor. If it was before, he could ignore it. But now, he could deal with a bit of exploitation. Besides, if the Nine Netherbird recovered quickly, he would have an ultimate life-saving measure, even if he did not want to utilize this power.

“Since I’ve benefited from you a bit, I’ll be kind and tell this to you. You’ve already been targeted.”

“Oh?”

Mu Chen’s eyes narrowed. He immediately smiled as he looked behind him at the forest. These people were quite fast. It seemed that his Rank 3 Symbol was quite attractive.

Mu Chen stopped his conversation with the Nine Netherbird and turned his gaze over towards Mo Ling. For Mo Ling, his strength was close to the black tiger Spiritual Beast. Therefore, it would be quite difficult for him to deal with it. As they clashed against each other, injuries appeared on his body. However, it was evident that the black tiger Spiritual Beast suffered far worse injuries.

The battle between the man and the Spiritual Beast lasted for a while. The black tiger Spiritual Beast finally couldn’t bear it and struggled as it collapsed. Then, Mo Ling rushed over and delivered a heavy blow. He killed it completely.

Mo Ling sat on the corpse of the black tiger Spiritual Beast and wiped the blood off his face. He directed an embarrassed smile to Mu Chen for delaying them for so long here.

Swish.

At this moment, numerous black lights suddenly stormed out from the forest and shot off towards Mo Ling’s vital points.

This attack was too swift and abrupt. Therefore, Mo Ling failed to perceive it and could only watch as the black lights grew larger within his eyes.

Boom!

But just when the black lights were about to hit Mo Ling's body, a golden light flew over and appeared in front of Mo Ling. It allowed the black lights to hit it.

Clang Clang!

The golden light was really the Golden Crocodile's corpse. As the black lights made contact with the corpse, they bounced off while making clanging sounds.

Mo Ling's face instantly changed. He hurriedly stood up and stared fearfully into the forest. If it wasn't for Mu Chen, he would have probably been injured heavily.

"Who's there!" He stood up and shouted out angrily.

Mu Chen frowned and said: "You've sneakily followed us for so long already. Yet you're reluctant to reveal your appearances?"

"Ohoho, as expected for a person, who obtained a seeded entry. You're indeed quite capable."

From the forest, sounds of laughter rang out. Then, three figures rushed out and landed on a branch. They stared down at Mu Chen and Mo Ling with gazes as if they had spotted prey.

Mo Ling was shocked when the three figures revealed themselves. This is because these three individuals came from the same Escort Platform as them. In addition, they were all at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

"3 Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!"

Mo Ling's heart sank. These three individuals were in no way inferior to Liu Mubai. If it was only one person, it would be easy to deal with them. But with all three of them, even Mu Chen would

find it quite troubling.

Although Mo Ling knew that Mu Chen had once killed a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse in the Northern Spiritual Realm, it was still just a rumor. That strength might not have belonged to Mu Chen. Therefore, it was uncertain if Mu Chen could use that strength a second time.

Thus, with Mu Chen's Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase strength, it would be easy for him to deal with one person who was at the same level as him. But if it was three...

"Brother Mu."

Mo Ling approached Mu Chen and his voice was filled with worries. He knew that it would be simple for Mu Chen to leave by himself even if all three joined forces. However, it would be troublesome if Mu Chen had to bring him away as well.

"Brother Mu, why don't we go our separate ways?" Mo Ling gritted his teeth and said in a low voice. He felt slightly uncomfortable for being a burden to Mu Chen.

"With the current situation, there's no need to do so." Mu Chen directed a smile at Mo Ling. If they thought three people at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase were able to force him to abandon his companion and escape, then they were underestimating him.

"This friend over there. I'm Ge Qing. Ohoho, we're quite interested in your Rank 3 Symbol. Why don't you hand over the symbol to us and we'll let you leave? This way, everybody will be happy and it'll be better for both of us, don't you reckon?" Among the three individuals, a boy in grey clothes smiled at Mu Chen.

The other two boys at Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase stared mockingly at Mu Chen. It was evident that they did not believe Mu Chen had the ability to escape from their hands.

Mu Chen stared at the three of them. A hint of sharpness flashed

through his eyes. He knew that these fellows followed him because of his Rank 3 Symbol. Furthermore, there were still a few people sneaking around behind them.

It was obvious that there were many people targeting him. After all, who told him to have a Rank 3 Symbol? Also, his companion was much weaker than the other 3 Seeded Entry candidates.

A person like him was the easily viewed as the weakest target.

“Mo Ling, stand back.” Mu Chen said softly.

Hearing this, Mo Ling’s face changed. Does this mean Mu Chen is planning to fight? But there’s a total of three people on the opposite side… Although he was slightly concerned, he still nodded and retreated cautiously.

“Oh, not bad…Does this mean he’s planning to fight all three of us by himself?” Seeing this, the three individuals let out a mocking smile.

“How arrogant.”

Ge Qing also let out a faint smile. The eyes he used to stare at Mu Chen turned cold. He immediately waved his hand and said: “Since this friend has so much confidence in himself, we should entertain him for a while. This way, we can prevent people from acting this arrogant just because they obtained a seeded entry…”

The other two also grinned and clenched their palms. A powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation erupted out. Then, the three of them exchanged gazes before charging over at the same time.

As the trio swooped down like a hawk, violent Spiritual Energy enveloped Mu Chen completely.

They wanted the boy in front of them to know that he couldn’t act arrogant here just because he obtained a seeded entry!

Chapter 114 – Slaughter the Chicken to Warn the Monkey

Fusing themselves with the dense Spiritual Energy, the three figures fiercely pounced towards Mu Chen like a tiger springing towards its prey. As they passed through the sky, violent winds began to form and rumble out from their fists in an attempt to envelop Mu Chen.

Although the trio spoke demeaningly, they were merciless once they attacked. It was evident that they were somewhat afraid of Mu Chen. After all, it was certain that a person who had obtained a seeded entry wasn't someone simple.

The Spiritual Academies that they had come from also had seeded entries. However, they lost in the competition for it. This was enough to explain the strength required to obtain such an entry.

Although they were uncertain how powerful the Spiritual Academy Mu Chen had come from was, it was never wrong to be cautious.

But against these three men, Mu Chen's handsome face remained calm. He only moved the moment the three attacks were about to descend on him.

In the instant that Mu Chen moved, an afterimage appeared. The winds from the trio's powerful fists roared and smashed the afterimage into nothingness.

"An afterimage?!" Once their attacks missed, Ge Qing and the others' faces changed.

Swish!

However, as their faces were changing, Mu Chen's figure had already appeared in front of one of them as if he had been a ghost. A golden light shone from his two fingers that remained extended

like a sharp weapon. Then, like a shining divine spear, it tore through the air and charged towards the boy's throat.

After seeing how sharp Mu Chen's finger attack was, the boy's eyes also changed. He ferociously changed his hand from a fist to a palm and dense Spiritual Energy surged out: "Sorrowful Palm!"

The boy's strength wasn't weak; he also had plenty of experience. Although Mu Chen's speed was beyond his expectations, he did not panic and immediately counterattacked as he waited for the other two companions' support.

Swish!

But when the dense palm attack was about to collide with Mu Chen's attack, the latter's eyes flashed and the figure faded away again.

The boy's palm attack missed and his eyes narrowed suddenly. He hurriedly turned his body and was somewhat surprised to see a golden light erupt from behind him. In the end, it landed on his shoulder fiercely.

Puchi.

The dazzling finger attack was like a sharp spear. It directly pierced through the boy's shoulders and fresh blood sprayed out in all directions, causing the boy to let out a scream as he flew backwards.

"Brother Mu, amazing!" Seeing this, Mo Ling's eyes were filled with surprise. It was apparent that Mu Chen's strength had vastly surpassed his power from the time when he had fought against Liu Mubai.

In a few moments, a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase student was completely defeated by Mu Chen. This made Ge Qing and the other person's eyes jump. A hint of uneasiness filled their hearts.

The person they thought of as a weakling was actually this tricky.

“Let’s do this together. He’s extremely fast, we should not get separated by him so he can defeat us individually!” Ge Qing shouted out.

The other Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase student nodded his head solemnly, then, the two of them unleashed fierce attacks towards Mu Chen from both sides.

But against the two of them teaming up, Mu Chen’s Shadowspirit Step was activated once again, and his body retreated like a phantom. He directly avoided the fierce attacks from the two of them.

“Nine Sword Dance!”

Once he noticed Mu Chen’s phantom-like movements, a hint of coldness flashed through Ge Qing’s eyes. He suddenly changed seals and dense Spiritual Energy surged out. Then, it formed into 9 Spiritual Energy Swords.

Swish!

Once these longswords were condensed, they shot out and flanked Mu Chen. The sharp sword aura easily ripped through the air.

Seeing this, Mu Chen’s eyes revealed a touch of surprise. The Spiritual Art that Ge Qing was displaying was certainly not low in tier. The people that came from large Spiritual Academies truly had an amazing background.

“Daluo Palm!” The other Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase student immediately shouted out once he noticed Mu Chen being slowed down by Ge Qing. Dense Spiritual Energy instantly formed into a handprint of pure Spiritual Energy and smashed down angrily towards Mu Chen.

But when he saw this, Mu Chen let out a cold snort from within his heart. He circulated the Great Pagoda Art, and a faint black light barrier emerged on the surface of his body. The black light

seemed to vaguely form a tower-like shape .

Clang Clang!

The 9 Spiritual Energy Swords chopped down at the blurry black light tower. However, the light tower did not budge at all. Immediately after this, the Spiritual Energy handprint smashed down, yet it also failed to harm the light tower. This powerful defense made Ge Qing and the other student's expressions change.

"Boom!"

But Mu Chen ignored the two individuals whose expressions were once again changing significantly. Powerful fist winds surged as two black light seals emerged on the surface of his fists. Then, Mu Chen punched out, and an overbearing and violent Spiritual Energy bombarded the two of them.

Seeing this, Ge Qing and the other hurriedly expelled their Spiritual Energy in order to send out a punch to counter the blast.

Dong!

The overbearing winds from by the two Limitless Death Seals collided against Ge Qing and the other student's attack. Spiritual Energy swept out and forced the two of them to retreat a couple of steps.

"What an overbearing Spiritual Energy!"

As they were knocked back, Ge Qing and the others were shocked. Mu Chen was at the same Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase like them, yet he actually obtained the upper-hand when facing the two of them.

Just when Ge Qing and the other student were astonished, an exceedingly violent and fiery Spiritual Energy fluctuation emerged in front of them. They hurriedly looked over and noticed a 30-meter-tall, fiery Spiritual Array forming just in front of Mu Chen.

"A Spiritual Array?!"

As they looked at the Spiritual Array's Diagram Array, Ge Qing and the other revealed a horrified expression. This guy was a Spiritual Array Master as well?

"Roar!"

A tiger's roar resounded within the crimson light array, and in the next instant, a blazing tiger carrying violent Spiritual Energy stormed out of it and charged over to the trio.

"Let's attack together!"

Sensing the violent Spiritual Energy within the flame tiger's body, Ge Qing hastily cried out.

"Nine Sword Dance!"

"Daluo Palm!"

The two of them instantly released their strongest attacks. Finally, the billowing Spiritual Energy crashed into the flame tiger that was charging over.

Hot air waves swept out and the leaves on the ground instantly ignited without need of a fire. Then, Ge Qing and the other student staggered backwards a dozen steps.

"It's too hard to deal with him, let's hurry and retreat!"

Ge Qing's face was completely pale. Even when they used all their strength, they weren't able to get the upper-hand against Mu Chen. It was evident that they had estimated Mu Chen's strength incorrectly. At this moment, it was best for them to retreat quickly.

Swish!

But just when this idea appeared in their minds and they prepared to retreat, a sound of winds breaking rang out. Then, they noticed a blurry figure standing in front of them. The two fingers emitting out a golden light brought forth sharp winds as they stopped in front of their throats.

The two of them instantly froze. They did not dare to make the slightest action. In their eyes, panic surged out.

“You actually wanted to rob others with such abilities? Aren’t you overestimating yourself?” Mu Chen smiled as he stared at the two pale faces.

“You!”

Ge Qing gnashed his teeth and stared fiercely at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smile faintly and he changed his hands from two fingers to a palm. Then, he smacked down heavily on both of their chests. The powerful winds directly sent them flying away. A mouthful of blood sprayed out and the atmosphere instantly became depressed.

“Next up, you should know what you will have to do, right?” Mu Chen asked softly as he squatted down in front of them.

Ge Qing stared at Mu Chen’s smile and felt a chill within his heart. He exchanged gazes with the other person and could only grit his teeth unwillingly. A light beam emitted out from the symbol on their forehead and entered the symbol on Mu Chen’s forehead. This made the latter’s symbol turned brighter. On the contrary, their symbols turned quite dim and seemed like it was about to disappear.

Mu Chen stood up and called Mo Ling over. He allowed Mo Ling to absorb the Spiritual Aura within the symbol of the unfortunate fellow, who had been wounded by him earlier.

“Everyone. If anyone wishes to rob my symbol’s Spiritual Aura, I’ll welcome it. However, I hope that every one of you will be prepared before you target me. These three fellows are examples...”

Mu Chen lifted his head and directed a smile at the forest behind him. He could sense the hidden aura of the people who followed Ge Qing and were planning to rob him.

The forest was completely silent. In the darkness, a few people's eyes flashed and intended to retreat. The person in front of them was too strong. Even though he was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, he is able to easily defeat three opponents at the same level. Perhaps this guy could only be dealt with by an expert who had entered the territory of the Spirit Stage.

After Mu Chen's words faded away, he did not bother to stay in the area. The effect of setting an example for others should be quite effective. Although he wanted to increase his symbol's rank, these people only possessed Rank 1 symbols. Obviously, he wasn't interested in them as it would take too much time.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen glanced at the trio once more. Then, he gestured towards Mo Ling and headed into the depths of the ancient forest.

Ge Qing and the others stared at Mu Chen's fading figure. All three of them gnashed their teeth. They originally thought that this matter could be easily resolved, but in the end, they were the ones to suffer.

"What should we do now? That guy is too powerful. I'm afraid nobody within the Spiritual Rotation Stage is his opponent." One of them let out a bitter laugh as he stared at Mu Chen's silhouette.

A hint of coldness flashed through Ge Qing's eyes. He gritted his teeth and said: "He is definitely amazing. But it isn't to the point where nobody can defeat him."

"You have a plan?" The other two asked in surprise.

"Hmph, let's find my big brother. He is a person who participated in the Spiritual Road. As of now, he has already entered the Spirit Stage. Wouldn't it be simple for him to defeat that bastard?" Ge Qing sneered.

"Participated in the Spiritual Road?"

"Spirit Stage?"

The two boys could not help but exclaim loudly. A hint of shock remained in their eyes. It was apparent that they did not expect Ge Qing to have such a powerful big brother.

“Follow me. I have a Spirit Board on me, so I can sense the position of my big brother. He should be in the same area as us. When the time comes, I will make that guy spit out everything he has eaten!” Ge Qing stood up as he gritted his teeth. Then, he headed towards the opposite direction. Seeing this, the other two boys quickly followed...

“Brother Mu, there won’t be any more trouble, right?” Mo Ling asked Mu Chen as he followed him. However, he would look back cautiously from time to time.

“The trio earlier was pretty strong. Compared to them, the people in the rear were nothing. Therefore, there won’t be anyone attacking us for now.”

Mu Chen smiled as he looked into the distance: “But as we enter the depths of the Northern Heavens World, we’ll start encountering powerful individuals. There are at least tens of thousands of students entering this place. Among them, there are a few powerful characters that came from the Spiritual Road. At that time, the examination will have truly begun.”

Mo Ling could not help but let out a bitter laugh. To stand out from their respective Spiritual Academies and obtain a Five Great Academies’ entry, they must possess some ability. With so many powerful individuals, the competition was truly unthinkable.

At this moment, Mu Chen slowly exhaled. His black eyes were quite abstruse. In the Spiritual Road, he had many enemies. Who knows how many of them he would meet here? Since those guys passed through the final part of the Spiritual Road, their strength would soar, perhaps, they had already broken through to the Spirit Stage.

Mu Chen pursed his lips. He did not want to lose to an opponent

that he had defeated before. Even if they had passed through the Spiritual Road and obtained the most important Spiritual Energy Empowerment, he, Mu Chen, would let them understand one thing. It does not matter whether he had lost a year of cultivation due to the Spiritual Road, nor does it matter that he did not obtain the Spiritual Road's final Spiritual Energy Empowerment. Since he was able to make them surrender in the Spiritual Road, he could do the same in reality as well.

Mu Chen clenched his hands slowly. It seemed that it was time for him to condense the third Limitless Death Seal...

When he fought against Liu Jingshan, Mu Chen has once condensed 4 Limitless Death Seals by borrowing the Nine Netherbird's strength. The power was quite extraordinary. For the current Mu Chen, it was evident that he did not have the ability to condense 4 seals. However, he probably had the ability to condense the 3rd seal.

If Mu Chen was successful in condensing the 3rd seal, even a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse would have to take shelter when he activated it with his current strength.

Title is an idiom that means setting an example to others.

Chapter 115 – The Third Limitless Death Seal

Within the ink-like dark of night, only a couple of stars could be seen in the entire Northern Heavens World. It was quite a lonely sight.

Inside the ancient forest, various roars resounded out from time to time. These roars were laced with rage. Apparently, since the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's examination began, a few Spiritual Beasts had been disturbed by the students. The vast region that had previously been calm and quiet was suddenly being occupied by numerous students that rushed in like a flood.

The Spiritual Beast inhabitants were clearly unhappy being disturbed by them. Therefore, battles would continue to break out even when it was late at night.

In the depths of the forest, a bonfire rose. Mu Chen was sitting cross-legged underneath a large tree. He stared at the rising bonfire and entered a trance. This was quite a familiar scene to him.

In the Spiritual Road, he had spent many nights like this. However, during that time, he had a beautiful girl, who possessed clear glass-like eyes, beside him. When he glanced at her, it was as if the troubles within his heart were being suppressed, and he would calm down.

"Brother Mu, here."

A discordant voice suddenly caused Mu Chen wake from the trance. He stared at a piece of dark, roasted meat that was being handed over by Mo Ling, who had a foolish smile on his face. At this moment, he could not help but let out a sigh. In his eyes, a hint of depression appeared. Luo Li was definitely better. Not only was she a feast to his eyes, the roasted meat that she made was many times better than Mo Ling's roughly made one.

Mo Ling also knew that his cooking skills were quite miserable. However, his smiling appearance still made Mu Chen shake his head helplessly.

“Brother Mu, the Northern Heavens World is truly large. We’ve already walked for two days and we still haven’t escape the forest…” Mo Ling said.

“How could the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s examination location be a small location?” Mu Chen smiled: “There are probably tens of thousands of students. Moreover, all of them are individuals who stood out within their own Spiritual Academy. If the place isn’t large, how could they throw them all in here?”

“During the past two days, there have been less people provoking us.” Mo Ling nodded. Then, he smiled and said: “It seems Brother Mu’s threat earlier was quite effective.”

“The effects will soon disappear.” Mu Chen shook his head. He stared into the depths of the forest underneath the dark sky as he said: “The Northern Heavens World is a vast, circular region. We were all at the edges, but everybody is heading towards the center. Therefore, it will become increasingly more difficult to approach the center area. Not only will the Spiritual Beasts become more powerful, the enemies will also become tougher.”

“I’ve heard some news earlier. It seems that many people are grouping up and forming small and large forces. When groups like that fight, it will be a grand sight.” Mo Ling said.

Mu Chen nodded and smiled: “That’s normal. In fact, you are quite amazing if you can gather a large amount of men by your side during the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s examination.”

“Moreover, the Spiritual Beasts will become more powerful as time passes. Aside from a few monsters, the others would have to rely on teams.”

“With Brother Mu’s abilities, you can definitely do better if you tried.” Mo Ling replied. Towards Mu Chen, Mo Ling had quite a bit of confidence in him.

Mu Chen let out a noncommittal smile. He wasn’t interested in doing such a thing.

“Hehe. However, Brother Mu’s symbol has already ranked up to Rank 4 within two days. You’ve already reached the bottom line for not being eliminated. As for me, I’m still at Rank 2. I really need to work harder.” Mo Ling stared enviously at Mu Chen’s forehead. The latter had a fiery red symbol. This was the sign for a Rank 4 Symbol. During the past two days, Mu Chen had hunted down many powerful Spiritual Beasts. Thus, his speed of ranking up was quite fast. As for himself, he had worked hard, yet he only reached Rank 2. It was still quite far away from reaching Rank 4.

“There’s no need to be impatient. It’s still early. This examination will not end this quickly.” Mu Chen smiled as he comforted him. Then he smiled: “You can guard first tonight. I need to cultivate for a while. If there are any issues, wake me up immediately.”

“Okay!” Mo Ling nodded.

Seeing that the situation was like this , Mu Chen no longer spoke and closed both his eyes. The Spiritual Energy within his body slowly circulated. In the past two days, he had always attempted to condense the third Limitless Death Seal. When he had just started, he had still been quite rusty; but he gradually began to form it. Based on his feelings, he felt that he would truly succeed in condensing it tonight.

Mo Ling watched as Mu Chen closed his eyes and started cultivating. Then, he stood up and extinguished the bonfire without leaving any sparks. His strength in the Northern Heavens World was only considered ordinary. Thus, he could not give much protection to Mu Chen. It was best for him to be cautious.

Mu Chen quietly gathered his thoughts and waited for his heart to completely calm down. Once he was calm, he started to rapidly circulate the Spiritual Energy within his body.

The Limitless Death Seal was a rather peculiar Spiritual Art. It wasn't extremely powerful in the beginning. But as the number of seals increased, it would eventually possess extraordinary power.

On the day Mu Chen borrowed the Nine Netherbird's power, he had temporarily condensed four Limitless Death Seals. With those four seals, he destroyed Liu Jingshan's Mountain God Tactics attack, which was at the mastery stage. According to his own speculations, the Mountain God Tactics that Liu Jingshan had trained in was close to a Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art.

However, it was evident that it was impossible for Mu Chen to condense four Limitless Death Seals in his current state. But since his strength had increased, he could attempt to condense the third seal.

Dense Spiritual Energy circulated within Mu Chen's body. Shortly after, Mu Chen was finally able to control his thoughts and allowed the Spiritual Energy to flow through his meridians to his palms.

At the same time, Mu Chen's hands clasped together and formed a few unusual hand seals. As these hand seals faded like an illusion, dark-black Spiritual Energy began to gather underneath his palm. By the end of the process, it had formed into a clump of black light 3 meters in size.

Spiritual Energy was twisting around within the light clump. It seemed that something was being formed within it. As this occurred, overbearing and powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted and caused the leaves beside Mu Chen to crumble into dust.

Next to Mu Chen, Mo Ling secretly clicked his tongue. He did not know what Spiritual Art Mu Chen was training in. It actually had

such an impressive power.

Over time, the black light clump became increasingly small. As the light clump shrank, a black light seal began to become increasingly clear.

Buzz!

The black light clump had completely vanished, and a black light seal floated on top of Mu Chen's palm. The Limitless Death Seal had finally been condensed successfully by Mu Chen.

Mu Chen exhaled a stream of white vapor. He immediately changed his hand seal and the Limitless Death Seal entered his palm.

Boom!

The instant the Limitless Death Seal entered his palm, Mu Chen's body shook. An extremely powerful backlash surged out from his palm and charged fiercely through his meridians, wreaking chaos along the way.

However, Mu Chen was already prepared for this. He concentrated and dark-black Spiritual Energy that had been on standby within his meridians swept out. It collided fiercely with the backlash.

Buzz Buzz.

A deep sound echoed within Mu Chen's body. Inside his aura sea, the Spiritual Energy light wheel circulated and waves of Spiritual Energy were pouring out constantly. It defended against the Limitless Death Seal's backlash.

The Limitless Death Seal was truly domineering. However, the Great Pagoda Art that Mu Chen had trained in was even more domineering. It did not retreat against the fierce impact, and instead there were signs of the backlash being resolved.

This confrontation within Mu Chen's body lasted for

approximately half an hour. Just when Mu Chen started to feel a slight pain within his meridians, the backlash in his body was finally completely resolved.

Buzz.

Just when the backlash was resolved, Mu Chen felt the third Limitless Death Seal slowly integrating into the center of his palm.

It was this way, that Mu Chen had truly succeeded in condensing the third Limitless Death Seal.

In the dim night, Mu Chen opened his eyes. He clenched his hands and felt three Limitless Death Seals twinkling at his fingertips. An overbearing fluctuation emitted.

As he felt the power of the three Limitless Death Seals, Mu Chen revealed a satisfied smile. By layering the three Limitless Death Seals on top of each other, even a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse would have to avoid its might.

“Brother Mu, did you succeed in your cultivation?” Mo Ling, who was watching the surroundings nervously, suddenly asked in surprise.

Mu Chen nodded and smiled as he stood up. But just when he was about to let Mo Ling rest, his expression changed. His eyes immediately turned towards the forest in front. A tremor came from that direction.

Spiritual Beasts’ roars also seemed to start at the same time as the tremor.

“Spiritual Beasts.”

Mu Chen frowned. He immediately gestured to Mo Ling and the two of them headed to the top of a tree. Their gazes were focused in the direction of the tremor. The vibrations rapidly came closer and they noticed a red light after a while.

It was a group of red panthers. Looking at them from afar, it

seemed that their bodies were covered with flames and looked extremely mighty. They were all Flame Panthers, Spiritual Beasts that possess the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. With a dozen of them grouping together, even a person at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase would have to hide.

Mu Chen stared at the group of Flame Panthers before turning his gaze toward the front of the flock. At that location, a slender figure was awkwardly avoiding the Flame Panthers' attack.

"Someone's being hunted." Mo Ling whispered.

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed. Through the moonlight, he noticed a little girl dressed in white. She seemed to be even younger than them. Her petite face was extremely beautiful and adorable. At this moment, her lake-like eyes were rippling with panic.

"How could she obtain the qualifications to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at such a young age?" Although the girl was quite cute, Mu Chen was more surprised at her age. He immediately whispered this in shock.

"Brother Mu, should we help her?" Mo Ling asked. It was indeed quite cruel for them to stand back and do nothing, while watching a cute girl being ripped into pieces by Flame Panthers.

Mu Chen stared at the scene, but he did not show any signs of helping out.

While she was being watched at by Mu Chen and Mo Ling, the little girl also seemed to detect something. She lifted her face and her lake-like eyes stared at Mu Chen and Mo Ling. Delight instantly filled her face.

However, her delighted expression quickly faded away. This is because it seemed that the two men on the trees did not want to help her.

"Meanies."

The little girl pouted. Water soon gathered in her eyes, but she

bit her lips stubbornly so that tears didn't flow. She was quite innocent, so she did not know why they didn't help her out in her time of need. However, once she thought about it, the other side wasn't obligated to help her. Thus, she immediately rubbed her eyes. Her previous Spiritual Academy was better. Everybody would help her, but the people here were all bad individuals. She truly didn't know why her parents and the principal wanted her to come here. Right now, she was separated from her sister and nobody wanted to help her.

As they noticed the pitiful appearance of the girl, Mu Chen and Mo Ling's faces twitched. If there were females here, they would probably have charged down and held the little girl in their arms with sympathy...

"Ah."

The little girl suddenly issued a scream. While she was desperately trying to escape, her steps were quite disorderly; and she actually fell forward. When that happened, she immediately turned around in panic and watched in terror as the dozen hideous Flame Panthers came lunging at her.

"Eh."

On the tree, Mu Chen finally let out a helpless sigh. His body swooped down like a hawk over to the girl.

Since it was impossible to ignore, why not help her out?

Chapter 116 – SunEr

Within the forest, meat was roasting over a bonfire as aromatic oil dripped down. The oil droplets dribbled into the bonfire causing the flames to rise higher from within the bonfire.

Next to the bonfire, a little girl dressed in white was currently widening her bright, black eyes. She stared at meat roasting on the spit as drool was slowly leaking out of her mouth; she was endlessly swallowing her saliva. Currently, her attention was completely captured by the roasted meat. As for the two individuals beside her, she had temporarily forgotten about them.

“Cough…”

Mu Chen could not help but cough lightly while he stared at the oblivious girl. He had saved her from the Flame Panthers earlier, yet she still remained silent. Only after a while, she hesitantly muttered to Mu Chen: “I’m hungry.”

When Mu Chen heard this, he was dumbfounded. He could only make the best of the ingredients available, so he roasted a Flame Panther. Although his skill was incomparable to Luo Li, it was still many times better than Mo Ling.

The little girl, who was completely focused on the roasted meat, heard Mu Chen’s coughing sounds and lifted her petite face.

“Little girl, what’s your name?” Mu Chen directed a smile at the little girl and asked her.

“You’re all bad people. My sister told me not to casually tell other people my name.” The little girl pouted. She still remembered Mu Chen and Mo Ling standing aside, watching her while she had been helplessly chased by the Flame Panthers. They had not wanted to help her. Thus, from her perspective, they were as close as possible to being assessed as being bad individuals. If it wasn’t for the fact that she was so hungry, she would have ignored them.

Mu Chen frowned and lifted the roast meat as if he wanted to throw it away. At that moment, the little girl suddenly became anxious. Her eyes instantly turned watery as if she wanted to cry in protest against the unpardonable crime Mu Chen was committing by denying her something to eat.

But Mu Chen remained unmoved. He only smiled at her slightly.

“I’m Sun’Er.” The little girl finally couldn’t hold out any longer, and her nose twitched as she replied in dismay.

“How old are you?”

“14 years old.” With the roasted meat being held hostage, the little girl could only answer the questions honestly.

A hint of surprise filled Mu Chen’s eyes. 14 years old? She has been able to obtain the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s qualification at such an age? Isn’t this too amazing? Moreover, when Mu Chen looked at the little girl’s snow-like forehead, a dark-red symbol was there. It was a Rank 3 Symbol.

That is to say this little girl didn’t just obtain an ordinary entry. Rather, she obtained a seeded entry exactly like him.

“You obtained a seeded entry for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy even though you’re only 14? Could it be that your family is related with someone high up in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Your strength is similar to mine. You’re only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase, so how could you obtain a seeded entry?” Mo Ling could not help but ask. He was disturbed. This was because he felt ashamed when he compared himself to the little girl.

“Nonsense!” The little girl was instantly unhappy when she heard these words. She immediately replied: “You’re not my opponent.”

“Then why would someone who obtained a seeded entry be hunted by Flame Panthers?” Mo Ling asked suspiciously.

“That’s because I’m hungry.” This reason instantly made the little girl’s face flush. She immediately grabbed onto her long pigtails and said embarrassedly: “Furthermore, I’m a Spiritual Array Master. They came too fast and scared me. Once I was afraid, I could not arrange a Spiritual Array.”

“A Spiritual Array Master?”

Mu Chen and Mo Ling were surprised. The latter stared doubtfully at the little girl named Sun’Er as though he did not believe her.

“I didn’t lie to you!” Sun’Er noticed the suspicion on Mu Chen and Mo Ling’s faces and was suddenly impatient. She extended her petite hands and her slender fingers twinkled. As the air fluctuated, a blue Spiritual Array formed in front of her. Then, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted from the array.

“This…”

Mo Ling was stunned. He felt an immense pressure coming from the Spiritual Array. From the Spiritual Energy fluctuation, he could tell that it was definitely enough to defeat someone at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Moreover, this Spiritual Array was formed easily by the little girl.

“A Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master.” Mu Chen’s eyes focused at this moment. The power of this Spiritual Array was in no way inferior to his “Devouring Tigerblaze Spiritual Array”. It was already considered to be outstanding among the Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays. Moreover, Sun’Er was able to arrange it this easily. It meant that she had already surpassed a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. Furthermore, Mu Chen perceived a familiar feeling as she arranged the Spiritual Array. It was the…

Heart Array State.

At this moment, shock filled Mu Chen’s heart. The little girl in front of him was actually a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. In

addition, she was like him and possessed the Heart Array State.

This meant that she also possessed an extraordinary talent in Spiritual Array Cultivation.

Moreover, Mu Chen could feel that Sun'Er had received relatively complete Spiritual Array Cultivation Training. It was many times better than his own half-baked training. At the very least, even though he was a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, there were only a few Spiritual Arrays he could use.

At that instant, Mu Chen finally understood why she was able to obtain a seeded entry and had been recruited by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at such a young age.

Thinking about this, Mu Chen sighed. There were too many concealed talents within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Furthermore, this was only an examination for newcomers and there were already so many powerful individuals.

"Here." Mu Chen smiled as he handed the roasted meat in his hand to the little girl, who was already salivating.

"Thank you, brother."

Sun'Er's dark eyes instantly brightened up. However, the little girl still thanked him politely before accepting it. Then, she stopped caring about her image as she gobbled it up.

Mu Chen could not help but smile as he stared at the innocent little girl, with her long twintails and filled with vitality.

The little girl's body was quite petite, yet her appetite was unexpectedly large. She quickly ate all the meat and blinked as she said to Mu Chen with an embarrassed expression: "I'm still hungry."

Mu Chen was speechless. He asked with a wry smile: "How long since you last ate?"

"Two days." The little girl was particularly distressed as she

mentioned it. She said: “I originally brought a lot of food. However, I met a little Spiritual Beast two days ago and fed a lot of food to it. Since I don’t know how to cook, I did not have a chance to eat until now.”

Mu Chen and Mo Ling exchanged gazes with each other. Both of them wanted to laugh. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s examination was an extremely serious place. How could such an unusual creature appear here?

Mu Chen shook his head, picked up some wood and stacked it up.

“Brother, you’re really kind. What’s your name?” Seeing Mu Chen preparing food for her again, Sun’Er’s opinion of him was increasing significantly. Thus, she asked with a clear and innocent voice.

“I’m Mu Chen and he’s Mo Ling. We came from the same Spiritual Academy.” Mu Chen smiled and asked: “Based on what you’ve said earlier, your sister is also in this Northern Heavens World?”

“Yes.” Sun’Er hurriedly nodded. She rubbed her stomach and said: “However, we were separated. Otherwise, I wouldn’t have been hungry. Moreover, if my sister was here with me, I wouldn’t have been bullied by these hateful beasts.”

As she talked about her sister, the little girl seemed to be filled with pride. Her twintails would bounce up and down.

“Is your sister powerful?” Mo Ling asked due to his curiosity.

“My sister is someone who participated in the Spiritual Road.” Sun’Er replied proudly.

Mo Ling was surprised. Participated in the Spiritual Road? Then she was definitely not someone simple.

“Brother Mu, maybe you know her.” Mo Ling smiled as he asked Mu Chen.

“That’s not necessarily the case. The Spiritual Road is quite large. Moreover, I came out a year earlier than the rest of them. How could I know everyone?” Mu Chen shook his head and replied.

“Brother Mu Chen, you also participated in the Spiritual Road? Aren’t you quite powerful? I also received the Spiritual Road’s qualification, but my mother didn’t let me go because I was too young.” Sun’Er said regretfully.

“You also obtained the qualifications?” Mo Ling was speechless. He stared at Sun’Er as if she was a monster. Just what sort of background did this little girl have? Within their Northern Spiritual Realm, Mu Chen was the only one that had obtained the qualification to enter the Spiritual Road.

Mu Chen was not surprised. It seemed that Sun’Er was quite talented in Spiritual Arrays. If they had to discuss her combat ability, she could probably fight against a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse. However, she definitely lacked experience and was quite immature.

“It’s good that you did not go. Otherwise, you might not have been here right now.” Mu Chen smiled. He knew how ruthless the Spiritual Road was. It was truly an outstanding place to hone others. To an innocent girl like Sun’Er, it was not a good place to go. If she had participated, she might have lost that innocent and pure personality. But whether or not it was a loss for her was difficult for one to tell.

“Here.”

Mu Chen handed the roasted meat in his hand to Sun’Er. Since the girl was quite innocent, he was quite fond of her.

Sun’Er excitedly accepted the roasted meat. Then, she immediately buried herself in the meat.

The little girl had a truly big appetite, which had only been satisfied after Mu Chen had roasted an entire Flame Panther for

her. This scene made Mu Chen and Mo Ling glance at her tiny body. They wondered where all that food had disappeared to within her body...

"Brother Mu Chen..."

After she was satisfied, Sun'Er's black eyes suddenly stared at Mu Chen and she asked hesitantly: "Can I ask you a favor?"

"Eh?" Mu Chen stared at her.

"Can you take me to my sister? She's probably in this region, I have a Spirit Board so I can find her..." Sun'Er touched the red symbol flashing on her forehead and whispered: "Other people have been trying to steal this from me...So I could only hide whenever I met anyone over the past two days...If I get lost while looking for my sister, I will probably starve again..."

Mu Chen gave her a soft smile. Sun'Er possessed a Rank 3 Symbol. It was indeed quite attractive to others. Coupled with her age and pure personality, she would probably be tricked and have her symbol stolen shortly after separating from them.

"Brother Mu Chen, you're a good person. Please help me. I will definitely repay you once I find my sister." Sun'Er pleaded. Mu Chen was the first person that didn't try to steal her symbol and had even given her food.

As he stared at the little girl's pleading expression, Mu Chen smiled. Most of the people within the Northern Heavens World would have the same goal as them. Therefore, their routes would be the same. He believed it wouldn't cause too much trouble for them to help her out, so he nodded his head at Sun'Er.

It would definitely be interesting to have such an unusual creature following them.

Chapter 117 – Three-Man Journey

With Sun'Er joining them on the road, it brought a lot more joy to them. Both Mu Chen and Mo Ling had a favorable impression of the cute and innocent, little girl. Although this little girl was sometimes careless, her antics would often bring delight.

Because of Mu Chen and Mo Ling's protection, Sun'Er was finally able to display her abilities as a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master during the trip. Even Mu Chen was sometimes surprised when he saw the powerful Spiritual Arrays that were formed so skillfully. The explosive energy from the arrays could directly kill a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Spiritual Beast.

Although that the little girl was quite amazing, she lacked combat experience. Upon being disturbed, the speed of arranging Spiritual Arrays would slow down significantly and become quite unstable.

If it was a life and death battle, it was unlikely that her opponent would give her the chance to perfectly form the array. In conclusion, Sun'Er's potential was quite high, but she still needed to hone herself before she could fully use that potential.

But no matter what, a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master was still a considerable threat. If Sun'Er was given the room to go all out, she could even fight against a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse. Of course, there was still the issue of of her needing time to prepare...

During their three-man journey, they attracted a lot of attention. After all, among the three of them, Mu Chen possessed a Rank 4 Symbol, Sun'Er possessed a Rank 3 Symbol and even Mo Ling had a Rank 2 Symbol. To many individuals, this kind of target was quite tempting. Thus, there were many sneak attacks along the road. However, every single one of them was resolved by Mu Chen.

With Mu Chen's current strength, unless it was a Spirit Stage powerhouse, they would not be able to produce any threat to him.

Therefore, the many trouble-makers had been unable to disrupt their pace.

Roar!

In the forested area, the roars of beasts sounded out. Mu Chen stood on top of a tree branch and saw what was ahead. At that location, there were three pitch black rhinoceros. These three Steel Rhinos had the strength comparable to a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Their blood-red eyes were locked onto Mo Ling, who was directly above them. Not too far behind Mo Ling, Sun'Er looked around hesitantly.

"Sun'Er. I'll leave these three fellows to the two of you. If you can't resolve this situation, we will have to temporarily cancel tonight's dinner." Mu Chen stared at Sun'Er and smiled.

Sun'Er's strength was decent. If she could mature, she would then be able to perform decently. Thus, Mu Chen was trying to help her out as much as possible. Although Mu Chen had a favorable impression to her, due to her lovely and innocent appearance, her personality was not suitable for this place. Therefore, Sun'Er had to develop her own strength. This was something that would benefit her.

"Please be considerate: it isn't only for you, it is also for your Brother Mo Ling's dinner. You must perform steadily, otherwise, both of you will starve together."

As she heard Mu Chen use this terrible threat on her, Sun'Er's nose twitched. Although it was a bit frustrating, the little girl felt guilty because her own performance would affect Mo Ling as well. Brother Mu Chen is the worst; he is even more vicious than these Spiritual beasts. Although his smiling appearance looks very handsome...

This time, she had to work hard.

After making up her mind, Sun'Er clenched her fists softly. Light

swiftly emerged and condensed into numerous Spiritual Seals. She closed her eyes and did not look at the vicious Spiritual Beasts. Then, her hands changed between seals, and a Spiritual Array Diagram was quickly arranged.

In front of her, Mo Ling was forced into an awkward position by the three Steel Rhinos. He was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase, so he wasn't able to defeat even one of the Steel Rhinos. If it wasn't for the fact that these Spiritual Beasts weren't intelligent, he would have probably been stomped to death already. But even so, he was still in danger and could only barely hold on.

"Brother Mo Ling, move aside!"

Just when Mo Ling couldn't endure anymore, an angelic voice came from the rear. Mo Ling instantly rolled away and slammed his hands onto the ground. Then, his body quickly flew back.

At this moment, Sun'Er had already opened her eyes. A blue light array was formed in front of her and a violent fluctuation spread out.

By the time the Spiritual Array had been formed by Sun'Er, her petite face had also turned solemn. She waved her hands and the blue light array released a rich blue light.

"Wind Spirits Array!"

Boom!

The blue light gushed out and turned into blades of wind within the light array. The wind blades tore through the air and descended with overwhelming power. The ground was heavily damaged as a result.

Dong!

These wind blades directly enshrouded the three Steel Rhinos. As the wind blades surged over, they instantly cut the three Steel Rhinos and wounded them all over their bodies. In the end, they

roared and struggled as they fell to the ground. Fresh blood flowed out from their wounds.

Mu Chen nodded slightly as he watched from the side. The Spiritual Array that Sun'Er displayed should be considered a top existence among the Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays. It had an extraordinary power. Even the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Steel Rhinos weren't able to endure it.

"Amazing!"

Mo Ling looked at the three Steel Rhinos that had been quickly killed by Sun'Er and could not help but direct a thumbs up to Sun'Er. Surprise filled his eyes. A Spiritual Array Master was indeed powerful.

Mu Chen smiled and walked next to Sun'Er. He rubbed her head and said, "Well done."

After receiving these praises, Sun'Er's eyes revealed a hint of delight. It was truly easy to make this little girl happy.

"Take out your Spirit Board. You should check how far away we are from your sister."

Hearing this, Sun'Er's hands instantly flashed. A light board the size of two palms emerged on top of her hands. On the board, there was a light barrier, and a few lights could be seen within the barrier.

This was a position supporting Spiritual Artifact. Although it required being set up in advance, it would be quite convenient for them to find the other within a certain range.

However, Mu Chen would rarely see Spiritual Artifacts within the Northern Spiritual Realm. This is because Spiritual Artifacts could only be made by Spiritual Blacksmiths, and the Spiritual Blacksmiths in Northern Spiritual Realm were even rarer than Spiritual Array Masters. Even Mu Feng didn't possess any decent Spiritual Artifacts. Overall, this could only be the case as the

Northern Spiritual Realm was too small...

Sun'Er stared at the Spirit Board for a while and pointed to the north with a finger. "We're close. If we continue to head in this direction, we will be able to find my sister within half a day," she said

Mu Chen nodded slightly.

"Brother Mu Chen." Sun'Er placed away the Spirit Board and stared at Mu Chen. Her twintails danced as she asked: "Are you going to leave once you send me back to my sister?"

Sun'Er was reluctant to part with him. After their interactions with each other during the past two days, the little girl felt Mu Chen's kindness and had became quite close to him; this was all despite him being uncompromising in order to force her to train.

"Both of us would have to head to the whatever Northern Heavens Hall at some point. We could go together along with my sister..." Sun'Er said with expectations.

Hearing this, Mu Chen smiled. He tugged the little girl's twintails that were filled with vigor and replied: "We'll see when that happens. Come, let's prepare dinner first."

Sun'Er's eyes, which looked depressed due to Mu Chen's vague reply, instantly lit up when she heard the end of the sentence. She hurriedly followed him in excitement.

As Mu Chen and the two others departed, a few gazes hidden within the darkness of the forest flashed and faded away.

On the next day, Mu Chen and the others were able to set off again. Based on the trajectory of Sun'Er's Spirit Board, her sister must have been heading over to this direction swiftly.

The three figures pushed off gently from a tree branch and rushed out from within the forest. They flew off, accompanied by the sounds of winds breaking.

However, Mu Chen stopped all of a sudden. He extended both arms and stopped both Mo Ling and Sun'Er behind him.

"What is it?" Mo Ling asked in confusion.

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed. His eyes stared calmly at the forest in front of them as he said: "Come out. Don't you feel uncomfortable hiding in such a cramp space?"

After Mu Chen's voice rang out, a commotion began in the forest in front of them. In an instant, Mo Ling was surprised to see numerous figures slowly emerging from the forest. There were at least thirty people hiding there.

And in the forefront of the group, he noticed three familiar figures. The one that was leading the group was Ge Qing, who had attempted to rob them previously but instead had suffered a loss.

Right now, Ge Qing had a red symbol flashing on his forehead. In a few short days, he had actually increased his symbol to Rank 3. It seemed that he had robbed numerous individuals.

"Ohoho, what a coincidence. We actually meet again." Ge Qing smiled as he stared at Mu Chen. His eyes were filled with ill intent.

Mu Chen glanced at him and noticed that there were actually 8 individuals, who had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, within the group. As for the rest, their auras were not weak either. It seemed that Ge Qing had come prepared. Moreover, these people had a red ribbon wrapped around their arms. It looked like they belonged to the same team.

Currently within this Northern Heavens World, there were already numerous small and large forces. It was evident that Ge Qing had joined one.

"It seemed that the punishment I've handed out to you before wasn't enough." Mu Chen said slowly. A hint of coldness flashed through his eyes. He did not like this sort of incessant trouble.

"Hmph. You still dare act arrogant now? Aren't you quite capable

of fighting? Then, why don't you try fighting against all 30 of us?!" Ge Qing shouted as he gnashed his teeth. Although he knew that Mu Chen was powerful, he didn't believe that they would fail to get rid of Mu Chen with thirty men. After all, the latter was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase and had not broken through to the Spirit Stage.

"Mo Ling, take Sun'Er and leave."

Mu Chen's black eyes slowly turned cold. A black light flashed out from his palms.

"Brother Mu Chen."

Just when Mu Chen was about to attack, Sun'Er suddenly pulled on his arm. Then, she quietly held out the Spirit Board on her palm. A hint of delight had filled her dark-black eyes.

"My sister is coming."

Mu Chen was stunned. He glanced at the Spirit Board and noticed a light approaching them at an extremely fast speed.

Boom!

The light quickly approached this area and fluctuating Spiritual Energy instantly burst outwards. A powerful Spiritual Energy pressure then emitted throughout the area.

Mu Chen felt the Spiritual Energy pressure and frowned, "Spirit Stage?"

Mu Chen looked towards the distance. At that location, a figure made of light was charging over at a lightning speed.

Chapter 118 – Ye Qingling

A dense Spiritual Energy pressure engulfed the forest at an amazing speed. Ge Qing and the others, who had been originally planning to attack Mu Chen, suddenly changed their expressions. They hurriedly turned around and looked to their rear. Coming from that direction, a figure wrapped with Spiritual Energy was rushing over quickly.

Swish!

The figure was extremely fast, and, in a couple of seconds, she appeared in the sky above the forest. Then, her body descended onto a large tree as she revealed her slender figure.

At this moment, everybody's gazes were gathered at the location of that girl. She was a beautiful girl dressed in an apricot-colored dress. Her figure was quite tall, and she had a tender face. Moreover, her neck, which was slender and white as snow, gave off an exquisite allure all the way down to her collarbone. Beneath the collarbone was a curvy figure that extended down along with her clothes.

A girl like this could only be considered as outstanding. However, she was currently wearing a cold expression and exuding a sharp, dangerous atmosphere, which was so strong that it was able to stop others from approaching her.

"Sister!"

When Sun'Er noticed the girl appear, her petite face revealed a hint of delight, and she hurriedly waved her hands.

The beautiful girl dressed in the apricot-colored dress looked at Sun'Er, and her cold expression quickly faded away. Her eyes immediately softened.

"Is she Sun'Er's sister? How pretty." Mo Ling whispered while he looked at the beautiful girl in surprise.

Mu Chen smiled. The girl in front of him was unfamiliar to him. It was evident that he had not met her in the Spiritual Road. However, the latter was certainly powerful. The aura she emitted was probably at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase level. With strength like this, she could not be considered weak in the Northern Heavens World.

“The final step in the Spiritual Road is truly impressive…”

Mu Chen sighed within his heart. In the Spiritual Road’s trial, if the earlier steps honed the mind, then the final step was the reward to the trial. That reward would be power distribution based on the honing of the mind. Thus, as long as one passed the final step, it would count as passing the Spiritual Road.

And since Mu Chen was kicked out halfway through the Spiritual Road, he had only been able to mentally hone himself. But he lacked the power of the final step.

Based on Mu Chen’s calculations, if he had successfully obtained the Spiritual Energy Empowerment during the final step, he was confident that he would have had the qualifications to enter the Three Heavens Stage.

Although he felt a bit of regret, Mu Chen wasn’t someone that was indecisive and wishy-washy. Even without the enormous leap of power, he believed that he would be able to catch up slowly and steadily.

On the tree, the girl dressed in the apricot-dress stared intensely at Mu Chen and Mo Ling, who were beside Sun’Er. She understood that her little sister was quite innocent. If someone wanted to trick her and sell her off, she would probably be happily counting the money for the transaction.

Even against the intense gaze, Mu Chen did not back down at all. His black eyes were calm as a lake. He not only remained unaffected by her strength but also by her appearance.

After a while, the girl slowly retracted her gaze and turned to look at Ge Qing. She glanced at the red ribbon. Then, her beautiful eyes twitched as she asked: Are you from the Ge Clan?”

Ge Qing nodded hesitantly. He recognized the girl in front of him, who was clearly at the Spirit Stage. She was the leader of the Ye Clan, Ye Qingling. In this region, she was quite well-known.

“Scram.” The girl said faintly.

Ge Qing’s face changed slightly. He gritted his teeth and said unwillingly: “If you want to take the little girl away, we will not stop you. However, we have a grudge with that boy over there, so I hope that you will give some face to my big brother, Ge Hai, and not intervene with us.”

Ye Qingling looked at Ge Qing for a moment. Ge Hai was the leader of the Ge Clan. His strength had also reached the Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

However, Ye Qingling still shook her head and replied, “Since they are Sun’Er’s friends, I cannot sit here idly.”

Hearing that Ye Qingling insisted on intervening with the situation, Ge Qing’s face instantly turned ugly. It was evident that he had not expected Ye Qingling to not give any respect to his brother.

Swish!

Just as Ge Qing’s expression changed, sounds of winds breaking suddenly rang out from behind. Then, numerous figures charged over and appeared at the surrounding space. They completely surrounded all of them.

“It’s the people from the Ye Clan…” Ge Qing and the others were slightly afraid when they noticed the numerous figures.

“Ge Qing, Sister Ye is speaking to you respectfully. You better know what’s good for you. Otherwise, we will directly snatch away your symbols and see if your Ge Clan is able to respond in turn!” A

boy shouted out in a cold voice in front of the dozens of figures.

The boy had a lanky body and stared at Ge Qing with a smile. However, once his gaze swept over to the figure in the apricot-colored dress, a hint of passion and love emerged within the depths of his eyes.

“Wang Sheng, do you think that our Ge Clan is afraid of you?” Ge Qing grunted as he stared at the boy. The latter was considered to be the number 2 figure within the Ye Clan. His strength was only slightly weaker than Ye Qingling. It was said that he was half a step from entering the Spirit Stage and was considerably powerful.

“Then why don’t we test it out?!” Wang Sheng curled his lips and replied.

“You!”

Ge Qing gnashed his teeth. How could they dare to attack when Ye Qingling was here? A single Spirit Stage powerhouse was enough to deal with all of them. After all, a Spiritual Rotation Stage and a Spirit Stage was far too different.

Ge Qing’s expression changed for a while. Then, he finally turned and looked at Mu Chen: “Consider yourself lucky this time. Don’t ever let me find an opportunity to deal with you. Otherwise, I will not let you go this easily.”

After he said this, he turned and spoke to Ye Qingling and Wang Sheng: “Since you won’t give the Ge Clan any face, I will have a good talk with my brother about it. Don’t think that we are afraid of you!”

“Let’s go!”

Ge Qing grunted and waves his hands. Then, he led the thirty men back into the forest behind disappearing from this location.

With the departure of Ge Qing and the others, the atmosphere in the area calmed down. Wang Sheng also let out a sigh of relief. The Ge Clan had numbers similar to them. Moreover, Ge Hai was also

at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. If they were to fight, they wouldn't have much of an advantage.

Ye Qingling only moved from the branch after she noticed that Ge Qing and others were leaving. She appeared on the tree where Mu Chen and the others were standing on. Then, her tender face revealed a touching smile as she pulled Sun'Er's hands and asked gently: "Little rascal, did anything happen to you during our separation?"

Sun'Er pouted with a hurt expression: "I starved for a few days. It was lucky that I met Brother Mu Chen. Otherwise, I would have starved to death."

"Glutton." Ye Qingling smiled. Her slender fingers could not help but poke Sun'Er's nose. Then, she lifted her head to the boy in front of her. The boy had a smile on his face as he stared quietly at them. Throughout the entire exchange, nothing had broken the calmness within his eyes..

"You're Mu Chen, right? I'm Sun'Er's sister, Ye Qingling. Thank you for taking care of her during the past few days." Ye Qingling directed a smile at Mu Chen and extended her exquisite hand over.

Mu Chen also extended his hand and held onto her hand. As their hands touched, Mu Chen could feel a delicate chill, which was as comfortable as holding a beautiful jade stone. However, he did not long for this feeling and gently retracted his hand: "I only took a liking to this girl. That's why I brought her along the way."

Behind Ye Qingling, Wang Sheng and the others arrived and smiled friendly at Mu Chen.

"Sister. Brother Mu Chen is amazing. He is also like us and obtained a seeded entry. Moreover, he's also a Spiritual Array Master." Sun'Er pulled Ye Qingling's hands and grinned.

"Oh?"

A hint of surprise filled Ye Qingling and Wang Sheng's eyes.

Their gaze swept across Mu Chen's body. A person, who was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, was commonly seen within the Northern Heavens World. However, he was truly capable since he obtained a seeded entry. As for being Spiritual Array Master like Sun'Er mentioned, it was neglected since they thought Mu Chen only knew how to use Spiritual Arrays and wasn't extremely skilled in it.

Mu Chen smiled helplessly. This little girl is truly innocent since she just announced his secret out loud. He cupped his hands towards Ye Qingling and said: "Since Sun'Er has found you, I have no business here anymore. Thank you for rescuing me earlier. I'll have to say goodbye together with my friend."

Although Ye Qingling's strength wasn't weak and she had built a considerable force, Mu Chen did not plan on being welcomed by them. Thus, he wasn't thinking of deepening their friendship.

"Brother Mu Chen, NO!" But just when he muttered these words, Sun'Er hurriedly pulled his hand. She pleaded: "Since we're all going to the Northern Heavens Hall, let's go together."

She had already developed some feelings of camaraderie with Mu Chen and Mo Ling after the past few days. Therefore, she didn't want Mu Chen to leave.

"Brother Mu, since Sun'Er likes you, why don't you follow us temporarily? You don't have many people with you, so you must not have gathered a lot of information about the Northern Heavens World. We can inform you about it." Ye Qingling smiled as she sent out an invitation. She had thought about if for a while. Mu Chen had helped Sun'Er out, so it was as if he had done them a favor. And from the looks of things, he seemed to have offended Ge Qing. If it was just Ge Qing, it would be simple to deal with. However, he had a big brother, who stepped into the Spirit Stage, behind him. Ge Hai had also participated in the Spiritual Road, so she knew that he was not easy to deal with. Mu Chen and Mo Ling would probably suffer if they crossed paths with him.

Mu Chen glanced at Ye Qingling. He understood what the latter was thinking just from her twinkling eyes and smiled. He had never care about Ge Qing. As for his brother, who cares if he had entered the Spirit Stage? Would he, Mu Chen, really be afraid of him?

Even a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse had been killed by him. Just how much pressure could a mere Spirit Stage give him?

But if Mu Chen refused Ye Qingling's invitation as well, he could be perceived as being considerably uncompromising. Moreover, the final sentence Ye Qingling had said had grabbed his interest.

He was quite unfamiliar with the Northern Heavens World and Ye Qingling had quite the amount of men. Thus, she probably understood it better than him. He could take advantage of this and obtain a lot more information.

"Then I'll have to trouble you for the next few days." Mu Chen smiled and no longer refused. Then, he brought Mo Ling as he descended down from the tree. From the side, a few Ye Clan youths welcomed them enthusiastically.

"Sister Ye, wouldn't we make Ge Hai unhappy by letting them stay with us?" Wang Sheng whispered.

"Let's not mention about the fact whether Ge Hai would attack us because of Ge Qing. Even if it was true, I'm not afraid of Ge Hai." Ye Qingling smiled gently.

"You shouldn't underestimate Brother Mu Chen. He is quite powerful. It seemed that he also entered the Spiritual Road..." Sun'Er touched her face as if she recalled the words that Mo Ling had mentioned before.

"What?"

Hearing this, Wang Shen was completely speechless. Even Ye Qingling was stunned. Mu Chen had also participated in the Spiritual Road?

“Shouldn’t a person, who participated in the Spiritual Road, be at the Spirit Stage at the very least? He seemed to be weaker than me.” Wang Sheng was filled with doubt.

Ye Qingling frowned lightly. She seemed to have vaguely heard of Mu Chen’s name before, but she could not recall where...

“You probably misheard them.”

Ye Qingling smiled slightly. If he had participated in the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen’s strength was indeed quite low. Moreover, the latter didn’t have the smell of someone who came out of the Spiritual Road. Thinking about this, she came to the conclusion that Sun’Er had probably misheard them.

“Let’s go. Little rascal, your sister will prepare a delicious feast for you.”

Ye Qingling pulled Sun’Er as she walked forward. Sun’Er, who had originally planned on refuting the matter regarding Mu Chen, instantly had her eyes light up when she heard these words. Then, she hurriedly followed.

Chapter 119 – Ge Hai

Many tents were spread throughout an open space covered with gravel that was deep inside the forest. These tents formed a camp that was covered by the shade of the ancient forest.

Inside the camp, there were numerous figures, and the atmosphere was particularly lively. Moreover, there were people guarding the surroundings of the camp vigilantly and constantly monitoring the situation near the camp.

“Sister Ye has returned!”

Suddenly, a shout resounded throughout the air. A commotion instantly burst out, and numerous people stood up as they stared eagerly towards the outskirts of the camp. In the distance, dozens of figures were rapidly approaching, and, after just a few moments, they landed within the camp.

“Sister Ye!”

As they stared at the leading figure, the beautiful girl dressed in an apricot-colored dress, countless respectful cries could be heard ringing within the boundaries of the encampment.

Ye Qingling returned with a smile towards the crowd. She then turned around and said to Mu Chen, who was beside her: “This is the temporary rest stop of the Ye Clan. Those here are nice individuals.”

Mu Chen nodded. He glanced around and noticed many people looking at him with kindheartedness and curiousity.

“All of them seem to respect you.” Mu Chen was slightly surprised. Although Ye Qingling had the strength of a Spirit Stage, and it wasn’t difficult for her to gain their admiration, he could tell that everybody here respected her in the depths of their hearts.

“Ohoho, Sister Ye has an excellent personality. If it wasn’t for her, many of us would have been robbed by other forces. Ever

since she formed the Ye Clan, we have gradually improved ourselves…" Wang Sheng laughed from beside him.

"The creators of other forces probably rob other student's symbols, but Sister Ye would never do such a thing. She led us to hunt Spiritual Beasts and search for worldly treasures. Moreover, she distributed the majority of the items to us."

A hint of surprise flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. No wonder these people respected Ye Qingling so much.

"I'm at the Spirit Stage, so it is easy for me to raise my symbol to Rank 4. However, it isn't the same for others. If they do not work together, they will be robbed of what they were able to accumulate and, thus, be eliminated from the competition." Ye Qingling replied gently.

"You really don't have much ambition. Doing this you will slow down the speed you can increase your symbol's overall rank." Mu Chen said.

"If the symbol rank increases, it only means that I will initially be given a much better position and have access to more resources within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. I can slowly obtain these later on. But if you were to be eliminated, there would be absolutely no hope for you. " Ye Qingling uttered.

Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders. Since Ye Qingling didn't care about it at all, it was evident that he should not say any more on the topic. Though for a girl to go to such an extent truly impressed him.

Ye Qingling waved her hand and let everyone scatter away. Then, she pulled Sun'Er to a bonfire, took out a few ingredients and began to personally prepare food for Sun'Er.

"You should follow us for the next few days. We are also heading towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At the same time, we will search for traces of Spiritual Beasts and worldly

treasures. Perhaps there might be some you are interested in...” While she was preparing to roast food for Sun’Er, Ye Qingling smiled and spoke to Mu Chen.

“Also, Ge Qing won’t be able to do anything to you while you’re here. You should stay here for a few days, so that they will give up on you and flee. Then, you can move freely again, how’s about that?”

Mu Chen smiled and did not reply. It seemed that she believed that he had come here for protection...

Just when Mu Chen arrived at the camp grounds of the Ye Clan, Ge Qing was in a gloomy state as he brought the others back to a camp that was located on a cliff that was slightly farther away..

“Ohoho, Ge Qing, you’re back? But what's this? It looks as though you’ve been bullied by others?” In the center of the camp, a burly man laughed as he looked at Ge Qing’s face.

“In this region, there are people that dare to disrespect the Ge Clan?”

Ge Qing sat down furiously. He grit his teeth and said: “It’s those people from the Ye Clan. We were truly unlucky to meet Ye Qingling.”

“Oh? You even met Ye Qingling? Hehe, to be honest, Ye Qingling is quite beautiful and powerful. If you are able to conquer her, you will definitely have a pleasurable life.” Someone said in surprise.

“Pfft, by you? Ye Qingling is at the Spirit Stage. Who else but the boss could be her opponent here?” A person laughed at the other teasingly.

“Big Brother.” Ge Qing ignored them and glanced at the man in the center of the crowd who was wielding a dark-red long sword. The boy had his head down and had exceptionally long hair. He was much older than the people beside him and seemed particularly mature. Moreover, a cold killing intent emitted from

him, which made others keep away from him.

“The Ye Clan has gone too far. They didn’t even care to give us face, even when your name was mentioned.”

Hearing this, the man with the dark red long sword smiled faintly. He lifted his head and a hideous scar was revealed on his face. This scar extended out from the corner of his left eye all the way down to his neck. It was as if his face had been divided into two.

This scar was like a hideous centipede and made the man appear more vicious and cold.

“Why did you provoke the Ye Clan? Ye Qingling is quite capable, and she was one of the people who participated in the Spiritual Road. It’d be best if we do not offend them.” Ge Hai replied.

Seeing that Ge Hai wasn’t planning to help him out, Ge Qing could only whisper: “I didn’t plan on doing anything to the Ye Clan. It’s just that Mu Chen has somehow gotten the help of the Ye Clan, even though he wasn’t a part of them…”

Pu!

The dark red blade suddenly slashed across Ge Hai’s palm and blood suddenly flowed out. Everybody instantly became quiet, even Ge Qing stammered and shut his mouth. He stared at Ge Hai, whose hand was injured. At this moment, the latter revealed a violent and vicious aura that he had never seen before.

“Big Brother. Did I say something wrong?” Ge Qing gulped and asked in fear. It was the first time that he had seen such a terrifying presence from Ge Hai.

Ge Hai slowly lifted his head. The hideous scar on his face seemed to creep up at this moment, making him look extremely terrifying. His eyes were bloodshot as he stared at Ge Qing.

“What was the name that you’ve just said?”

Ge Qing's body froze and he replied: "M-Mu Chen."

Ge Hai's body trembled slightly. He seemed to be suppressing something as he asked: "T-Tell me. How does he look?"

Ge Qing was shocked because of Ge Hai's abnormal state. The surrounding people also felt that something was off but did not dare to mutter even a sound. Then, Ge Qing described Mu Chen's appearance to Ge Hai.

When Ge Qing's voice faded away, the entire camp was completely silent. The only sound that could be heard was Ge Hai's heavy breathing. In his eyes, an increasingly prominent shade of crimson started to appear. His expression had a bit of fear, a bit of craziness and some hatred that was somewhat difficult to contain.

"Right now, is he at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase?" Ge Hai raised his head and his crimson eyes stared at Ge Qing. But before the latter nodded, he muttered to himself: "That's right... He did not experience the final step of the Spiritual Road. Thus, his strength was bound to be lowered. Ohoho, Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase...Ohoho..."

"Big Brother, what's wrong?"

Ge Qing was completely stunned by Ge Hai's strange smile and asked cautiously.

Ge Hai directed a horrifying smile to Ge Qing. His bloody hand touched the hideous scar on his face and said: "Mu Chen is with the Ye Clan?"

"Yes." Ge Qing hurriedly nodded.

Ge Hai stood up. His eyes were sharp like a wolf and he glanced coldly at the crowd before speaking: "Gather everyone. We will immediately head over to the Ye Clan's camp. All of you should be prepared. If the Ye Clan dares to stop us, we will eliminate them!"

Everybody was surprised. Does that mean they are going to attack the Ye Clan? What's wrong with the boss? In the past, they

had always maintained a peaceful relationship with the Ye Clan. Why did his killing intent become so rich?

However, while they had doubts within their mind, they did not dare to object. They immediately hurried away and the entire camp became chaotic.

“Big Brother, d-do you know that Mu Chen?” Ge Qing asked timidly.

“I know him. Of course, I know him…”

Ge Hai’s finger ran across the scar on his face. A hint of fear and hatred finally gushed out from his eyes.

“He was the one that left this scar on my face…”

Beside him, Ge Qing was completely frozen. His mind immediately became numb. He never imagined that Ge Hai, who he had always respected, was injured by that seemingly gentle boy.

Just who was he?

Ye Clan Campgrounds.

The entire camp was lively. With Sun’Er’s arrival, the camp was filled with a bit more joy. Everybody liked this cute and innocent little girl.

Beside the bonfire, Wang Sheng was holding a bowl of wine, which he raised to Mu Chen. Then, he drained it completely and patted his chest in high spirits. “Brother Mu Chen, don’t be afraid. With us here, the Ge Clan won’t dare to do anything.”

“That’s right. You and your companion are Sister Ye’s friends. Naturally, you are also our friends. As long as we’re here, we will not let the Ge Clan touch you.” A few individuals nearby agreed as well.

Before they had gathered to drink, the matter regarding Mu Chen and Ge Qing had been spread around by Wang Sheng and the others. In regards to his current situation, many Ye Clan members

expressed their support to Mu Chen and were extremely enthusiastic about protecting him.

Mu Chen smiled. Perhaps it was because, under the influence of Ye Qingling, the members of the Ye Clan gave off a decent feeling. They were all easy to get along with.

Ye Qingling walked over and scolded them with a laugh. Then, she directed a smile at Mu Chen and said: “There’s no need to be too concerned. They’re always like this. They like to boast when they’re drunk.”

Mu Chen shook his head and replied: “It’s quite alright.”

Ye Qingling’s eyes stared quietly at Mu Chen. She said with a light laugh: “I don’t know why, but I think that you’re not that simple to deal with…”

“A person who’s at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase shouldn’t be that difficult for you to deal with.” Mu Chen replied. A girl’s intuition is truly terrifying sometimes. However, he was not interested in exposing himself.

Ye Qingling’s brushed away the hair in front of her forehead. Although Mu Chen was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, the latter’s aura gave her a feeling that he wasn’t as simple as he looked. However, since Mu Chen was not interested in telling her, she would be considerate and not press him for more information.

Mu Chen stretched himself and stood up. But just when he was about to speak, his expressions changed. His black eyes sharpened slightly as he stared at the outskirts of the camp.

Buzz!

At this moment, the sound of an alarm echoed throughout the camp from the surroundings.

All the Ye Clan members hurriedly got up. They quickly turned their gaze towards the forest outside of the camp. At that location,

a large amount of people had rushed over and surrounded the camp.

Everybody's faces changed slightly as they stared at these individuals. Then, they noticed the red ribbon wrapped around the intruders' arms.

"It's the Ge Clan!"

Chapter 120 – Blood Calamity

In the Ye Clan's campgrounds, everybody immediately stood up. They stared solemnly at the outskirts of the campgrounds. At that location, several hundreds of figures were rushing over. Did the entire Ge Clan leave their nest?

All were shocked by this. The Ye Clan and the Ge Clan had always minded their own business. Why had all of the Ge Clan rush over here?

Could it be that the Ge Clan had truly decided to fight against the Ye Clan because of Ge Qing?

"Sister Ye!"

The Ye Clan's members looked at Ye Qingling. At this moment, the latter also frowned. She could not seem to understand why the Ge Clan would launch a punitive expedition against them. Although she was surprised, she did not show any fear. She only gestured with her hands and said, "Prepare yourself."

Hearing this, Wang Sheng and the others nodded their heads.

Mu Chen stared at the scene in front of him and frowned. This Ge Qing is truly quite annoying.

"Brother Mu." Mo ling approached Mu Chen and was a little nervous.

Mu Chen smiled slightly at him and told him to relax.

"Brother Mu Chen, there's no need to be afraid. I will definitely protect you," Sun'Er said seriously as she suddenly appeared next to Mu Chen and grabbed onto his hands.

Mu Chen smiled and rubbed Sun'Er's head. His black eyes gradually turned cold as he stared out into the distance. Beside him, Mo Ling's heart jumped, for he knew that Mu Chen was truly furious.

Outside of the camp, the large amount of Ge Clan members were surrounding the campgrounds. As soon as it had been formed, the group split open and two figures slowly walked over. The person in the lead was wielding a dark-red longsword and emanated a vicious aura from his body. This aura was enough to make people from both camps shudder.

“It’s Ge Hai. He actually came here personally!”

In the campground, the Ye Clan’s crowd’s expression finally changed when they noticed this figure. It was evident that they had not expected Ge Hai to come here in person.

“Ge Hai, what do you want?” Ye Qingling asked unkindly as she slowly walked forward. Her beautiful eyes revealed a cold chill as she stared viciously at the figure of Ge Hai.

Ge Hai stared at Ye Qingling. However, his cold gaze slowly scanned the campground and he replied with a gloomy tone: “Ye Qingling. This matter is unrelated to you and your Ye Clan. If you want to intervene, I do not mind fighting against you. We shall see who shall lose more men!”

Ye Qingling stared coldly and responded: “Do you have to do this just because of the small affair regarding Ge Qing? Do you think that my Ye Clan is truly afraid of you?”

Ge Hai’s mouth opened up and revealed a mocking smile. He stared at Ye Qingling and asked strangely: “Do you think that I am a person, who would do such a thing?”

Ye Qingling frowned. She immediately asked: “Then why does it have to be this way? Did all of you come over here filled with murderous intent to attend a late night party?”

“It seems that you truly do not know about it…”

Ge Hai stared strangely at Ye Qingling: “A famous figure appeared in your Ye Clan , and yet you didn’t even realize? How on earth did you manage to survive in the Spiritual Road?”

Ye Qingling gripped her hands tightly as if she understood something. Could he be talking about Mu Chen? She tilted her head slightly and stared at the lean boy in the rear.

In the campground, everybody's gazes followed hers and landed on the handsome boy's face, which had a smile plastered on it.

Ge Hai's gaze honed in on this unforgettable figure. His body trembled suddenly, and his crimson eyes were filled with craziness, hatred... and even a bit of fear.

In the Spiritual Road, that figure had once left him an irreplaceable trauma.

"Mu Chen, it's you! It really is you!" Ge Hai's body trembled. His voice trembled as it rang out.

The boy in the rear slowly walked up in front. Under the many puzzled gazes, he glanced at Ge Hai for a moment and frowned as if he was thinking about something. After a while, he finally remembered the somewhat familiar figure.

"It's you...So you were actually still alive. I thought for sure that slash would have killed you directly back then."

The words that came out of Mu Chen's mouth made everybody freeze again. Even Ye Qingling had a hint of surprise that crossed her face.

Ge Hai stared at the figure in front of him. The hatred within his heart made his body shake intensely. In the Spiritual Road, the latter's methods and means had truly made him feel afraid. He originally thought that he would only be fated to stare at this figure from afar and never have a chance to turn the tables. However, the world was truly strange.

He would actually meet the boy who had set off a such a dreadful calamity in the Spiritual Road and had even been kicked out of the Spiritual Road... here... once again...

The most important fact in this whole situation that the person

he feared before was actually weaker than him currently. His strength was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

This contrast in level made Ge Hai smile even more grimly. His hands trembled with so much excitement that he had been forced to take a deep breath to calm himself down. He directed a hideous smile at Mu Chen and said: “I never thought that the heavens would give me such an opportunity. Mu Chen, the fear that you forced on me back then, I will give it you back a hundredfold right now!”

“You will experience the same sense of fear and helplessness that I felt back then!”

Currently, he was a Spirit Stage powerhouse, and Mu Chen was simply a weakling within his eyes. It was a chance for him to break through the trauma that had nested itself deep within his heart. He would never forgive Mu Chen!

Mu Chen smiled. His black eyes remained calm as usual and replied: “Although I have many enemies, I have never considered you as a rival. In the past, you weren’t my rival. Even now, you aren’t one.”

There wasn’t a hint of sarcasm within Mu Chen’s words. He was just explaining the situation seriously.

Ge Hai’s crimson eyes glared at Mu Chen. A deep humiliation filled his heart. Just what would this lowlife consider as a powerful rival? However, he felt even more humiliated because his opponent did not think that he would qualify as such a person.

“I will use this sword to cut a scar on your face...” Ge Hai snapped. He took a step forward and dense Spiritual Energy surged out. A Spirit Stage’s might was unleashed and it caused many of them to feel oppressed.

“Ge Hai! Don’t even dare try to hurt the friend of my Ye Clan’s in front of me!” Ye Qingling shouted out. An aura that was in no way

inferior to Ge Hai spread out as well.

“Haha.”

Seeing this, Ge Hai laughed strangely. He pointed at Mu Chen and had a weird expression as if he had seen something funny. His laughter sounds rang out through the forest: “Haha, Mu Chen. Your actions in the Spiritual Road were enough for you to be assessed as a ‘King Class’. Even the ones that stood at the peak of the Spiritual Road such as Ji Xuan and Yang Hong were afraid of you. Moreover, you even created the legend known as ‘Spiritual Road’s Blood Calamity’ while you were there... But now, you actually need a woman to protect you?!!”

At this moment, everybody instantly became silent. They stared at the boy, who remained completely calm, in front of them. Although they did not participate in the Spiritual Road, they understood how terrifying a person who had been assessed as “King Class” within the Spiritual Road was. It was definitely enough for them to obtain a Five Great Academies’ Core Entry!

“King Class? Ji Xuan? Yang Hong? Spiritual Road’s Blood Calamity?”

As for Ye Qingling, she was shocked because of something else. Her beautiful eyes widened up and an incredulous expression emerged on her face.

As a person, who came out of the Spiritual Road, she clearly understood what that phrase and the names that had be spoken just now represented.

Ji Xuan and Yang Hong were the most dazzling individuals within the Spiritual Road. Even after entering the Five Great Academies, they were existences that were looked up to by countless others. However this boy who had a reassuring smile on his face... The seemingly peaceful boy was actually an existence that these individuals were afraid of?

The Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity...

Ye Qingling gently exhaled. A shocking event that had once shaken the entire Spiritual Road. In the end, it had even caused the Five Great Academies, who would never intervene in the Spiritual Road's trial, to take action. So the Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity was caused by the boy in front of them?

"S-so you were the Blood Calamity Mu Chen within the Spiritual Road?"

Ye Qingling muttered with shock. No wonder she felt that she had heard his name before. So this Mu Chen was the Blood Calamity that countless people feared...as well as admired within the Spiritual Road.

"Therefore, Ye Qingling, you should back off. You aren't qualified to protect him." Ge Hai gritted his teeth and said. Once that name was muttered, even he would tremble. This shows how terrifying the boy in front of him was back then. However, once they returned to the Great Thousand World, the previously terrifying existence had turned into a joke!

This is because even he, Ge Hai, could step on him easily!

Ye Qingling's eyes stared complicatedly at Mu Chen's handsome and calm face. She bit her teeth and said: "I don't care who he is. He helped Sun'Er, so he's my friend. I will never hand him over to you!"

Although the words "Blood Calamity" had shocked her, Ye Qingling understood that Mu Chen wasn't as strong as back then. No matter how powerful Mu Chen was in the Spiritual Road, this place wasn't the Spiritual Road, but the Great Thousand World. Mu Chen was kicked out from the Spiritual Road in the middle and had lost both a year of cultivation and the more important Spiritual Energy Empowerment from the Spiritual Road.

Right now, he was only an ordinary boy with the strength of a

Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Otherwise, Ge Hai would still be trembling with fear in front of him.

Seeing this, Ge Hai's eyes turned cold. His hand gripped the dark-red long sword tightly, and a dense Spiritual Energy rushed out from his body.

Ye Qingling took a step forward and a slender long sword appeared within her hands. Then, she confronted Ge Hai.

"Swish."

Just when Ye Qingling was about to attack, subtle footsteps rang out behind her. The lean figure, who was the focus of attention, grabbed onto her wrist gently.

Ye Qingling turned around and noticed Mu Chen smiling at her while shaking his head.

"Thank you. But if I can't even deal with such unimpressionable fellow, would I dare to come to the Five Great Academies?"

"Ge Hai, right? Although this place isn't the Spiritual Road, to be honest, in the past you were never qualified to be my opponent. Even now, you still aren't."

Mu Chen smiled slightly and took a step forward. His eyes started to emit a hint of coldness.

Chapter 121 – In the Past, Right NowYet Still Strong

Ge Hai's crimson eyes stared wildly at the figure in front of him. The latter's eyes remained calm as usual. The situation before them was like a seemingly silent and serene lake, yet a frightening whirlpool that could envelop people was hidden underneath it.

"You think that we're still in the Spiritual Road?"

Ge Hai glared at Mu Chen and ground his teeth: "You think, in your current state, that you are still qualified to say that to me? Based on what? By the fact that you're at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase?"

Mu Chen smiled: "If you want to wipe away the fear and trauma within your heart, then come and get me. But you should know my personality. Thus, if you plan on doing it, you should be prepared to pay a price. This place clearly isn't as cruel as the environment of Spiritual Road, but if I actually cared about such rules, I wouldn't have done those things back in the Spiritual Road."

Ge Hai's eyes narrowed. From Mu Chen's smile, he could see the terrifying figure from the Spiritual Road again. Fear spread out from the depths of his heart.

"You, at your current state, aren't qualified to say such words to me!"

Ge Hai replied darkly. He took a deep breath and suppressed the fear within his heart. He knew that if he did not defeat Mu Chen, there would be an obstacle in his cultivation due to the existence of the trauma.

The heavens had given him a chance to wipe away this fear, so he must seize this opportunity!

"This time, you will be the one that will pay the price!"

A shout rang out from Ge Hai's throat. In the next instant, his eyes revealed a hint of fierceness and brutality. Then, a powerful Spiritual Energy emitted out unreservedly from his body.

Boom!

He pushed off from the ground and flew over like an arrow. He immediately appeared in front of Mu Chen and his hands clenched on the dark-red long sword. With a swishing sound, a sharp sword beam slashed down furiously at Mu Chen's throat.

Ge hai revealed his experience and his ferocity within that offensive. The imposing manner from the attack was something that far surpassed any ordinary students. A person, who came out of the Spiritual Road, had to be at least this capable.

Mu Chen's eyes flashed as he saw the sword beam. He retreated back slightly and, with the sounds of winds breaking, the sharp sword beam flew past the place where his throat was earlier.

"Right now, I'll let you know the gap between a Spirit Stage and a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!"

Ge Hai yelled. A powerful Spiritual Energy pressure enveloped Mu Chen and an overwhelming sword beam slashed towards his vital areas like a storm.

Swish!

Numerous gouges appeared on the ground due to the sword attacks. Even countless trees were cleaved apart by the sword. Their bare stumps were as smooth as a mirror.

Everybody in the Ye Clan's campground held their breath. They knew how powerful Ge Hai was. A Spirit Stage powerhouse was someone far beyond any of them. This attack was enough to instantly obliterate a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

They did not know whether or not Mu Chen could endure it...

Their gazes were filled with worry as they watched Mu Chen's

figure. The latter remained motionless against the sharp sword that rushed over.

Mu Chen's black eyes reflected the overwhelming sword slash as well as Ge Hai's hideous appearance. In that moment, the Great Pagoda Art began to circulate within his body.

A dark-black Spiritual Energy flowed through his meridians, and the mysterious lights within his body lit up once again. With his strength slowly increasing, it was apparent that he was gradually becoming able to activate the mysterious Spiritual Pulse that his mother had sealed.

Although he was not able to activate its power completely, it was sufficient enough to deal with the opponent in front of him.

The lights flashed and a mysterious tower vaguely appeared within Mu Chen's body. The flowing Spiritual Energy instantly surged out.

Within Mu Chen's eyes, dark lights flashed. Furthermore, a tower of black light emerged within the depths of his eyes. He clapped his hands together, and the black light started to condense on the surface of his body. In the end, a blurry black light tower appeared.

Clang Clang Clang!

Ge Hai's sharp sword landed on the blurry black tower, and a clanging sound resounded. Sparks flew everywhere, yet the black light tower was completely unmoved.

"What the hell is that?!"

Ge Hai stared at the black light tower that shrouded Mu Chen. His expression changed, and he gritted his teeth. He could not believe that with his Spirit Stage strength he would fail to oppress Mu Chen, who was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

"Bloodshed Carnage Sword!"

Ge Hai took a step forward, and the sword's imposing manner changed. A bloody aura appeared on its surface. At the same time, the dark-red long sword turned crimson and slashed down creating a red arc.

Facing Ge Hai's fierce offensive, Mu Chen did not show any signs of retreating. He, too, had his own pride. If he was to retreat in front of an enemy that wasn't worth his attention before, it would be belittle him.

Mu Chen's hands clenched into fists. Under the protection of the black light tower, his body had turned into a fierce weapon. Spiritual Energy and winds surged out from his fists and directly collided against Ge Hai's crimson long sword.

Clang!

The powerful impact emitted out and the ground underneath them collapsed.

"Kill!"

Ge Hai shouted out furiously. As he pushed the Spiritual Energy within his body to the limits, the long sword within his hand let loose a powerful sword slash. However, he discovered that it was impossible to truly suppress Mu Chen.

"Bastard. He's only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase! How is it possible that he could fight me head on!?" Ge Hai shouted out in his heart. As someone who was only Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, Mu Chen had far exceeded Ge Hai's expectations regarding the former's true combat ability.

The people from the Ye Clan were completely shocked by the two figures. This sort of Spiritual Energy collision was not something that a Spiritual Rotation Stage could release.

"Sister, is Brother Mu Chen going to be okay?" Sun'Er stared at the battle worriedly as she pulled Ye Qingling's hands.

Ye Qingling held onto Sun'Er's petite hands and shook her head

slightly. Her beautiful eyes were filled with surprise. Although Mu Chen was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, his true combat ability was equal to a Spirit Stage.

“He is truly powerful.” Ye Qingling let out a praise. The Spiritual Road’s Blood Calamity definitely deserved his reputation. Even though he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road and had his cultivation level slowed, how was it possible that such a monstrous person would have let himself fall behind others?

This sort of person would probably press forward slowly and surely, while at the same time becoming even stronger when they suffer an enormous blow.

“Boss actually can’t obtain the upper-hand! Damn it! How is it possible that he is this powerful?!” A few members of the Ge Clan were secretly shocked. They thought that with Ge Hai’s Spirit Stage strength, he would be able to completely suppress Mu Chen, who was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

Ge Qing’s expression changed completely. Since Mu Chen was able to defeat three Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase by himself, he was naturally stronger than an ordinary Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. However, he never expected that Mu Chen was someone that even Ge Hai would find it difficult to defeat.

Clang Clang!

The two figures collided fiercely against each other. The Spiritual Energy impact sent the gravel on the ground flying and dirt blasted out along with the impact.

And at the source of the impact, Ge Hai’s face was extremely grim. His hands clenched onto the sword handle and revealed a posture that looked as though he could slash down a mountain.. This powerful attack that could cut apart a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase was completely blocked by Mu Chen’s bare fists.

The latter’s fists emitted a black Spiritual Energy fluctuation,

and an overbearing presence started to emerge. It was something that even Ge Hai's long sword failed to cut apart.

"You, who obtained the Spiritual Energy Empowerment, are only this powerful? It seems that the Empowerment wasn't as impressive as I thought."

Mu Chen smiled faintly. With his current strength, he would be able to fight against a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse once he activated the mysterious Spiritual Pulse within his body. Ge Hai, who thought that he could free himself from the trauma, had truly underestimated him.

"I will let you know soon. Back then, I was able to defeat you with ease. Even now, I can do it just as easily!"

Mu Chen's eyes turned cold at this moment. His originally peaceful expression instantly became as dangerous as any blade.

As he looked into Mu Chen's eyes, Ge Hai's heart trembled.

Swish!

Mu Chen took a step forward, and the Spiritual Energy within his body surged out. Then, he clenched his fists and, without hesitation, fired off a punch.

This plain and ordinary fist carried no mysteries as it was shot forth. However, as the fist was about to land, it let out powerful winds and a black light radiated from its center. It was there that three black light seals emerged.

These three black light seals were only a few meters tall, but they let out an extremely domineering fluctuation.

"Boom!"

Mu Chen's face remained calm as he let the punch fly out towards Ge Hai. With a trail of black light and the sounds of winds breaking, the three black light seals roared and bombarded against Ge Hai ruthlessly.

The places that the winds rushed through seemed to have exploded. It was as if the air itself was slightly distorted.

Ge Hai also noticed how powerful Mu Chen's offensive was. His eyes immediately became serious. The long sword within his hand instantly let out a sword beam that was dozens of meters long. Light flashed through Ge Hai's eyes.

"Spirit Destruction Bloodstrike!"

He immediately cried out. The sword beam instantly turned crimson like it was made of fresh blood. In the next instant, the blood red sword beam pierced through the air and collided against the three black light seals.

Boom!

Once the attacks made contact, the three black light seals erupted at the same time. Three overbearing energies stacked against each other and bombarded the crimson sword beam.

Dong!

The crimson sword beam trembled intensely, and then actually shattered on impact.

When the crimson sword beam were broken to pieces, Ge Hai's eyes were filled with terror.

He wasn't able to obtain the upper-hand even with his strongest attack!

The dark-red long sword flew away from Ge Hai's hands. His body shot backwards as if he suffered a heavy blow and landed heavily against a sturdy tree. His throat tasted something sweet and he immediately spat out a mouthful of fresh blood.

"How is this possible? Why did I lose to him again?!"

Ge Hai screamed within his heart. He immediately stood up and prepared to attack again. He wanted to use the dense Spiritual Energy of a Spirit Stage to wear down Mu Chen!

However, just as he stood up, his body instantly froze. This was because he felt an extremely violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation surging in front of him.

A commotion suddenly rang out in the surroundings as well.

Ge Hai slowly lifted his head. He noticed that Mu Chen was staring at him emotionlessly, as his hands were at his side. However, lightning flashed above his head as it formed into a massive lightning Spiritual Array. The violent fluctuations that were emitted from the Spiritual Array made Ge Hai's eyes narrow.

Mu Chen was actually a Spiritual Array Master!

Ge Hai's body stiffened, and a hint of horror emerged within his heart.

"I've said it before, I have too many opponents. But if you want to step on me, you're not qualified to do so."

Mu Chen stared indifferently at Ge Hai whose eyes were completely filled with horror. He flicked his finger and the lightning Spiritual Array issued out a roar. A dazzling lightning emerged from the array and charged out like a furious dragon.

The lightning tore through the air and a blinding light shone. Ge Hai and the other Ge Clan's members' faces immediately paled.

At this moment, Ge Hai finally understood how large the gap between him and Mu Chen was...

After all, there was always someone that would be feared and be looked up to by someone like him...

Chapter 122 – Terms and Conditions

The lightning pierced through the forest like an angry dragon baring its fangs and brandishing its claws. A violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation surged out and rampaged through the air.

Swish!

In a blink of an eye, the lightning had charged over to Ge Hai. At this moment, the latter's eyes were filled with horror. When Mu Chen attacked, he did not show the slightest mercy at all.

He was still as ferocious as before.

At a time like this, Ge Hai could only desperately push the Spiritual Energy within his body to the limits. Spiritual Energy gushed out and protected his body as a sturdy Spiritual Energy Armor.

Boom!

The violent lightning blinded everyone as it landed fiercely on Ge Hai's body. The earth instantly shattered open due to the lightning shock.

Swish.

In this instant, Ge Hai's body flew backwards like a bullet. The trees that were in the way were all smashed apart by his body. He then sprayed out mouthfuls of blood.

After smashing apart dozens of giant trees, Ge Hai's body finally lay on the ground awkwardly. His body was completely covered with blood and was in a helpless position. The fierceness and brutality that he showed earlier had completely vanished.

At this moment, the members from the Ge Clan were all completely silent. Even the people who were acting arrogant earlier had shut their mouths while cold sweat dripped down their bodies. Ge Qing was even trembling as he looked at this scene.

In his eyes, Ge Hai had always been synonymous with the word ‘powerful’. Even after they entered the Northern Heavens World, there were only a few people that could compete with him. However, Ge Hai, who had always been undefeated within his heart, had lost to Mu Chen.

Moreover, the latter’s strength was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

“How could he be this strong…”

Ge Qing’s body trembled slightly. He stared at Mu Chen and fear surged out from his eyes. Only now, he regretted provoking the seemingly gentle, yet demonic boy…

In the Ye Clan’s campground, it was also completely silent. Wang Sheng and the others secretly swallowed. They couldn’t imagine that the boy who was sitting together with them earlier…The boy who felt quite kindhearted and gave off a comfortable feeling, was actually this terrifying.

Ge Hai was a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse. An existence that was as powerful as Ye Qingling. Yet, he was defeated by Mu Chen?

Mu Chen stared indifferently at the helpless figure on the ground. He slowly walked past Ge Qing and headed straight towards Ge Hai. When the members of Ge Clan noticed this, they did not dare to stop Mu Chen’s advance.

Mu Chen stood in front of Ge Hai and clenched his hands. The dark-red long sword nearby was sucked into his arm and the razor sharp blade was directly pointed at Ge Hai’s throat. He said quietly: “I’ve said it before. If you dare to cause trouble for me, you should be prepared to pay a price.”

Ge Hai trembled. His face was pale as he stared at Mu Chen, who was looking at him condescendingly with emotionless eyes. He replied in a quivering voice: “This isn’t the Spiritual Road…If you

recklessly kill others, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will definitely disqualify you!”

“Are you threatening me with this?”

Mu Chen smiled slightly. He extended his hand forward and the razor sharp blade scratched Ge Hai’s throat’s skin. Traces of blood slowly oozed out.

The cold chill that appeared on Ge Hai’s throat made his body freeze. He no longer dared to say another word. This is because he understood that if he angered the boy in front of him, the latter might actually kill him.

He knew clearly how ruthless Mu Chen was.

The surrounding Ge Clan members shivered as they watched this scene. The piercing chill that emitted from Mu Chen’s body had shocked them to the extent that they did not dare to make the slightest movement.

“If you want to live, then hand over something that will save your life.”

Mu Chen then said faintly: “Although it is a bit troubling to murder others here, you will probably be eliminated if I wipe away the symbol on your forehead. Don’t even think about entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

Ge Hai’s face finally changed. He had spent great effort in order to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If he were to be eliminated here, it was truly worse than death.

“I’ll hand over all the Spiritual Aura within my symbol to you.” Ge Hai gritted his teeth and replied. His symbol had already reached Rank 5. It was evident that he had robbed numerous students during this period of time. If he were to hand it over to Mu Chen, his efforts during this period of time would all be in vain. However, compared to having his symbol erased, it was a much better choice.

Mu Chen smiled. The sword that was posted near Ge Hai's neck retreated slightly.

Ge Hai concentrated and the golden symbol on his forehead instantly turned dim. A golden light shot out and entered the symbol on Mu Chen's forehead.

Buzz.

With the empowerment of the special Spiritual Aura, the symbol on Mu Chen's head instantly turned golden. It was obvious that his symbol had also reached Rank 5 after absorbing the Spiritual Aura from Ge Hai's symbol.

"Now, can you let me go?" Ge Hai stared at the golden symbol on Mu Chen's forehead and gnashed his teeth.

Hearing this, Mu Chen smiled. He shook his head and said, "This is not enough."

"You!" Ge Hai was furious.

The cold blade touched his skin again. Ge Hai did not dare to struggle and shouted out angrily, "What do you want!"

However, Mu Chen only stared at him calmly. The meaning was obvious. With just the Spiritual Aura from Ge Hai's symbol, it wasn't enough to appease the unhappiness within his heart.

The cold chill at his neck made Ge Hai gradually calm down. He pondered for a moment before he finally spoke, "I'll tell you something. You'll let me go."

"That depends on the value of your information." Mu Chen replied lightly.

"We discovered a small valley with numerous worldly treasures there. Among those treasures, we discovered one that looked like a Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. [1. A type of grass widespread across Asia. Link]" Ge Hai gnashed his teeth as he replied.

"Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia?" Mu Chen's eyes narrowed. A hint of

interest finally emerged in his eyes. It was an extremely rare worldly treasure. Not only was it extremely beneficial to Spirit Stage powerhouses, it is said that it was able to allow people, who were at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, to take the most important step forward and advance into the Spirit Stage.

Right now, Mu Chen was only a step away from Spirit Stage. Although he was confident that he could advance within a month, the time it would take was a bit too long for him.

He had many enemies from the Spiritual Road. Ge Hai was only an ordinary fellow among them. There were many people who were much more powerful than him. Mu Chen was certain...He would definitely meet many familiar faces within the Northern Heavens World.

Thus, he must quickly advance to the Spirit Stage. Only then, he would possess enough strength to deal with his past enemies.

Therefore, the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia was extremely tempting to him.

However, he did not believe Ge Hai that easily. He immediately smiled and said: “If it’s such a precious worldly treasure. Why didn’t you try to get it? Why did you leave it there till now?”

“There are three High Rank Spiritual Beasts guarding it. Their strength is in no way inferior to me. It’s impossible for me to obtain it.” Ge Hai said unwillingly. He spent a great price in order to discover that place. Yet, he was stopped by the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts within the valley.

“Location.”

Mu Chen’s eyes narrowed as he inquired.

Ge Hai quickly reported the location to Mu Chen. As he listened, he pondered for a moment. Then, he gestured to Ye Qingling. Seeing this, the latter walked over doubtfully.

Mu Chen told Ye Qingling what Ge Hai had said earlier, including

the location of the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia.

“Is there credibility regarding this location?” Mu Chen asked. Ye Qingling knew much more than him. It was a good idea to ask for her advice.

“Northwest…” Hearing that direction, Ye Qingling thought for a moment. Soon, she nodded and replied: “That direction is indeed quite hidden. Moreover, the Ge Clan had indeed been hovering around that area…However, whether or not they were doing it for the ‘Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia’, I can’t be certain.”

Mu Chen nodded slightly. He glanced at Ge Hai again. Although he did not know what idea this guy was planning, this information truly was trustworthy.

Mu Chen slowly retracted the blade away and tossed the dark-red long sword to Ge Hai. He smiled: “This time, I’ll let you go. However, if I discover that you’ve lied to me, believe me, you won’t be able to get away.”

Ge Hai trembled as he saw Mu Chen’s smile. He did not dare to say anything and climbed awkwardly to his feet. Then, he hurriedly waved his hand and brought the Ge Clan members away.

“Are you going to that place?” Ye Qingling stared at the retreating figures before turning to face Mu Chen. She frowned and said: “I’ve always felt that Ge Hai didn’t have good intentions when he told you that location.”

“It doesn’t matter if he has good intentions or not. It’s fine as long as the information is correct.” Mu Chen replied with a smile: “How about it? Are you interested in coming together with me? It seems that there are a few worldly treasures there. It would be beneficial to you and your Ye Clan.”

“A Spiritual Road bigshot like you would actually need my help?” Ye Qingling smiled and replied.

“Bigshot…” Mu Chen smiled bitterly: “It’s not like you don’t

know about that place. It's extremely dangerous. If I don't kill them, they will kill me."

Ye Qingling sighed and tilted her head. She stared curiously at Mu Chen and asked: "If you want my help, that's fine. However, you have to answer one of my questions."

"What is it?"

"What relationship do you have with the King Luo, Luo Li?" Ye Qingling asked with great interest.

"King Luo...Is this the title that she received after her assessment as a King Class?" Mu Chen could not help but laugh when he heard this title. He could imagine her frowning in frustration when she obtained the title.

"She is my comrade. We were always in a team." Mu Chen smiled.

"Are you only just comrades?" Ye Qingling smirked as she looked at Mu Chen. "Do you know what she did after you left the Spiritual Road?"

"What?" Mu Chen's smile vanished and he frowned.

"In the final stop of the Spiritual Road, when the kings were fighting for the crown, she attacked King Xuan, Ji Xuan."

Ye Qingling's beautiful eyes were suddenly filled with passion. She stared eagerly at Mu Chen and stressed each syllable as she talked: "The battle between two kings. At the price of being gravely injured, King Luo pushed back King Xuan and caused him to lose the opportunity to seize the crown."

"At that time, she told King Xuan that she would not take his life. There will be one day when you, Mu Chen, would personally take his life."

Mu Chen fell silent. He raised his head and sighed. A hint of killing intent slowly surged within his eyes. Ji Xuan, you dare hurt

her! Then, I'll be taking your life!

The battle that we did not finish in the Spiritual Road, let us end it during our stay in the Five Great Academies!

Chapter 123 – Fighting For Treasures

In the forest, a large number of troops were fleeing away in panic. In the front of the group, Ge Hai, who was completely covered with blood, had an extremely pale expression. The scar on his face twitched and was looked particularly ferocious. As they witnessed the scar, the people nearby immediately felt a chill.

“Big Brother…”

Ge Qing called out cautiously: “Are we going to hand this information to them just like this? If Mu Chen obtains the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia, his strength will increase once more. When that happens…”

Before he finished talking, Ge Hai threw a cold glare at him and made him shut up.

Then, Ge Hai slowly retracted his gaze and looked to the rear coldly. He gnashed his teeth and said: “How could it be easy for him to obtain the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia!”

“Did you believe that I didn’t attempt to obtain the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia because I was afraid of the three beasts?” Ge Hai glanced at Ge Qing and sneered: “Although the three beasts are quite powerful, there are ways to deal with them since they have low intelligence. However, we were not the only one who had targeted the rare worldly treasure, the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia.”

“Others have also discovered it?” Ge Qing was surprised.

“Hmph, those two groups are led by kindhearted individuals. They have always been eyeing on the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. However, they feared each other so they never attempted to obtain it. If Mu Chen were to head there, he would definitely cause a dispute with them.”

Ge Hai said coldly: “Although the bosses of the two groups were not from the Spiritual Road, their backgrounds aren’t weak. By

relying on a variety of resources, their strengths are in no way inferior to mine. Once Mu Chen tries to snatch the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia in front of them, heh, there will be a good show."

"At that time, we will secretly lurk around there. If there's an opportunity, we will completely destroy them and seize the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. With that, I will finally be able to attempt to breakthrough into the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. With that strength, I will be considered as outstanding even within the Northern Heavens World."

Hearing this, Ge Qing immediately chuckled: "Big Brother sure is wise. That boy truly thought that he had taken advantage of you. Who would have thought that it was all under Big Brother's calculations?"

Ge Hai also let out a cold smile. However, Mu Chen's smiling and handsome face flashed through his mind again. He immediately shivered and forcibly suppressed those emotions.

"In addition, you will spread this message out…That the Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity currently resides in the Northern Heavens World." Ge Hai gritted his teeth and had a dark expression.

"That guy had made many powerful enemies within the Spiritual Road. There must be quite a few of them throughout this Northern Heavens World. If they were to hear of this information, hehe, Mu Chen would definitely be in trouble."

"Yes!"

In the Ye Clan's campgrounds, many people were still immersed in the battle earlier. Many individuals would direct gazes filled with awe and curiosity at the boy in the camp as they worked.

Who would have thought that this seemingly gentle boy would actually be this terrifying? He was so powerful that even Ge Hai was completely beaten up by him.

"Brother Mu Chen, you're so strong."

Sun'Er did not hide her admiration for Mu Chen and stared at Mu Chen with her twinkling, dark-black eyes. This little girl, she did not know the concept of powerful. She only felt that Mu Chen was quite handsome and cool earlier.

Mu Chen smiled and flicked at Sun'Er's twintails, who was filled with vitality. At this moment, the Ye Clan were packing up the campground in order to head to the place mentioned previously by Ge Hai.

"Once our people approach that location, the majority of them will stay behind temporarily. We will only bring a few powerful individuals over to that location." Ye Qingling walked over to Mu Chen as she spoke.

Mu Chen nodded. It was definitely a terrible idea for many of them to approach that location together as they would be easily discovered.

"The Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia is quite rare. Since Ge Hai managed to discover it, it might also mean that others would find it. We must be careful." Mu Chen replied. Naturally, he was not so naïve to believe that Ge Hai was being completely honest. Therefore, it was best for them to be careful.

Ye Qingling also bobbed her head in agreement.

"However, we also have a secret weapon." Mu Chen smiled and rubbed Sun'Er's head. The little girl was also a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. Moreover, she possessed the Heart Array State. If she were to unleash her full combat abilities, even Ye Qingling would be inferior to her. However, she was overwhelmingly lacking in combat experience and while facing her opponents she could easily panic. If a Spiritual Array Master was to reveal such emotions in battle, his effectiveness would be cut by half.

"This rascal..." Ye Qingling was quite reluctant about this. Although Sun'Er possesses a high talent in Spiritual Arrays and would be quite powerful if she displayed her strengths correctly, it

was unfortunate that this rascal was timid and voracious.

Seeing Ye Qingling's reluctant expression, Sun'Er pouted her lips. Her sister gave her the cold shoulder again.

"After all, she is still quite young. As long as she hones herself, she will be able to be self-responsible eventually." Mu Chen felt that this was quite normal. After all, Sun'Er was still too young. Moreover, she had always lived in a completely sheltered environment. Thus, as long as she obtained more experience, she would definitely become independent.

"Brother Mu Chen is the best." Sun'Er hugged Mu Chen's arm and grinned.

Ye Qingling glared at her for a moment. Then, she turned around and ordered the others to speed up their pace.

After approximately half an hour, the Ye Clan was fully prepared to leave. Ye Qingling waved her hands and the large amount of troops surged out like a flood towards the northwest.

This large wave of men naturally attracted a lot of attention. However, the Ye Clan was quite well-known in this region. When others noticed the Ye Clan, they did not dare to reveal any bad intentions. Thus, aside from a few Spiritual Beasts, which they defeated quickly, their journey was extraordinarily smooth.

They travelled almost the entire distance before they eventually stopped.

There were a few chasms in the forest here. In the front, there were many mountains overlapping each other. A few of these steep mountains pierced into the clouds. Endless roars resounded from the mountains.

"The place that Ge Hai mentioned should be around here." Ye Qingling looked at the overlapping mountains as she tilted her head to talk with Mu Chen.

"Let's select a few individuals and prepare to enter the

mountain.” Mu Chen nodded slightly. This place was indeed quite hidden. If they did not look for it specifically, it would be difficult for them to detect it.

Ye Qingling turned around and quickly selected twenty-ish people from the Ye Clan. Most of these people were at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. However, they were exceptions such as Wang Sheng, who had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

“Mo Ling. You should wait together with them.” Mu Chen informed Mo Ling. The latter also nodded. His strength wasn’t quite prominent in this place. If he were to follow them, he would only be a burden to them.

“Let’s go.”

After noticing that everything was in order, Mu Chen did not delay anymore and immediately waved his hand. He directly charged into the mountain. Then, Ye Qingling brought Sun’Er, Wang Sheng and the others as they followed.

In the mountain, there were many Spiritual Beasts. However, Mu Chen and the others’ goal weren’t the beasts. Thus, they never attacked them and avoided the formidable Spiritual Beasts as they headed straight into the depths of the forest.

They ran for approximately ten minutes before they stopped at a mountain slope. They gazed forward. At that location, there were three mountains intersecting with each other which formed a valley. Many massive trees grew near the borders of the valley and formed a natural cover.

Mu Chen and the others stood at the crest of the mountain slope as they glanced into the valley. They could vaguely feel the presence of three vicious auras. These auras were comparable to a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse.

“Three Spirit Stage Initial Phase Spiritual Beasts.”

Mu Chen glanced at Ye Qingling and the others. Ye Qingling had a decent expression, while Wang Sheng and the others' faces changed completely. They never hunted three High Rank Spiritual Beasts at once before.

"We must quickly deal with these three Spiritual Beasts. Otherwise, the large commotion would attract other Spiritual Beasts and humans over." Mu Chen spoke slowly.

"There's no way we can rush it. In this place, only Brother Mu and Sister Ye have the ability to fight against High Rank Spiritual Beasts alone." Wang Sheng smiled wryly.

Mu Chen also smiled and said: "Leave these three Spiritual Beasts to me. It will be fine if you just pay attention to the other people's movements."

Hearing these words, even Ye Qingling was stunned as she stared at Mu Chen. Mu Chen actually wanted to fight against 3 Spirit Stage Initial Phase Spiritual Beasts alone? This was much more difficult than fighting against Ge Hai.

"I'm not planning on fighting against them head on."

Mu Chen smiled slightly as he said: "Didn't Sun'Er say it before? I am also a Spiritual Array Master..."

Ye Qingling was stunned. Sun'Er had indeed mentioned it before. However, she did not pay much attention about it. Moreover, so what if Mu Chen is a Spiritual Array Master? How could he deal with three High Rank Spiritual Beasts? That would be impossible unless he could arrange a powerful Rank 2 Spiritual Array.

Just when she was surprised, Mu Chen's fingertips flashed. Then, Ye Qingling and the others were astounded as they noticed numerous Spiritual Seals slowly emerging from the fingertips.

A total of 30 Spiritual Seals!

Ye Qingling's lips parted. 30 Spiritual Seals? This guy was actually a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master as well?

Mu Chen slowly closed his eyes as his fingertips drew numerous trajectories. Then, the 30 Spiritual Seals quickly charged into the air in front of them and vanished. Afterwards, an amazing Spiritual Energy fluctuation slowly emitted.

Upon seeing this, a hint of wonder flashed through Sun'Er's petite face. Her dark-black eyes stared at Mu Chen as she muttered: "Brother Mu Chen could actually enter the Heart Array State as well..."

Ye Qingling's heart trembled again. Heart Array State. Because of Sun'Er, she knew how powerful that state could be to a Spiritual Array Master. She never imagined that Mu Chen was not only a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, but also someone like Sun'Er, who possessed the Heart Array State.

"As expected from a person who was assessed as a King Class within the Spiritual Road..." Ye Qingling sighed. Even though he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road in the middle, how is it possible for such a person to be ordinary?

Mu Chen did not care about the shock that Ye Qingling and the others faced. His hand seals changed and an golden Spiritual Array slowly expanded out in front of him. As the Spiritual Energy fluctuations came out of the array, it instantly distorted the air around it.

Chapter 124 – Golden Revolution Soulreaver Array

A golden Spiritual Array slowly expanded out from the air in front of Mu Chen. As the complex Spiritual Energy light beams interweaved with each other, they emitted extremely violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

Ye Qingling and the others weren't Spiritual Array Masters. Naturally, they weren't able to understand Spiritual Arrays. However, Sun'Er was staring at the array seriously. In her eyes, the complex and obscure Spiritual Energy light beams were like channels of power transmission. They gradually perfected the entire Spiritual Array.

Hu.

Mu Chen slowly opened his tightly shut eyes. He lifted his head and stared at the massive golden array with a serious expression. It was the first time for him to use his own strength to arrange a Rank 2 Spiritual Array.

This Spiritual Array was the Rank 2 Spiritual Array that Mu Feng had painfully searched for and found shortly before Mu Chen left the Northern Spiritual Realm. Regarding about this array, Mu Chen had long ago learnt it by heart. However, because the amount of seals he could condense was lacking, he had never attempted to arrange it. But now, he was capable of doing so.

"Next up, I'll have to trouble you." After the Spiritual Array was successfully completed, Mu Chen smiled at Ye Qingling.

Hearing this, Ye Qingling was dumbstruck. Then, Sun'Er laughed joyfully and said "Sister sure is stupid. Brother Mu Chen wanted you to lure the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts over, so he could kill them with his Spiritual Array."

Ye Qingling stared at Sun'Er for a while and immediately

nodded. However, she hesitated for a moment and asked: “Are you certain that your Spiritual Array is capable of killing 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts?”

Although Mu Chen’s Rank 2 Spiritual Array was quite impressive, a High Rank Spiritual Beast’s skin was quite tough and sturdy. They had a powerful defense. It was probably quite difficult for the array to massacre all of them in one attack.

“Relax. I know what I’m doing.” Mu Chen smiled slightly.

Once she heard these words, she she lost her hesitation and gave instructions to the crowd. Then, her lovely figure dashed off into the valley.

“Sun’Er.”

Mu Chen stared at Ye Qingling’s fading figure before he turned his gaze towards the surrounding mountains. He narrowed his eyes and beckoned Sun’Er over. Then, he slowly whispered into her ears.

Just when Mu Chen and the others were preparing to take action, on the opposite side of the mountain, two figures entered into two nearby camps. There were many people inside each camp, each having nearly 100 people.

“Boss. Someone’s targeting the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia!”

In a camp, a figure suddenly stood up once he heard this information. He was dressed in white and had a face filled with arrogance. He sneered once he heard the message and asked: “Who? Could it be Ge Hai? He actually has the courage to do so?”

“It’s not Ge Hai. It’s another clan. It seems to be the Ye Clan.” Someone replied.

“Ye Clan? Ye Qingling?” The boy in white frowned before he let out a brilliant smile: “So it’s that beauty? She truly is courageous. She actually dares to target something that I’ve taken a fancy to.”

“Boss, what should we do?”

“What do you mean by ‘what should we do’? Immediately prepare to take action. Since that beauty dares to steal from me, then I’ll capture her as well. Haha!” The boy in white laughed. He waved his hand and immediately charged out of the camp. A large amount of troops quickly followed him.

As they rushed out towards the center of the mountain, a large number of troops also exited the other camp…

Roar!

Shortly after Ye Qingling entered the gorge-like valley, deafening roars rang out and caused the valley to tremble. A violent Spiritual Energy suddenly arose from within the valley.

Swish!

Ye Qingling’s tender figure was wrapped in Spiritual Energy and turned into a figure of light. She charged out of the valley like lightning. Behind her, three blue giant birds rushed out. As they flapped their wings, Spiritual Energy billowed and covered their claws as they attempted to grasp onto Ye Qingling.

Ye Qingling’s body was like a falling leaf in the winds. She would gently sway and completely evade the attacks from the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts. However, the violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations still made her body unsteady.

With just her strength, it wasn’t easy for her to pin down 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

While Ye Qingling brought the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts towards the mountain slope where Mu Chen and the others were residing at, Mu Chen’s expression gradually turned more solemn as he fixed his sight on the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

“Chi Chi.”

The golden Spiritual Array slowly circulated and emitted a

golden Spiritual Energy. The golden light became brighter and brighter as if it was crafted by actual gold."

"Prepare to intercept." Mu Chen turned his head towards Wang Sheng and the others.

"Yes."

Wang Sheng and the others immediately responded. The Spiritual Energy within their bodies surged as they stared at the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts that were approaching them. Every single one of them was waiting for the instant Ye Qingling would enter their attack range. Then, dense Spiritual Energy erupted and bombarded against the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts behind Ye Qingling.

Bang Bang!

Numerous attacks landed on the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts' bodies and sparks flew. However, the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts' bodies were as tough as steel. The attacks failed to do any damage to them. But at the very least, they had managed to slow them down.

By relying on this brief moment, Ye Qingling escaped the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts and landed quickly on top of the mountain slope. She stared at Mu Chen and her voluptuous chest gently bounced as she muttered: "It's your turn now."

Mu Chen nodded with a smile. His sharp eyes stared at the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts that were approaching the mountain slope. Then, he gently placed his hands together and the golden Spiritual Array behind him instantly emitted a brilliant golden light. A ferocious Spiritual Energy surged from the array.

"Li!"

The three High Rank Spiritual Beasts seemed to be aware of the dangerous fluctuations emitting from the golden Spiritual Array and they immediately slowed down. Cries rang out from their

mouths as a dense Spiritual Energy filled their bodies.

“Golden Revolution Soulreaver Array!”

A cold light flashed through Mu Chen’s eyes. A piercing cry suddenly resounded from his mouth.

At this moment, a dazzling golden light arose like a sun. As the golden light gathered, the array trembled and a massive brilliant golden light blasted from the Spiritual Array.

Buzz!

The golden light rushed out and immediately turned into a sharp jagged golden wheel. The light wheel rotated crazily as it let out a buzzing sound. Then, the golden light extended out uncertainly as if it had ripped apart the air.

“Go!”

Mu Chen’s fingers touched it for a moment. Afterwards, the golden light wheel blazed like golden lightning towards the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

As the golden light wheel rushed over, the feathers of the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts were standing up straight. A hint of panic seemed to flash through their eyes. It was evident that they detected the danger from this golden light wheel.

The 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts hesitated for a moment before they suddenly turned around to flee. They immediately extended their wings in order to fly away. After all, a High Rank Spiritual Beast possessed a little bit of intelligence and knew how to act to avoid impending doom. They were certain that they would die if they were to be hit by the dangerous golden wheel directly.

“You want to run?”

Seeing this, Mu Chen smiled. He had spent a great effort in order to arrange the Rank 2 Spiritual Array. Wouldn’t it be a huge loss if he let these 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts escape?

Swish!

With Mu Chen's thoughts, the golden light wheel's speed accelerated and was like golden lighting within the sky. It rapidly caught up with one of the High Rank Spiritual Beasts and landed on its body.

Chi!

The high speed rotating golden light wheel possessed a terrifying destructive power. Even against a High Rank Spiritual Beast, which possessed a powerful defense, it still tore through the layers of defense and pierced through its body.

Blood sprayed out within the sky.

With a sharp cry, the High Rank Spiritual Beast fell from the sky.

The golden light wheel did not disappear after defeating one of the High Rank Spiritual Beasts. It immediately caught up with the second and third Spiritual Beasts and ripped through their bodies as well.

Pu Pu.

A large amount of blood fell down from the sky like a cloud of blood. After it pierced through 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts, the Spiritual Energy of the golden light wheel was depleted and it faded away gradually.

Mu Chen stared at the bloody mist. He could feel that the other two High Rank Spiritual Beasts were still alive and was not instantly killed like the first one. After all, the golden light wheel had consumed quite a bit of Spiritual Energy after it had eliminated the first Spiritual Beast...

Li!

From the bloody mist, a fierce and brutal cry resounded out. The two High Rank Spiritual Beasts charged over fiercely as their eyes locked onto Mu Chen. They immediately flapped their wings and

rushed over directly towards him.

“Be careful!” Seeing this, Ye Qingling was stunned and immediately attempted to help.

However, Mu Chen did not retreat. Instead, he let out a sneer: “It’s a powerless action.”

Swish!

Mu Chen’s hands clenched tightly and, once again, Spiritual Seals integrated themselves into the air. A lightning quickly condensed behind him and rapidly formed into a lightning array.

Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array!

Boom!

A violent lightning descended like a dragon onto the two gravely injured High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

Bang!

As they were struck heavily, blood sprayed out from the two High Rank Spiritual Beasts. In the end, they let out a pitiful cry before they fell down.

On the side, Ye Qingling, Wang Sheng and the others stared at Mu Chen. They were shocked that he was actually capable of rapidly condensing a second Spiritual Array to continue his assault. The speed in which Mu Chen arranged the Spiritual Array was way too fast.

“If only Sun’Er could arrange a Spiritual Array like this...” Ye Qingling thought. When Mu Chen arranged a Spiritual Array, he was so calm that nothing could influence him. All his fear and panic was completely isolated by him. As for Sun’Er, she would fail in arranging a Spiritual Array once she was frightened. It was truly unknown how long it would take before she could perform the same feat as Mu Chen.

“You can follow me after you collect these Spiritual Beast’s Soul

Essences.”

Mu Chen muttered to Ye Qingling and the others after he defeated the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts. Then, he immediately dashed over into the valley. In a few short seconds, he had already entered the depths of the valley.

The valley was quite verdant and had plenty of Spiritual Aura. Moreover, there were a variety of Spirit Fruits containing Spiritual Aura within the valley from Spirit Trees. This place was truly what Ge Hai had said. It was a place filled with treasures.

Mu Chen’s eyes only glanced at them for a moment before he immediately headed into the depths of the valley. Although these Spirit Fruits were decent, they weren’t something that he needed.

After a while, Mu Chen finally stopped. His eyes were firmly fixed on a mountain slope. At that location, a lush emerald clump of light had gathered.

Inside the clump of light, he could vaguely see a tiny, emerald Spirit Zoysia. From its appearance, it looked like a polished jade as it was sparkling and translucent. An amazing Spiritual Energy slowly being emitted by it.

Mu Chen stared at the emerald Spirit Zoysia eagerly.

“Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia!”

Chapter 125 – Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia

A green light that was filled with vitality surrounded the emerald-like Spirit Zoysia. An enticing aroma was constantly being emitted from the grass, which would cause anyone's mouth water.

"So this is the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia?"

From behind, Ye Qingling's voice rang out. As she exclaimed at the sight of the Spirit Zoysia sitting on the slope, Mu Chen noticed that she had also brought Wang Sheng and the others over.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. He then looked at Ye Qingling and spoke: "The Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia belongs to me this time. Consider it a favor, okay?"

"This information came from you. Moreover, you were the one that defeated the Spiritual Beasts outside. This item naturally belongs to you. There is no need to talk about favors." Ye Qingling smiled: "However, there are still many worldly treasures inside the valley. Although they aren't as outstanding compared to the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia, they are still decent. It will be beneficial to our cultivation."

"Pick as much as you want." Mu Chen laughed.

"Then I'll have to thank you." Ye Qingling nodded. She did not say anything more and waved her hand as she brought the others to pick the other worldly treasures in the area.

Mu Chen moved quickly and rushed over to the location of the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. His hand was wrapped with Spiritual Energy as he inserted it directly into the slope. Afterwards, he dug out the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia along with a massive boulder.

Once the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia was plucked by Mu Chen, an emerald light flowed out and entered the symbol on Mu Chen's forehead. The golden light from the symbol instantly turned richer and showed signs of increasing from a Rank 5 to a Rank 6.

After feeling the changes that were made to his symbol, Mu Chen's eyes were filled with surprise. It seemed that searching for worldly treasures could be a decent method of increasing the symbol's ranks. Unfortunately, it was extremely rare to find worldly treasures that were filled with Spiritual Aura such as the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia.

Mu Chen lowered his head to look at the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia on top of the boulder. The beauty of this worldly treasure could only be seen close up. Within the sparkling colors, a dense and pure Spiritual Energy fluctuation was emitted.

Mu Chen smelled the enticing aroma, and the Spiritual Energy within his body shook. A strange feeling filled his heart.

It was the feeling of wanting to attempt a breakthrough.

"I'll absorb it here right now and attempt to breakthrough to the Spirit Stage!"

This idea flashed through Mu Chen's mind, and his eyes twinkled. He sat down decisively upon the floor of the valley, then he took a deep breath and gradually calmed down.

As he was calming himself, his hands were covering the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia from both above and below. Suddenly, Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy began to surge out.

Boom!

The boulder, which the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia was on, turned into dust underneath the Spiritual Energy pressure, and the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia also cracked open slightly.

An emerald liquid filled with extraordinary Spiritual Energy flowed out and the valley instantly turned hazy as a seductive scent spread out.

The pressure of the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's hands gradually increased, and it finally compressed the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia into a clump of emerald liquid. The liquid was filled with an

extraordinary Spiritual Energy which caused Mu Chen's hands to tremble.

Hu.

As Mu Chen inhaled, the emerald liquid rose up and turned into a stream of green droplets which entered Mu Chen's mouth.

Boom!

Once the emerald liquid, which was filled with extraordinary Spiritual Energy, entered Mu Chen's body, and his skin immediately turned green. His entire being seemed to swell.

Rumble!

An amazing Spiritual Energy was raging like a flood within Mu Chen's body. He hurriedly gathered his thoughts and circulated the Great Pagoda Art in order to swiftly ingest the massive Spiritual Energy within his body.

However, the Spiritual Energy from the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia was truly enormous. Now that it had entered Mu Chen's body, it actually showed signs of losing control.

Just when Mu Chen was somewhat troubled by it, a sudden suction of energy appeared from within his aura sea. It immediately took a portion of the pure Spiritual Energy away.

This scene initially stunned Mu Chen, but he immediately concentrated and noticed that the Spiritual Energy entered the Nine Netherbird's body, who was laying down on top of the mandala flower.

As the Nine Netherbird absorbed the Zoysia's Spiritual Energy, the dim color on its body instantly lighten up; then, black flames started to rise from its body once again.

"What are you looking at? It was you who made me this weak. Right now, you have way too much Spiritual Energy. It wouldn't harm you if I take a bit away from you." The Nine Netherbird

seemed to be aware of Mu Chen's gaze, and a cold message was immediately conveyed over.

Mu Chen smiled bitterly and said hesitantly: "Are you planning to attack me secretly again?" He remembered the previous time during his breakthrough when the Nine Netherbird secretly attacked him.

And now, the breakthrough this time was even more important that before. If anything terrible happened, he would truly regret it.

"If you have this wish, I can indulge it for you." A mocking thought was conveyed over by the Nine Netherbird.

Mu Chen smiled awkwardly and relaxed. Then, he ignored the Nine Netherbird and focused on ingesting the massive Spiritual Energy within his body as he prepared to breakthrough into the Spirit Stage.

In the valley, Ye Qingling and the others were picking the other Spirit Trees' Spirit Fruits. The Spiritual Auras from these Spirit Fruits were far inferior compared to the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. However, they was still beneficial for cultivation.

"What a rich Spiritual Aura."

Wang Sheng suddenly turned around and stared at the depths of the valley. An enticing aroma emitted from that location along with dense Spiritual Aura.

Ye Qingling paused for a moment. She immediately understood that Mu Chen was probably ingesting the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia and frowned: "Do we have people keeping an eye out for trouble?"

"Yes. Relax, Sister Ye. We have people being vigilant," Wang Sheng laughed.

Wuu!

Just when Wang Sheng said these words, a humming sound rang out from outside the valley. The crowd of people inside the valley

instantly changed their expressions. Once she heard this sound, Ye Qingling immediately rushed to a high slope and stared out into the distance.

"Swish!"

Two other figures quickly rushed over to the high slope from nearby. They said in panic: "Sister Ye, this is bad. We discovered two groups charging over towards us."

Ye Qingling's face changed slightly and asked: "Is it the Ge Clan?"

"No. We did not discover Ge Hai's figure from these two groups," One of the men muttered.

Ye Qingling's eyes turned serious and murmured: "It seemed that Ge Hai wasn't the only one that knew of the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia being here. That bastard truly had bad intentions from the start!"

"Sister Ye, what should we do?" Wang Sheng hurriedly asked. The two groups of men were definitely comparable to the Ge Clan. Otherwise, Ge Hai wouldn't have let their groups exist. With them rushing over to this location, how could they resist against them with just this amount of manpower?

Ye Qingling glanced at the valley and bit her teeth. She immediately responded: "We should stop them for now. Mu Chen is currently breaking through to the Spirit Stage. He cannot be disturbed right now."

Wang Sheng exchanged gazes with the others. Could they even stop them? But since Ye Qingling was the one that said this, they could only comply with it.

Ye Qingling rushed up to the highest point of the valley and stared out to the distance. Then, she discovered two groups of men charging over to this location rapidly. Each group had dozens of individuals.

"Haha. Little Beauty, we meet again!" A figure rushed out from the group on the left. A dense Spiritual Energy emitted from his

body as he let out a frivolous laughter.

“Yang Gong?”

Ye Qingling stared at the figure dressed in white and immediately frowned. She had met this person before. Although the latter had not participated in the Spiritual Road, his family was quite prosperous. By relying on numerous resources, he managed to enter the Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

“Hmph, your Ye Clan truly has guts. You dare steal the item that I, Zhou Li, had taken a liking to! You must have a death wish!” From the other group of men, a figure dressed in black charged out with a cold expression. He stared unkindly at Ye Qingling.

“It’s the Yang Clan and the Zhou Clan...” Wang Sheng and the others’ expressions immediately changed. The two groups were well-known forces within this region. Their strength was in no way inferior to their Ye Clan.

Ye Qingling stared coldly at Yang Gong and Zhou Li. Both of them were at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. With her alone, it would be difficult for her to fight against them.

“Ye Qingling, hand over the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia!” Zhou Li shouted. He had been eyeing at the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia for a few days. If it hadn’t been for Yang Gong, he would have probably taken action already. How could he have expected that Ye Qingling would make a pre-emptive move on it?

Ye Qingling’s eyes flashed with an uneasy look. She smiled: “About the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia, it seemed that the other side wants it as well. If I were to hand it over to you, they would probably be dissatisfied.”

Zhou Li frowned and glanced at Yang Gong.

“Ohoho. Not only are you beautiful, but you’re also as cunning as a fox. I like it.” Yang Gong laughed and looked at Zhou Li as he said: “Brother Zhou must have seen through this sort of

psychological action, right? Why don't we temporarily join forces to capture this beauty? When that happens, the beauty will belong to me and I'll let you have the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. How's that?"

"Good!"

Zhou Li's eyes lit up. His personality was different than Yang Gong. Thus, the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia was more attractive to him.

Ye Qingling's face changed slightly when she noticed that the two of them formed a temporary alliance.

"Haha. Little Beauty, you should just follow me around. I will definitely treat you well." Yang Gong laughed loudly. Then, he charged directly at Ye Qingling. At the same time, Zhou Li rushed over as well. They surrounded Ye Qingling.

Ye Qingling's expression turned slightly cold, and a dense Spiritual Energy also erupted from her. Although it would be difficult for her to face two Spirit Stage powerhouses, there was no other choice. She could only stall for as long as possible.

"Boom!"

But just when Ye Qingling was about to attack, an extremely violent Spiritual Energy suddenly emitted from a slope nearby. The surrounding forest was instantly destroyed by it.

This violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation instantly surprised both Yang Gong and Zhou Li. They hurriedly turned their gaze over and noticed a massive Spiritual Array slowly emerging on the slope. In front of the Spiritual Array, a lovable and cute girl with twintails were staring at them grumpily.

"Since you're bullying my sister, you must be looking for a beating!?"

Sun'Er voice resounded out as her hands quickly formed a few seals. The massive Spiritual Array above her immediately circulated, and violent Spiritual Energy quickly gathered.

“Wind Dragon Skysmash Array!”

Roar!

Within the massive blue Spiritual Array, a blue light gathered and swept across the sky. An enormous wind dragon burst out from the array carrying sand and rumbling Spiritual Energy towards the Yang Gong and Zhou Li.

As Yang Gong and Zhou Li stared at the formidable wind dragon, their faces instantly changed.

Chapter 126 – Spirit Stage

Roar!

As the wind dragon roared, furious winds bellowed and numerous wind blades swept across the sky. The space left behind seemed to have been ripped apart by these wind blades. This powerful attack instantly changed Yang Gong and Zhou Li's expressions.

The Spiritual Array that Sun'Er had activated was extremely powerful. It was probably on the same level as Mu Chen's 'Golden Revolution Soulreaver Spiritual Array'. It was certain that even someone at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase would die if it hit them.

Before this entire thing had happened, Mu Chen was extremely cautious and made Sun'Er hide quietly for an ambush. He had told her to secretly prepare a Spiritual Array, so that she could arrange it once something terrible happens.

Mu Chen knew that Sun'Er had barely any combat experience. Thus, he could not let her fight against others in a head-on battle. Instead, by making her hide, she could finally display the power that she rightfully possessed.

And the current situation proved that Mu Chen's arrangements had indeed been correct. Without people disturbing her, the Spiritual Array that Sun'Er arranged was in no way inferior to his own.

Yang Gong and Zhou Li's face changed as they stared at the approaching wind dragon. It was evident that they had perceived a Spiritual Energy fluctuation that even they would fear. If they were hit by such an attack, it was almost certain that they would be killed.

"It's not so easy to kill us!"

However, Yang Gong and Zhou Li were not ordinary individuals.

They never felt despair, even in such a circumstance. Instead, they let out cold shouts as they gripped their own hands. Then, a clump of light was unleashed from each of their respective hands.

Boom!

A dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from their palms. At this moment, Ye Qingling and the others noticed that a black iron shield had formed in front of Yang Gong. The black iron shield was covered with mysterious engravings, and a unique fluctuation emitted from it.

And in front of Zhou Li, a grey stone stove had appeared. The stone stove also possessed a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation. On the surface, it too had many unique light engravings.

“Obsidian Spirit Shield!”

“Spirit Stone Stove!”

These words were simultaneously shouted by Yang Gong and Zhou Li. Then, the shield and stove instantly let out a dazzling flashes as they protected the two of them.

Bang!

By the time the wind dragon had finally arrived, it had built up enough momentum and fiercely smashed against the black shield and stone stove. A formidable Spiritual Energy shockwave instantly resounded out.

Swish.

Two figures were shot down from the air awkwardly. However, they hurriedly stabilized their stances the moment their feet landed on the ground. The black shield and stone stove turned dimmer and finally disappeared within their hands.

But from their appearance, the two of them did not suffer much damage!

“Spiritual Artifacts?” Once Ye Qingling noticed this scene, her

heart sank slightly. Just earlier, Yang Gong and Zhou Li had both pulled out true Spiritual Artifacts. Their family background was truly impressive.

At this moment, Yang Gong and Zhou Li's expressions both trembled. If it weren't for their Spiritual Artifacts, the two of them would have actually been killed by that little girl.

"You'll go and capture that little girl. I'll stall Ye Qingling!" Yang Gong said in a solemn voice. At this moment, he had put away his jolly attitude. The little girl was too amazing. If another powerful Spiritual Array emerges, they would definitely suffer.

"Okay!"

Zhou Li also understood this point, so without further thought, he immediately nodded and rushed towards the distant slope where Sun'Er was.

"Stop right there!"

Seeing Zhou Li charge towards Sun'Er, Ye Qingling's face instantly changed. She hurriedly rushed out. However, just when she moved, Yang Gong had appeared in front of her. He smiled and said: "Little beauty, you should play with me instead."

"If you dare touch my sister, I will never forgive you!" Ye Qingling's eyes were completely cold. A dense Spiritual Energy surged out of her body and she attacked Yang Gong fiercely.

"Haha."

Yang Gong laughed. However, he did not dare to be too careless. Ye Qingling wasn't weaker than him, if he were to underestimate her, then he would definitely pay a price. Thus, he too pushed his Spiritual Energy to the limits as he faced her.

BOOM!

The two of them went all out, their Spiritual Energy erupted, crushing the nearby boulders and trees to pieces.

Just when Yang Gong started his fight against Ye Qingling, Sun'Er, who was on the distant mountain slope, noticed Zhou Li, who was approaching with murderous intent. She was shocked and immediately ran into the forest behind her.

Zhou Li, who was originally tensed and wary of Sun'Er, watched this scene and was completely startled. It was evident that he never expected Sun'Er, who made both him and Yang Gong feel death, would actually flee immediately.

"Where are you planning to go!?"

However, Zhou Li quickly recovered from the shock. Sun'Er was even more dangerous than Ye Qingling. If she were to hide herself and stealthy arrange a Spiritual Array, they wouldn't have the luck to survive again. He absolutely had to capture her.

Swish!

A dense Spiritual Energy surged from Zhou Li's body. Then, he chased after Sun'Er like a gale...

...

Rumbling Spiritual Energy surged through Mu Chen's limbs and bones like a flood. As he circulated the Great Pagoda Art with all his strength, he was constantly absorbing the pure Spiritual Aura from the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. In the end, it had all flowed into his aura sea and empowered the Spiritual Energy light wheel within it.

Buzz.

As the dense Spiritual Energy entered, the Spiritual Energy light wheel expanded constantly. It finally became the size of an adult's palm, and the area surrounding the light wheel was covered with lights. It had the appearance of a vast, mysterious universe.

Mu Chen felt the Spiritual Energy within his aura sea increase at an alarming speed, yet his mind gradually calmed down.

With the Great Pagoda Art circulating at full strength, he had finally ingested the last portion of pure Spiritual Energy from the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia.

Once the final portion entered his Spiritual Energy light wheel, a strange feeling instantly filled Mu Chen's heart. This feeling was as though everlasting ripples had appeared in a calm, serene spring.

At this moment, the Spiritual Energy light wheel had completely stopped circulating. Waves of Spiritual Energy rippled on the surface of the light wheel. Then, Mu Chen examined the Spiritual Energy that had gushed out and gathered on the surface of the Spiritual Energy light wheel.

The Spiritual Energy converged and, once the light dispersed, a petite light figure, who was sitting cross-legged, had emerged on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel. It was extremely blurry, yet it seemed to be quite similar to Mu Chen. But because it was too blurry, it was impossible to look at it clearly.

In the instant that the petite light figure was formed, a mysterious feeling appeared within Mu Chen's heart. He immediately concentrated and changes appeared within his gaze. He had actually turned into the petite figure who was sitting cross-legged on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel.

"So this is a Spirit?"

Mu Chen realized that this was probably the biggest change as a Spirit Stage compared to the Spiritual Rotation Stage. Once he condensed this spirit, he had truly stepped into the realms of the Spirit Stage.

Mu Chen's thoughts quickly fused with the petite spirit, and he opened his eyes. His figure quickly moved, and he emerged outside of the mandala flower. Then, he smiled as he stared at the Nine Netherbird within it.

At this moment, the Nine Netherbird instantly became alert once

it noticed the petite figure outside. Once a human reached the Spirit Stage, they would have the ability to ingest a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. In other words, Mu Chen has finally obtained a measure to deal with it now.

It had never doubted how appealing it was to humans. As long as they ingested its Soul Essence, they would be able to obtain the mighty abilities of a Nine Netherbird. To many powerhouses, this was extremely tempting.

"Hehe."

The petite spirit grinned at the Nine Netherbird, and it let out a malicious laugh.

"As expected, humans are truly up to no good!" The Nine Netherbird's black flames instantly rose and thoughts filled with rage echoed within Mu Chen's aura sea.

"If you want to ingest me, I will not let you get away with it easily!" The Nine Netherbird spread out its wings as it shouted angrily.

The petite spirit watched the Nine Netherbird who overreacted and was completely speechless. He said helplessly: "But I never said that I wanted to ingest you?"

The black flames rising from the Nine Netherbird's body instantly froze. It was skeptical as it asked: "Then why did you come over here!?"

"I have just condensed a spirit, so I wanted to show it off to you." Mu Chen's voice was filled with ridicule. It was evident that he had acted this way on purpose. The Nine Netherbird had never given him face. Thus, now that he was able to torment it, he felt pretty great.

The Nine Netherbird finally realized the meaning behind Mu Chen's actions and anger instantly filled its eyes. The wings that emitted black flames swept severely against the light barrier:

“Scram!”

This violent bird... Mu Chen smiled. He said seriously: “Relax. My promise is definitely true. I understand that I would benefit a lot if I ingest you. But no matter how powerful one is, I look down upon people who can’t even keep a promise. Therefore, there is no need for you to worry. If it wasn’t for your help, I probably wouldn’t have a father anymore.”

The Nine Netherbird slowly folded its wings. Although its eyes were still filled with fierceness, the depths of its eyes had softened up. Although this bastard was quite vindictive, at least he was still commendable in certain areas.

After Mu Chen finished saying these words, he controlled the petite spirit and returned it back to the Spiritual Energy light wheel. As long as he entered the Spirit Stage, this petite spirit would be capable of automatically circulating the Great Pagoda Art. It would achieve an effect of cultivation. In addition, once he started circulating the Great Pagoda Art with his own body, the cultivation would be twice as effective. Thus, this petite spirit was extremely beneficial to his cultivation.

“The Spirit Stage is truly impressive.”

Mu Chen let out an praise. His mind focused as he completed the final circulation of his Great Pagoda Art before finally exiting the cultivation state.

Buzz.

But at this moment, he felt a buzzing sound emerging from within his body. He hesitated slightly and carefully sensed this buzzing sound. Then, he discovered that a sudden surge of information appearing from his heart.

Mu Chen checked the information that was delivered to him and a hint of surprise filled his heart. Had he actually activated something within the Great Pagoda Art due to his breakthrough

into the Spirit Stage?

“The Great Pagoda Art that mother left behind is truly mysterious.”

Mu Chen gathered his thoughts and completely read the information handed to him. It seemed that a mysterious Spiritual Art was hidden within the information. It was...

Vajra Pagoda?

Chapter 127 – Subdue

Boom!

A dense Spiritual Energy erupted in midair outside of the valley. Two figures had charged at each other with rumbling Spiritual Energy like powerful winds colliding.

In this moment, Ye Qingling was fighting with Yang Gong, and neither of them were holding back. They fully demonstrated the strength of the Spirit Stage. Although their strengths were similar, as time passed, Ye Qingling started to gain the upper-hand. After all, she was someone that had come out of the Spiritual Road and had experienced the trial within it. Whether it was battle experience or mental strength, she was far more outstanding than Yang Gong. She had increased her strength slowly and steadily, while the latter had relied on a massive amount of resources in order to reach the Spirit Stage. Thus, Yang Gong's strength was a little bit more unstable when compared to Ye Qingling's.

It was apparent that Yang Gong was aware of the pressure coming from Ye Qingling. His expression instantly became serious, and he did not dare to divert his attention elsewhere as he fought with all his strength.

While this battle occurred, the troops brought by Yang Gong and Zhou Li had rushed over in order to fight against Wang Sheng and the others. But due to the difference in numbers, Ye Qingling's side was quickly put at a disadvantage.The situation was beginning to look grim for them.

"Haha. Little Beauty. Your men won't be able to endure it any longer. Are you still planning to resist us stubbornly?" Yang Gong laughed and tried to use words to distract Ye Qingling.

However, as he laughed, Ye Qingling's attacks were becoming increasingly more powerful. The latter completely saw through the former's thoughts. How could she not understand them? If she

were to be distracted by the others, it will not help the situation at all. Therefore, if she truly wished to help Wang Sheng and the others, she must defeat Yang Gong as soon as possible.

Due to the suddenly increasing ferocity of the attacks, Yang Gong was completely shocked and did not dare to speak anymore. As he concentrated, he began to feel that this girl was truly cunning.

While the battle between Yang Gong and Ye Qingling had entered the climax, a few people were watching the scene in secret from nearby. One could tell based on their appearances, it was the Ge Clan.

At this instant, their eyes were firmly fixed at the battle. Their eyes twinkled as they clearly stood to benefit greatly from the tussle.

“Big Brother. It seems that Yang Gong isn’t faring well against Ye Qingling.” Ge Qing whispered as he watched the battle.

“There’s no hurry. Ye Qingling does not have a sufficient amount of men, and they will soon be defeated. Furthermore, Zhou Li is already chasing after that little girl. As long as he captures her, Ye Qingling will be completely suppressed.” Ge Hai sneered.

“But what I’m wondering is what is going on with that Mu Chen…He hasn’t made any moves yet since the very start. Could it be that he has already obtained the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia and is attempting to ingest it at this very location?”

“If he successfully ingests it…if he were to advance into the Spirit Stage…” Ge Qing said trembling at the thought.

“Hmph. How can it be so easy to ingest a Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia? It’s evident by his absence that the bastard has gambled on ingesting it. However, he overestimates his own strength. Once Ye Qingling and the others are defeated, Yang Gong and his side will enter the valley. When that happens, that idiot, who will be sitting in a vulnerable state of cultivation, will simultaneously be at

death's door." Ge Hai smiled evilly as he spoke.

"And if by some chance, he were fight against Yang Gong to the bitter end, that will be the time when we emerge in front of them."

"Big Brother sure is wise." Ge Qing had a happy expression. Ge Hai had truly thought through the entire process and knew what to do. Let's see how you, Mu Chen, overcomes this obstacle this time!

Dong!

In the sky, Spiritual Energy surged out of Ye Qingling's palms, and emitted a dazzling light which collided with Yang Gong.

A Spiritual Energy fluctuation, visible to the naked eye, spread out.

While Yang Gong retreated back a dozen step, Ye Qingling only retreated back three steps. However, he smiled and pointed below. At that location, Wang Sheng and the others were completely surrounded: "It seems that your subordinates have fallen into my hands."

"Then I'll kill you first!" Ye Qingling's eyes were cold. Spiritual Energy fluctuations emerged from her palms. At this moment, she was preparing to attack once again.

"Haha, I'll want to see you try." A cold sneer suddenly rang out from nearby. Ye Qingling was surprised and hurriedly turned her head around. At this moment, her expression changed drastically. She noticed Zhou Li approaching this location quickly, and, in his hands, he was clutching a struggling, little girl.

"Sun'Er!" Ye Qingling was speechless.

"Sister, I'm sorry." Sun'Er's eyes had turned red due to shame. She severely lacked combat experience . Thus, despite being quite powerful, when she attacked stealthily, once a Spirit Stage powerhouse like Zhou Li had targeted her, her combat abilities would immediately plummet.

“Zhou Li. If my sister is injured even slightly, I will kill you even if I have to lose my life!” Ye Qingling glared at Zhou Li. As these words were spoken, her voice was filled with rich killing intent.

Zhou Li’s face turned slightly. He knew how terrifying a crazy woman could be. Therefore, he did not wish to overly provoke Ye Qingling and replied: “As long as you hand over the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia, I’ll let her go.”

Ye Qingling clenched her hands and bit her lips.

“Hows that sound?”

Zhou Li gripped Sun’Er’s soft shoulders with a bit of power. In that instant, the little girl instantly let out a painful cry, and her mouth twitched. Her eyes had also turned an even deeper shade of red, as she fought to hold back her tears.

Sun’Er gradually came to understand that this place wasn’t the same place she was previously at. Here, she could not hope to have everybody’s protection and love.

Once Ye Qingling heard Sun’Er’s painful cry, her body trembled slightly as she felt pain within her heart.

“If I were you, I would quietly let her go!”

Just when Ye Qingling had felt that stinging pain of Sun’Er’s cry within her heart, a voice filled with anger rang out followed by a figure quickly rushing out of the valley.

“Who!”

Zhou Li stared at the figure of light, and his expression changed.

Swish!

The figure ignored Zhou Li’s cries and appeared in front of him like a phantom. With its hands clenched into a fist it sent a punch blasting out towards Zhou Li’s head.

From the atmosphere of this punch, it would probably blow away Zhou Li’s head away if it were to hit him.

“You have a death wish!?”

Seeing this, Zhou Li was completely furious. Spiritual Energy gushed out of his body, and he fired out a punch of his own without any hesitation. His punch collided fiercely against the other punch that was blasted towards him.

Boom!

But as these fists collided with each other, Zhou Li’s expression changed drastically, and a surge of pain burst through his his arm. The other person’s Spiritual Energy was exceptionally overbearing and had forcibly destroyed the Spiritual Energy that covered his fist as it charged into his body.

Zhou Li’s body trembled, and he hurriedly staggered backwards. At this moment, a sweet taste filled his throat.

Just when Zhou Li staggered backwards, the light figure’s arm shot out and snatched Sun’Er away from his grip. Then, the figure’s Spiritual Energy dispersed, and it revealed the cold-looking expression of Mu Chen.

“Brother Mu Chen!” Seeing this familiar expression, Sun’Er instantly shouted with delight. Afterwards, her eyes turned red and she said in frustration: “That bastard gripped me too hard. It hurts.”

“Go over to your sister. Brother Mu Chen will teach him a lesson for you.” Mu Chen smiled at Sun’Er.

“Okay.” Sun’Er nodded and her body jumped into Ye Qingling’s arms. Ye Qingling stared at her carefully while being quite distressed.

“Boy, who are you?!” Zhou Li’s stared grimly at Mu Chen. Beside him, Yang Gong’s eyes were also completely alert. Mu Chen, who had suddenly appeared, made them feel a little bit of unease.

“You wanted the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia, right? Well it’s a shame that I have just ingested it.” Mu Chen smiled at the two of them

while he spoke.

Hearing these words, Zhou Li and Yang Gong's expressions instantly turned cold. They gnashed their teeth as if they wanted to rip Mu Chen into pieces. They had been eying that Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia for a long time. But because they had been afraid of each other, they had now failed to obtain it. They never expected that, in the end, their actions would benefit this Mu Chen in such a way.

"You dare steal the item, which I desire? Foolish trash!"

Yang Gong shouted out loudly and exchanged gazes with Zhou Li. He immediately yelled: "Let's get rid of him!"

Just earlier, he had seen Mu Chen repelling Zhou Li. Thus, he knew that Mu Chen was quite capable and did not dare to fight against him by himself.

Swish!

But before the two of them could manage an attack, Mu Chen had already made the first move. With a cold expression, a dark-black Spiritual Energy surged from his body and charged into the clouds. The density of the Spiritual Energy was many times more powerful than it had been before his advancement.

"So this is the power of a Spirit Stage..."

Mu Chen felt the torrent-like Spiritual Energy within his body and could not help but feel the comfort that emerged along with it. He straightened two of his fingers and the tips of these fingers lit up instantly. With a Pu sound, they quickly formed into a 3-meter-long golden light spear and stabbed towards Yang Gong and Zhou Li at lightning speed.

Boom!

Once they noticed the spears, Yang Gong and Zhou Li hurriedly circulated their Spiritual Energy . Both of them unleashed a powerful punch. However, their punches were blown away the

moment they made contact with the golden light. A hint of surprise instantly filled their eyes. So the dark-black Spiritual Energy was actually this domineering!

“Swish!”

Mu Chen’s body quickly appeared in front of them again. He immediately let out a punch. But this time, three black light seals emerged on the surface of his fist. Surging black waves emitted out from his fist.

Booooooom!

As the three black light seals erupted out, Yang Gong and Zhou Li felt chills as they detected the overbearing fluctuations coming from the black light seals. They immediately gripped their hands together, and the black shield and stone stove reappeared.

Bang!

The three Limitless Death Seals exploded out. The Spiritual Energies overlapped against each other and let out a powerful impact on the black shield and stone stove. It made the black shield and stone stove instantly turn dim, as each flew back into their respective owner’s hands.

Puchi.

As they watched the Spiritual Artifact being forced back, Yang Gong and Zhou Li’s expressions turned pale. Both of them were completely shocked as they spit out a mouthful of blood. They could not believe that Mu Chen, who was at the same level as them, would actually be so powerful. He was able to completely subdue the two of them by himself!

“Run!”

At this moment, the two of them understood that they have finally met their match. They acted decisively and immediately retreated as they wiped away the blood on their mouths.

“And just where are you planning on going?!”

Within Mu Chen’s eyes, a cold light flashed. He immediately activated the Shadowspirit Step and turned into numerous afterimages. Before Yang Gong and Zhou Li could react, he had already appeared in front of them. A golden light glowing from his fingertips like a sharp-edged golden divine spear stopped in front of their throats. The swift and fierce aura instantly made fresh blood ooze out of their skin on their throat.

“If you dare move one more step, I’ll kill you.”

Mu Chen glanced calmly at the two of them. The voice that lacked emotions had instantly frozen both Yang Gong and Zhou Li’s body.

Chapter 128 – Spoils of War

Outside of the valley, Yang Gong and Zhou Li's men gradually stopped moving. Their expressions changed as they stared at Mu Chen, who had complete control over their bosses. Then, they exchanged gazes with each other and stopped moving as well.

He was capable of defeating the Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouses, Yang Gong and Zhou Li, easily. As for them, what were they worth compared to these powerful individuals?

"Motherf*cker. Weren't you acting quite arrogant earlier? Who told this motherf*cker to hit me?" Wang Sheng, who had bruises on his face, sent a person, who was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, flying with a kick, while cursing. He hadn't often been greeted like this before.

The person who suffered a kick from Wang Sheng did not dare to fight back. After all, the situation wasn't the same as before.

"What do you want?"

On the mountain slope, Yang Gong and Zhou Li gritted their teeth. A cold chill permeated from the fingers that had stopped near their throats. It made them unwilling to make even the slightest movement. The boy in front of them had extremely calm eyes. They had no doubt that they would have to pay a bloody price if they dared to take the slightest action.

Mu Chen stared at the two of them and said faintly: "Since the fight is over, we will first talk about the price of fighting against us. Hand it over."

Mu Chen's eyes were focused on the symbols located on Yang Gong and Zhou Li's foreheads. From the dazzling golden color, it was evident that both of these individuals had Rank 5 Symbols.

"You!"

Hearing that Mu Chen wanted to steal their symbols, Yang Gong

and Zhou Li's expressions changed. They had spent a lot of effort in order to increase their symbols to Rank 5.

"You can choose not to do so. However, I will wipe your symbol away. If that happens, I believe that the two of you will be eliminated from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, right?" Mu Chen muttered as if he didn't care.

Yang Gong and Zhou Li instantly turned pale. Their eyes trembled as they stared at Mu Chen, who said these words calmly. The latter's methods were more decisive and vicious than they thought.

"Have you made up your mind?" Mu Chen smiled at the two of them.

"Fine. I'll treat it as if you're heartless!" Yang Gong exchanged gazes with Zhou Li and each noticed the bitterness within the other's eyes. They gnashed their teeth and concentrated. Then, the glittering golden symbols let out two brilliant lights as the symbols turned dim.

Mu Chen absorbed one of the golden lights into the symbol on his forehead. It instantly brightened up and turned into a dark golden color. At this moment, his symbol had levelled up into Rank 6.

After Mu Chen had finished absorbing the Spiritual Aura from Yang Gong's symbol, he flicked his finger and sent Zhou Li's portion over to Ye Qingling. When the latter noticed this, she hesitated for a moment. But after seeing Mu Chen direct a nod at her, she absorbed the Spiritual Aura from the symbol. At this moment, the symbol on her forehead also brightened up.

"Now, can you let us go?" Yang Gong gritted his teeth as he asked.

Mu Chen glanced at the two of them and he let out a mocking smile: "You were bullying such a cute girl earlier. Thus, you must compensate for it."

“We’ve already given the Spiritual Aura within our symbols to you. What else do you want!” Yang Gong shouted furiously.

“I noticed earlier that you two seemed to have pulled out something interesting.” Mu Chen’s eyes slowly scanned the two figures. If he were to use the triple Limitless Death Seals with his Spirit Stage Initial Phase strength, that wouldn’t be something that an ordinary Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse could withstand. However, the two of them managed to endure it.

Hearing these words, Yang Gong and Zhou Li’s faces turned pale. This thief! He actually dares to snatch away our Spiritual Artifacts? Those are our protective items!

“We don’t have anything like that!” Yang Gong and Zhou Li gritted their teeth as they replied.

“If that’s the case…” Mu Chen smiled slightly. His black eyes suddenly turned cold. His fingers disappeared from their throats and appeared in front of their foreheads.

After receiving powerful winds from Mu Chen’s finger, the dim symbols on their forehead actually showed signs of breaking.

Feeling the chill on their foreheads, Yang Gong and Zhou Li’s legs turned slightly weak. If their symbol was erased, they wouldn’t be qualified to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“How about now? This is your final chance.” Mu Chen directed a smile at the two of them. However, this smile made both Yang Gong and Zhou Li shudder. This person truly doesn’t follow the typical pattern…

Yang Gong and Zhou Li sighed powerlessly. They finally gave up on resisting and extended their palms over. A light emerged on their palms and quickly turned into two clumps of light.

Within the clumps of light, one could vaguely detect a black shield and a grey stone stove.

“This is a Spiritual Artifact?” Mu Chen frowned. He looked at

Yang Gong and Zhou Li in surprise. It seemed that they truly had powerful backgrounds as both of them possessed Spiritual Artifacts. Even his father didn't have such items.

Mu Chen was surprised deep inside. However, his hand did not hesitate as he grabbed onto the black shield and the stone stove. The two Spiritual Artifacts resisted for a while within his hand. But in the end, they were suppressed forcibly by Mu Chen and placed within his Mustard Seed Bracelet.

"Thank you for your gifts."

Mu Chen finally retracted his fingers and chuckled.

Yang Gong and Zhou Li's faces were completely blue. They stared ruthlessly at Mu Chen: "Boy, since you dare to steal from the two of us, if you have guts, I dare you to leave your name behind. We won't easily accept this!"

Hearing this, Mu Chen smiled: "Mu Chen. I'll welcome the two of you to cause trouble for me again. However, you should listen carefully. If you dare cause trouble for me, and get defeated by me again, I might erase your symbols if you fail to hand over satisfactory compensation."

As they looked at Mu Chen's smile, Yang Gong and Zhou Li's hearts jumped. This bastard actually wants us to trouble him? Is he hoping for us to become individuals, who would hand over many treasures to him?

"You just wait!"

However, they could lose the fight, but not the battle. Even though they were already in a mess, Yang Gong and Zhou Li still had to act mighty and cool. They shouted out and immediately retreated.

Once they noticed their bosses depart, the unfortunate fellows below quickly scurried away. They did not dare to stay at this location.

Hidden in a distant forest, Ge Hai, Ge Qing and the others watched this scene unhappily. They were gritting their teeth to the point where they nearly shattered. Originally, they planned on reaping the benefits from other individuals, but it actually turned out like this.

“Big Brother, what should we do?” Ge Qing smiled bitterly. He was completely shocked. Just earlier, Mu Chen had completely subdued two opponents alone. It was evident that his combat abilities had far surpassed any ordinary Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse. If they wanted to defeat him, they would need at least a Spirit Stage Middle Phase powerhouse!

Ge Hai gritted his teeth and his expressions changed for a moment. Finally, a hint of depression emerged on his face. He said: “Forget it. Let’s withdraw first. Right now, we aren’t their opponents at all. Let’s hurry and leave. It would be troubling if he discovers us.”

His heart trembled as he spoke these words. He hurriedly turned his head and noticed Mu Chen staring at him from the distant mountain slope.

“Hurry and run!”

Ge Hai was completely startled. He no longer cared about the others and ran away. He understood that, if he was to fall into Mu Chen’s hands again, the latter would definitely erase his symbol if he didn’t kill him.

“That bastard. Just you watch. We have already spread news about your existence in this Northern Heavens World. Since you had so many enemies in the Spiritual Road, there ought to be someone in this Northern Heavens World who will find you! When that happens, let’s see how you’ll suffer!”

Ge Hai cursed in his mind as he fled. Right now, he could only hope for a powerful individual to take care of Mu Chen...

“They truly refused to give up their evil intentions.”

From afar, Mu Chen stared calmly in the direction in which Ge Hai and the others were escaping. However, he did not chase them down. He already hadn’t cared about a person like Ge Hai in the Spiritual Road. There was no need for him to care about such a person in the Great Thousand World either.

If he truly refused to give up and he stumbled into his hands, all Mu Chen could do was to make him suffer.

Mu Chen slowly retracted his gaze and turned around towards Ye Qingling and the others. He directed a smile at Sun’Er, who was in Ye Qingling’s arms, and asked: “Little girl, are you okay?”

Sun’Er shook her head and pouted. Then, she lowered her head and said: “Brother Mu Chen, I’m sorry. I almost ruined everything.”

Previously, Mu Chen had told her that he would give her a major task. He made her hide nearby in order to protect them. But who would have expected that she was the one that was captured? Moreover, she was used to threaten her sister. This made the little girl quite unhappy.

“You’ve already done quite well. If it wasn’t for you buying time for me, I wouldn’t have had the time to ingest the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia.”

Mu Chen smiled and rubbed Sun’Er’s head. Then, his face turned solemn as he spoke: “However, you should still act a little bit braver next time. Your sister can’t protect you forever. Moreover, you have great potential. Perhaps in the future, you will meet powerful individuals. When that happens, you might be the one that has to protect your sister. If you are still afraid then, your sister could be injured. You wouldn’t like to see such a thing happen right?”

Sun’Er possessed an extremely terrifying talent in terms of

Spiritual Arrays and Mu Chen knew about this. Her training in Spiritual Arrays was more complete than his. After all, the majority of his knowledge about Spiritual Arrays was taught by Mister Wen Ling. Perhaps Wen Ling was considered an excellent Spiritual Array Master within the Northern Spiritual Realm, it was evident that he was far inferior to a true Spiritual Array Master.

If Sun'Er was able to be courageous and wouldn't become a mess in a crisis, Mu Chen believed that perhaps he would not be Sun'Er's opponent based on Spiritual Arrays.

Sun'Er stared at Mu Chen's handsome and gentle face as she nodded seriously. Brother Mu Chen was correct. She could not allow her sister to protect her forever. She had to become stronger in order to protect her sister in the future.

As she watched this scene, a hint of warmth and comfort flashed through Ye Qingling's eyes. She directed a grateful smile towards Mu Chen as she understood the good intentions that the latter had towards Sun'Er.

Mu Chen also let out a satisfied smile. Then, he gripped his hand and light emerged from his palm. In an instant, the black shield and stone stove that he had stolen from Yang Gong and Zhou Li appeared. An unique Spiritual Energy fluctuation was emitting from each of these items at the same time.

Mu Chen stared curiously at the black shield and stone stove in his hands. He wanted to carefully examine his spoils of war.

Chapter 129 – Spread of Information

The black shield and the stone stove emitted a faint light as they floated above Mu Chen's palm. As they flashed, a strange Spiritual Energy fluctuation spread out.

Mu Chen stared curiously at the two Spiritual Artifacts. As the creation of Spiritual Artifacts was rather complex, only Spiritual Blacksmiths had the ability to create them. Moreover, there were barely any Spiritual Blacksmiths within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm. Based on this, one can see how tiny the Northern Spiritual Realm is compared to the vast and endless Great Thousand World.

Mu Chen's hand gripped the black shield of light and inserted Spiritual Energy into it. A powerful light started to emit from it and the palm-sized artifact instantly expanded into a protective shield in front of Mu Chen's body.

On the surface of the black shield, there were many mysterious engravings along with black lights. It gave off a vaguely dense and powerful feeling.

Previously, Yang Gong had used this black shield to block Mu Chen's triple Limitless Death Seal attack.

Based on Mu Chen's calculations, this black shield could probably withstand a powerful attack from a Spirit Stage Middle Phase powerhouse. But this fact made him secretly sigh. A Spiritual Artifact truly brought too many benefits to a battle.

Mu Chen played around with the black shield before he handed it over to Sun'Er. He smiled: "This is your reward."

Both the black shield and stone stove were protective Spiritual Artifacts. Since Mu Chen was planning on keeping the stone stove, he handed the black shield over to Sun'Er. After all, she was a Spiritual Array Master who lacked battle experience. With the

support of the black shield, she would be a lot safer than before.

Sun'Er extended her petite hands and fiddled with the black shield as she chuckled: "Thank you, Brother Mu Chen."

"The black shield and stone stove are probably Low Rank Spiritual Artifacts." At the side, Ye Qingling smiled when she noticed this scene: "However, it truly provides many benefits to Sun'Er. If it weren't for these protective Spiritual Artifacts, they would have probably been killed by Sun'Er directly."

"We originally had higher ranked Spiritual Artifacts as well. However, they were handed back to our family when we entered the Northern Heavens World. They said that we must rely on ourselves for our cultivation within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If we were to use the Spiritual Artifacts' power to obtain a higher position, we would truly be inferior to others."

Hearing Ye Qingling say these words, Mu Chen let out a bitter smile. This was truly the difference between them. In the Northern Spiritual Realm, he had almost never seen any Spiritual Blacksmiths. However, Ye Qingling and the others were accustomed to them.

After this, Mu Chen put away the stone stove casually. Although a Spiritual Artifact brought many benefits, he had always believed that the most important thing was for one to rely on their own strength. This was something that everybody could trust.

"What are you planning to do next?" Ye Qingling smiled as she stared at Mu Chen.

"Head to the Northern Heavens Hall. What else could I do?" Mu Chen smiled. He believed that everybody's goal was the same. This is because if they were to reach that place, they would be able to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"What about you?"

"Naturally, the same as you." Ye Qingling smiled: "However, I

would like to find a suitable Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence to ingest on our way there. You have only recently advanced into the Spirit Stage, so you probably haven't ingested a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence yet, right?"

Mu Chen sighed helplessly as he nodded. Although he had an extremely rare Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence within his body, he did not dare to ingest it.

"Actually, many students that advanced to the Spirit Stage have not ingested a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence yet. This is because they were picky and set their sights quite high. They do not wish to find and ingest a random Spiritual Beast's Essence. Although it is possible to change the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence later, it is indeed a troublesome matter.

"As far as I know, there are many powerful Spiritual Beasts within the Northern Heavens World. In fact, there are a few that have reached the Heaven Ranks and had a pretty decent position within the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. Although these Spiritual Beasts are difficult to deal with, they would always create a commotion once they were found. Many individuals would flock to them..."

"Actually, this is an opportunity that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has granted to us. It is a chance that would allow us to become a lot more powerful within the Northern Heavens World. This way, we would truly qualify to be students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Ye Qingling blinked her eyes as she stared at Mu Chen and said: "If you have no other plans, why don't you follow us? If we were to find a couple of powerful Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, I would give you the first choice."

"Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts..." A hint of surprise flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. It seemed that he had underestimated the Northern Heavens World. How could such a place be ordinary if it

was used by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as their examination grounds?

Although Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were extremely powerful and it was impossible for them to compete with the beasts with their present strength, there were thousands of students inside the Northern Heavens World. These individuals were not weak either; together, it would be possible for them to suppress a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast. Naturally, there was a premise that the Spiritual Beasts weren't as terrifying as the Nine Netherbird...

However, the possibility was quite small. Based on Mu Chen's calculations, the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts within the Northern Heavens World would not surpass the ranks of the top 50 Spiritual Beasts in the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. After all, a Spiritual Beast with a rank above the top 50 was too powerful for students like them.

"I'm quite interested in this as well."

A hint of interest flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. Currently, he had advanced to the Spirit Stage and it was indeed true that he required a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Otherwise, he would definitely be at a disadvantage once he fought against enemies that had ingested a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence.

Furthermore, the Northern Heavens World was quite vast and boundless. It was evident that it would be difficult for him to obtain information and find traces of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. Therefore, it would truly help him out if he were together with Ye Qingling and the others.

"Then, let's reunite with the others and head to the interior of the Northern Heavens World." She was quite happy to hear that Mu Chen would be going with them. After all, Mu Chen was extremely powerful, and his presence would be a significant boost in strength for the Ye Clan.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. Then, the group packed their

belongings before they headed quickly out of this mountain. Finally, they converged with the Ye Clan members, who were waiting for them at the foot of the mountain.

As the groups reunited with each other, a passionate commotion broke out. Wang Sheng and the others were talking excitedly about the battle that happened earlier within the mountains. Once the surrounding Ye Clan members heard that Mu Chen was able to completely subdue two Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouses by himself, they immediately cried out in shock. Their gazes held a hint of passion and worship as they looked at Mu Chen.

In their eyes, a person who had advanced to the Spirit Stage was truly outstanding. Mu Chen, having easily bested not one, but two such individuals, was simply glorious.

With such a powerful person protecting their tiny Ye Clan, the threats that they suffered would decline greatly...

In the next few days, Mu Chen followed the Ye Clan as they headed to the interior of the Northern Heavens World. Although there were numerous troubles along the way, it did not stop them at all during their trip.

Furthermore, Mu Chen discovered that there were more students and forces as they gradually entered the interior of the Northern Heavens World. In addition, the majority of these individuals had a powerful aura. After all, without a bit of ability, it was impossible for them to protect their symbols from being robbed along the way.

Although they met many powerful forces and students as they entered the interior of the Northern Heavens World, the Ye Clan did not attract a lot of hatred as they never took the initiative of robbing other people's symbols. Thus, they were quite peaceful compared to the forces that fought against each other daily.

However, this peace did not last forever. This is because of the unique information that was gradually spreading throughout this

vast region. This information did not create a commotion with those people who had not participated in the Spiritual Road, but to the ones that participated in the Spiritual Road, it was somewhat shocking.

The message conveyed was extremely short, yet it created a huge commotion in a few people's hearts.

The Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity, Mu Chen, is currently present at the Northern Heavens World.

Blood Calamity Mu Chen.

Many were unfamiliar with this name. However, there were also many people who jumped upon hearing this name. Nobody who came from the Spiritual Road would ever forget the terrifying Blood Calamity that was caused within the Spiritual Road.

And the creator of the Blood Calamity was a boy named Mu Chen. A person who should have been assessed as a King Class and would have stood at the peak of the Spiritual Road.

This information spread quickly. A few individuals would grit their teeth in hatred once they obtained this news. A few would exclaim in curiosity, saying they would like to meet the boy who caused that shocking event within the Spiritual Road.

Some would hate, some would fear and some would be surprised...

Various emotions were evoked as the message was spread throughout the Northern Heavens World. Before long, Mu Chen's name had become a frequently discussed topic within the vast region. This made many people who had not participated in the Spiritual Road realize that a terrifying individual had descended into the Northern Heavens World...

This information had attracted a bit of trouble for Mu Chen as well. However, he was still able to control the trouble that he had attracted; for now. However, he understood that as the

information spread further, the amount of trouble he would face would increase significantly. After all, he had a few opponents that were quite powerful...

Therefore, he must increase his own strength as soon as possible...

...

In a certain location within the Northern Heavens World.

Boom!

The sound of an explosion rang out within a massive mountain. Then, an enormous Spiritual Beast, covered with spikes, came crashing down to the ground. Fresh blood oozed out and turned the ground red.

It was a Magical Thorn Beast, whose strength was comparable to a Spirit Stage Middle Phase powerhouse. If a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse were to meet it, their only option would be to quickly flee from this High Rank Spiritual Beast.

But at this moment, it had completely lost its life.

A figure landed gently on the massive body of the Magical Thorn Beast and extended its hand to extract the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. After glancing it for a bit, the figure placed it away.

"Yo, not bad. You dealt with this beast quite quickly." Sounds of laughter rang out from nearby. At this moment, a handsome boy emerged and whistled at the figure on top of the Magical Thorn Beast's body.

The figure that killed the Magical Thorn Beast lifted its head and revealed a handsome face. On his forehead, a purple-golden symbol was revealed. It was a symbol that had reached Rank 7.

This figure had a calm expression as if it was relatively easy for him to kill a Magical Thorn Beast.

"It's that expression again..."

The handsome boy curled his lips as if he was bored. Then, he stretched his waist for a moment as he smiled: “However, I believe you’ll be interested in what I’m about to say.”

“Blood Calamity Mu Chen has appeared.”

Just as the handsome boy had expected, the figure who was on top of the Magical Thorn Beast froze for a moment. Afterwards, the figure quickly appeared in front of the handsome boy and his dull eyes instantly sharpened: “Mu Chen? Where?!”

“It should be in this area. I’ve already sent a few men over to investigate. We will soon have his location. I’ll inform you as soon as we get it.” The handsome boy smiled.

“Great!”

A smile finally emerged on the figure’s face.

“I’d say, Chu Qi, Mu Chen isn’t a man to be trifled with. Why are you searching for him? It doesn’t seem like you have had much interaction with him before, right? And it’s not like you have a grudge against him from the Spiritual Road either.” The handsome boy said helplessly. Known to him, Mu Chen was a terrifying existence that a person like Ji Xuan would fear.

“I hold no grudges against him.”

The handsome boy named Chu Qi let out a faint smile. He stared at the frowning boy. Yet a hint of passion emerged from within the depths of his eyes: “I like Luo Li. I selected the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy because I’ve heard that she also selected it.”

The handsome boy’s eyes widened for a moment. Then, he gave a thumbs up to Chu Qi: “Amazing. You truly set your sights quite high. However, it’s unfortunate for you as you probably don’t stand a chance. She’s truly amazing. It’s impossible for you to conquer her.”

“She has someone that she likes.” Chu Qi clenched his hands tightly as he spoke.

The handsome boy was stunned. Then, he instantly understood and asked: “Are you talking about Mu Chen?”

Chu Qi slowly nodded his head and he began walking down the mountain. The ground underneath him shook slightly as he walked. At the same time, a hint of unacceptance spread out, accompanied by his voice.

“Therefore, I’m going to personally meet him. I will show him just who is the one that is more suitable for her!”

Chapter 130 – Dragon Elephant Array

Surrounded by lofty peaks that shot up into the sky, this was a place where numerous mountains had intersected with one another. Thus, the many paths in this range would all intersect and come together at this location.

Due to the paths converging, this region was quite a festive and popular location. numerous camps were spread out among an exceptionally vast ground. Furthermore, there were many figures flocking about, demonstrating in this fashion how popular this location was.

Mu Chen stood on a mountain slope as he watched the scenes of people come and go. A hint of surprise flashed through his eyes. There were thousands of people in the area in front of him. The number of people here was even many times greater than the amount that had been on the Escort Platform.

“This place is a temporary gathering point. From this location, it is possible to advance to the depths of the Northern Heavens World. Therefore, many people in this region choose to pass through this place.” Next to Mu Chen, Ye Qingling explained with a smile: “In addition, this area also has an exchange market. Many people come here to sell the items that they have. Various Spiritual Arts, Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essences and even Spiritual Artifacts can appear here. Naturally if you would like to obtain the item, you must hand over a price that is satisfactory for them.”

Mu Chen nodded. It was truly what he had expected. As long as humans were around, a place like this would automatically form. After all, everybody wants to obtain the items that they need.

“Do we need Spirit Coins here?” Mu Chen asked. Spirit Coins were the common currency used in the Great Thousand World. The coins contained Spiritual Aura could also be directly absorbed. Thus, it was a hard currency within the entire Great Thousand

Worlds.

“Spirit Coins would barely be considered suitable. However, they aren’t the thing that the people here need the most.” Ye Qingling’s slender finger pointed at the dark golden symbol on Mu Chen’s forehead and spoke: “This is the hard currency within the Northern Heavens World. If you want to exchange for anything, you must hand over a satisfactory amount of Spiritual Aura from your symbol…”

Mu Chen felt quite strange. He had never expected that the symbol would have such an effect at this location. However, once he thought about it, Spirit Coins were truly useless to the people here. As for the Spiritual Aura within their symbols, it could help the sellers to quickly increase their symbol’s ranks and allow them to escape the tragic fate of being eliminated.

“Moreover, this is also a location where we could gather various types of information. We could inquire about any traces of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. Shall we go?” Ye Qingling smiled at Mu Chen.

“Okay.”

Mu Chen was quite interested in this place and immediately nodded his head.

Seeing this, Ye Qingling quickly issued orders for the Ye Clan set up camp at this location. Then, she brought a handful of men including a curious Sun’Er, Mu Chen and Mo Ling down the mountain slope as they headed towards the bustling trading area.

As they approached the trading ground, passionate voices rang out. The bustling sounds made Mu Chen feel like he was back in the Great Thousand Worlds.

At this location, nobody had the right to occupy a particular space. Therefore, there was no force that would specially maintain order. However, one would be greatly mistaken if one believed that

they could ignore the rules here. This place contained numerous individuals belonging to different forces. Once someone broke the rules here, they would become the enemy of countless forces. Thus, only an idiot would act so foolishly.

Mu Chen and the others slowly walked down a path towards the trading ground. Their view gradually widened, and they saw what the trading ground was like.

Within the trading ground, there were many tents sent up. Outside of the tents, neatly cut boulders were placed. On the surface of the smooth boulder, a faint Spiritual Energy was emitted. Various items would appear on the boulders.

“Demon Destruction Sword Technique. A Spiritual Tier Low Rank Attack Spiritual Art. You only need to pay a Rank 3 Symbol’s Spiritual Aura to take it away, don’t miss this amazing opportunity!

“Earth Spirits. Spiritual Tier Low Rank Gong Fa Spiritual Art. Requires a Rank 4 Symbol’s Spiritual Aura, who would like to see it?”

“Ghastly Spirit Sword. Low Rank Spiritual Artifact. It only requires a Rank 5 Symbol’s Spiritual Aura!”

As Mu Chen and the others walked around the trading ground, many strange cries came from all directions. This made numerous people chuckle. Perhaps such weird cries and requests would only be heard within the Northern Heavens World.

Mu Chen’s gaze swept across the surrounding stone tables. Numerous items on the table were considered precious and rare. If it was placed within the Northern Spiritual Realm, it was enough for people to consider stealing them. If it’s the price, it would be at least 100 000 Spirit Coins. However, it was evident that it was a lot cheaper here.

Mu Chen walked together with Ye Qingling and the others for

half an hour before separating with them. The little girl, Sun'Er, was busy enjoying the bustling environment and wanted her sister to take her shopping. Thus, Mu Chen started to wander around by himself.

Although he had seen many decent items along the way, Mu Chen did not see anything that truly tempted his heart. This made him quite disappointed, but just when he was planning to leave, a shout rang out from nearby, which made him stop.

"Motherf*cker. Who the hell are you planning on tricking? You want to use a broken Diagram Array to exchange for a Rank 6 Symbol's Spiritual Aura?"

"Diagram Array?"

Mu Chen's heart trembled. He immediately gazed over and noticed a boy who stood on a stone table as he was cursing at another boy, who was dressed in a grey outfit, in the corner. The boy, who was being cursed, had his eyes shut as he curled his lips while ignoring the other boy.

Seeing that the grey outfit boy disregard him, the boy lost interest and departed with a cold grunt.

At this moment, Mu Chen also arrived in front of the stone table. He stared at the place in front of the boy dressed in grey. There was a black iron box and a dark golden scroll was within it. A faint Spiritual Energy fluctuation was given off by the scroll.

"What rank is your Diagram Array?" Mu Chen asked with great interest.

Once the boy dressed in grey heard a person asking him a question, he lazily opened his eyes. He glanced at Mu Chen and his eyes lit up once he noticed the Rank 6 Symbol on Mu Chen's forehead. His eyes immediately turned eager and he hurriedly replied: "This is a Rank 2 Diagram Array. However, you should not underestimate it. If you want to arrange this array, it would

require at least 40 Spiritual Seals. The power of this array is something that even a Spirit Stage Middle Phase could not endure.

“40 Spiritual Seals?” Mu Chen was surprised. It was quite rare to see a Rank 2 Spiritual Array that required this many Spiritual Seals. After all, only a few outstanding Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master could, barely, reach this requirement.

For example, the Golden Revolution Soulreaver that his father had found only required 30 Spiritual Seals. But the power from this array could instantly defeat a Spirit Stage Spiritual Beast as well as wound two other Spiritual Beasts.

“Are you also a Spiritual Array Master?” Mu Chen glanced at the boy dressed in grey and asked.

Hearing this question, the boy dressed in grey nodded with a hollow laugh.

“A Diagram Array is extremely important to Spiritual Array Masters, right? You would actually be willing to sell it?” Mu Chen inquired.

“I am currently only a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. Who knows how long will it take before I reach the 40 Spiritual Seals requirement? It’s questionable weather I can reach the Rank 4 Symbol. So why shouldn’t I use it to exchange for my Symbol’s Spiritual Aura? Once I enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to cultivate myself, I wouldn’t care about not having a Diagram Array.” The boy dressed in grey was quite open to the situation as he replied.

Mu Chen smiled. That was true. If he was to be eliminated because his symbol did not reach Rank 4, it was evident that this loss was incomparable to a Rank 2 Diagram Array.

“What’s the price?” Mu Chen did not hide the fact that he has great interest to the scroll.

“Rank 6 Symbol’s Spiritual Aura. I won’t lower the price. This is

something that I spent great efforts in order to steal from my father. If you're willing, then buy it. If not, then you should just forget about it." The boy replied firmly.

"Can I inspect the item?" Mu Chen thought for a moment and asked.

"That's fine." The boy replied without any hesitation. He was also a Spiritual Array Master. Thus, he knew how complex that this Diagram Array was. If one wanted to master it, it would require a long time spent researching and studying it. An existence that could understand a complex Diagram Array in a glimpse did not exist at all.

Mu Chen's hand cradled the dark golden scroll within the box, and he slowly unrolled the scroll.

Roar!

Once the scroll opened up, a dark-golden light emerged. It felt like a dragon and elephant's roar had entered Mu Chen's ears. On the scroll, numerous complex lights flashed as if a dragon and elephant were entrenched in it.

As the golden gradually dimmed, three ancient characters emerged.

"Dragon Elephant Array."

Mu Chen softly muttered these words. Then, he was drawn in by this Diagram Array. A hint of delight soon emerged within his black eyes. This Diagram Array seemed to be quite powerful and he was quite satisfied with it.

"I'll take it." Mu Chen raised his head and smiled at the boy, who had his sights fixed on him.

"Haha, brother, you sure are straightforward." The boy dressed in grey was immediately overjoyed once he heard these words. Then, the red symbol on his forehead darkened. The Spiritual Aura at that location was temporarily suppressed to the

appearance of a Rank 1.

The dark golden symbol on Mu Chen's forehead flashed and a golden light flew out into the other boy's forehead. The latter's darkened symbol immediately became a dazzling gold. It was the mark of a Rank 6 Symbol.

"Cool. Right now, I am also a Rank 6 Symbol expert." The boy in grey touched his forehead happily. Then, he quickly picked up a cloth and tied his forehead in order to hide his symbol.

Mu Chen held onto the Diagram Array and touched his dark and dim symbol. He could not help but shake his head. The accumulated Spiritual Aura had completely disappeared. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was to end the competition now, he would be instantly eliminated.

Mu Chen placed the Diagram Array within his Mustard Seed Bracelet and ignored the boy, who was happily closing his shop,as he walked away. He did not have any plans on looking at the other shops anymore as he was completely broke.

Just when Mu Chen intended to find Ye Qingling and the others, he felt a commotion appear from within the trading ground. In the distance, the heavily packed crowds had split apart.

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed as he stared at that location. He could vaguely hear a few voices.

"Isn't the boss of the Chu Clan? It's said that the Chu Clan is one of the most powerful forces within this region..."

"He rarely comes here. I wonder what actually brought him over here this time."

As the crowd split apart, a burly figure slowly walked out from it steadily. As he walked, it felt as if the ground was trembling. Thus, nobody dared to underestimate him.

Mu Chen glanced at the figure and intended to avoid him.

However, the figure headed straight towards him. Under numerous surprised gazes, he appeared in front of Mu Chen.

Mu Chen frowned as he stared at the unfamiliar figure that had stopped in front of him. The latter's gaze had made him feel a bit uncomfortable. Moreover, he was quite certain that he had never seen this person before.

"Are you finding me for something?" Mu Chen asked calmly.

"You're Mu Chen, right?"

The burly figure stared at Mu Chen with a faint smile.

"I'm Chu Qi. I want to ask you to do me a favor."

Mu Chen's black eyes remained fixed on Chu Qi's face. However, he did not answer him.

Chu Qi stared at Mu Chen and slowly spoke: "I hope that you will not appear in front of Luo Li."

Chapter 131 – Chu Qi

“I hope that you will never appear in front of Luo Li again.”

When these words entered Mu Chen’s ear, his twinkling eyes started to focus. He stared at this person named Chu Qi and lifted up the corner of his lips: “Are you Luo Li’s suitor? Based on your appearance, you’re someone that came out of the Spiritual Road, right?”

Mu Chen smiled as he continued: “Since you’re from the Spiritual Road, you should more or less know about me. That being said, I do not care how much you like Luo Li. Not even Ji Xuan is qualified to say such words in front of me, so who do you think you are?”

Chu Qi stared at Mu Chen and slowly replied: “Ji Xuan is indeed formidable. However, even if it was him, I would still say the same words. Also, your reputation might have been great within the Spiritual Road, but I believe that you do not understand the current reality right now.”

“This place isn’t the Spiritual Road, and you are no longer the Blood Calamity Mu Chen. You’re just a person, who had recently advanced into the Spirit Stage. With your strength only at this level, it is enough to make me believe that you do not deserve her. At the same time, it gives me a bit of confidence.”

Chu Qi had a serious expression as he continued to talk: “She’s quite outstanding, so there are many people that like her. In the future, it’s highly likely that something similar with happen again. But since she likes you, I do not hope to see others defeat you. If it’s going to happen, it might as well be me who does it.”

“You truly are quite narrow-minded.”Mu Chen glanced at Chu Qi for a moment and immediately inquired: “Have you met Luo Li before?”

“She saved me once in the Spiritual Road. Thus, I spent a bit of time with her,” Chu Qi replied.

“I can guess that during the so-called ‘time’ you spent with her, she always ignored you, right?” Mu Chen could not help but smile. With his understanding of Luo Li, he knew it was common for Luo Li to ignore the people beside her.

Chu Qi’s expression froze and turned quite unnatural. This is because Mu Chen was correct. After Luo Li had saved him, she had never talked with him again. She would do her own things such as cultivating, hunting and resting by herself. It was as if she had completely forgotten about the people beside her.

But because of such acts, Chu Qi liked her even more. In the short period of time he was with her, he essentially experienced the best time of his life. But on the day that he had to separate from her, he could not resist and told her that he liked her. But the girl with crystal-like eyes stared at him strangely and finally said a single phrase to him.

“I like Mu Chen. I hope that you will not chase after me.”

After saying this, she left. The only thing left behind was a completely stunned Chu Qi.

Chu Qi’s face changed slightly as he stared at Mu Chen’s slightly smiling handsome face. A hint of jealousy emerged from within his heart. How could he, Mu Chen, make her, who would ignore everything aside from cultivation, pay attention to him?

Chu Qi had sensed a hint of softness appear on Luo Li’s exquisite face as she muttered Mu Chen’s name.

“I did not think much about it. Besides, if you truly possessed the strength that matched your reputation within the Spiritual Road, perhaps, I would not have looked for you. Unfortunately, the current you seems quite weak.”Chu Qi continued slowly: “Therefore, I do not believe you are qualified to be beside her.”

This person was somewhat stubborn and had a low emotional intelligence.

Mu Chen frowned as he asked: “Then what do you want to do about it?”

“Fight with me. If you lose, you will not appear in front of her again. She is too outstanding for the likes of you. Thus, similar things will just continue to appear. If you are too weak and get trampled on and defeated by others, it would only make her sad. Since it’s like this, it’s best to eliminate this possibility as soon as possible.” Chu Qi answered.

“You truly believe that you would have a chance with her if this happens?” Mu Chen inquired.

“No…” Chu Qi shook his head and said: “I just don’t want to see her sad expression because the person she likes was too weak and was defeated by others.”

Mu Chen’s had a strange expression. This guy is truly making him unable to respond.

“I’m not interesting in proving anything to you.” Mu Chen walked past Chu Qi and paused suddenly: “However, I will not let anyone hurt her. No matter who it is.”

Chu Qi frowned: “With your current strength, you are just overconfident by saying such words.”

Mu Chen sighed helplessly and stopped talking. Then, he walked away.

“Bang!”

A dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation suddenly emerged from behind. This instantly shocked everybody within the trading ground. Numerous gazes were projected over as they stared at Chu Qi, whose Spiritual Energy was surging out.

Chu Qi took a step forward and the ground trembled. Then, a

punch was fired out by him. Cracks actually burst open on the ground as the winds from the punch flew out like lightning towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen turned his body around, and a dark-black Spiritual Energy also surged out from his palm. His palm immediately smashed towards the approaching gale.

Boom!

Spiritual Energy shockwaves erupted out and caused the surrounding grounds to crack open. The ones that were nearby were forcibly blown away.

“You shouldn’t go too far.” Mu Chen’s black eyes gradually turned cold. He stared at Chu Qi as he frowned.

“How cowardly. You currently do not possess even half of the courage that you had when you were the Blood Calamity Mu Chen.”

Chu Qi immediately moved and turned into a figure of light as he rushed to a mountain outside of the trading ground. A rumbling cry filled with Spiritual Energy emitted out in midair: “Mu Chen. Show me your true strength. If you walk away now, I will not stop you. However, I do not believe that a person that is liked by King Luo, Luo Li, would be a coward!”

WAHH.

In the trading ground, a commotion rang out. Numerous individuals turned their attention towards the slender boy in the trading ground. Is he the recently discussed figure, the Blood Calamity Mu Chen?

He’s Mu Chen?

At this location, there were also a few people who came out of the Spiritual Road. At this moment, their gazes sharpened as they stared in fear at the boy, who had caused a calamity within the Spiritual Road.

Mu Chen stared at Chu Qi, who was on top of the mountain. His face turned slightly cold. This person was truly annoying and this made him quite furious.

“Mu Chen!”

Not far away, Ye Qingling’s voice rang out. She brought Sun’Er as she hurried over with a worried expression. It was evident that she had recognized Chu Qi. After all, the latter was quite a celebrity in this region.

“Be careful.” Ye Qingling spoke. She heard Chu Qi’s voice from earlier and, thus, she knew the purpose of this challenge. With Mu Chen’s personality, she knew that he would not run away from the challenge.

Mu Chen nodded towards the two girls before he charged out of the trading ground and appeared on a mountain opposite of Chu Qi. Although he did not hold any grudges towards Chu Qi, the latter had come searching for him. If he was to walk away, it would cause others to believe that he, Mu Chen, was afraid of Chu Qi.

Moreover, what Chu Qi said was correct. Luo Li was indeed quite outstanding. The amount of people that liked her would definitely increase. In order to stop troubling matters like this current one from appearing again, there was only one method. He could only show the others a strength that they would fear.

Chu Qi should be someone at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. He wasn’t considered weak. Compared to Ge Hai, he was definitely a lot more powerful. Perhaps, that was the confidence that he had when he came seeking for him.

But Mu Chen would make him understand that he, Chu Qi, wasn’t as strong as he believed.

On a mountain slope near the trading ground, a group of figures was watching the face-off between the two individuals.

“Chu Qi really made his move.” The person leading the group

was a handsome boy. He watched this scene helplessly as he spoke.

“So that’s Mu Chen? A Spirit Stage Initial Phase? Although that’s quite amazing, he’s still far from boss, right?” A person behind the handsome boy spoke.

The handsome boy let out a faint smile as he stared at the slender figure. His gaze was quite complicated and he spoke: “If his cultivation hadn’t been delayed because of the Spiritual Road… Coupled with the fact that he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road midway and lost access to the Spiritual Energy Empowerment, he would probably be at the same level as Ji Xuan and Yang Hong, the people who stood at the peak of the Spiritual Road…”

Everybody that heard these words immediately clicked their tongue. Mu Chen was actually this powerful?

“However, there aren’t that many ‘ifs’ in this world. Just as Chu Qi has said, Mu Chen is currently only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. This strength does not match his reputation from the Spiritual Road.” The handsome boy slowly responded.

“At the very least, Chu Qi should be able to suppress him now.”

The handsome boy stared at the two individuals confronting each other. Chu Qi wanted to defeat Mu Chen to make the latter realize that he was not good enough for Luo Li. At the same time, he could be planning on using Mu Chen to boost his fame. Recently, the matters regarding Mu Chen had been discussed a lot. Perhaps, many people, who came from the Spiritual Road, were planning on making their moves. Mu Chen’s reputation was too dazzling. However, he currently did not have the strength to match that fame. Therefore, it was the perfect opportunity to step on him.

To be able to step on a person, who was highly looked up to in the past, would always give one pleasure.

With Mu Chen’s personality, it was apparent that he hated

endless streams of challenges. Therefore, Chu Qi was an excellent opponent for him. He could rely on this opportunity to send a warning to the others and make other realize that he, Mu Chen, was still the same Mu Chen from before. It did not matter whether he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road in the middle, nor did it matter that his cultivation had been delayed for a year. He was still an existence that the people who stood at the peak, should fear.

Both of them had their own purposes for this fight. But it was up to them to determine who would be the one to achieve it.

The handsome boy felt the increasingly tense atmosphere and slowly exhaled. This battle was important to the both of them.

Chapter 132 – Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast

The atmosphere outside of the trading ground instantly lit up like a fire. Within the surrounding forests, the numerous sounds could be heard of wind breaking, as countless figures landed within it. Every single one of these individuals started staring at the two figures who were confronting each other on nearby mountains.

Among the people that had gathered, there were many individuals that weren't familiar with Mu Chen. However, they knew the person on the other side, Chu Qi, pretty well. In this region, the Chu Clan was considered to be one of the strongest forces. Moreover, Chu Qi's name was well-known by everyone.

The confrontation between these two men was undoubtedly attractive to everyone.

"At least you have some guts." Chu Qi stared at Mu Chen as he slowly spoke.

"A mere Spirit Stage Middle Phase isn't someone I fear." Mu Chen smiled. Although Mu Chen had only advanced to the Spirit Stage recently, he wasn't someone that could be underestimated.

"I hope that your tone matches your strength. I won't believe that the person she likes would be that weak either."

Chu Qi slowly clenched his hands, and a deep-yellow Spiritual Energy rushed out of his body like a tempest. The Spiritual Energy that he had cultivated gave off a feeling like it was as heavy as the earth.

"I will not hold back at all!"

Chu Qi shouted out suddenly. His soles stepped heavily on the ground and the entire mountain trembled at this moment. Then, his body descended towards Mu Chen like a meteorite.

“Meteorite Wave!”

While Chu Qi was in midair, a deep-yellow Spiritual Energy gathered on the surface of his fists. In a few seconds, it had formed into a small meteorite that was falling from the sky.

Humm.

A sharp sound of breaking winds resounded throughout the area. The formidable air pressure emitted from the meteorite forcibly blew away the trees below. Even the earth started to show signs of a collapse.

Even though the battle had just started, Chu Qi had already used one of his ultimate moves. It was evident that he had no intentions of warming-up. He just wanted to defeat Mu Chen as soon as possible!

Mu Chen raised his head slightly and stared at the powerful attack from above that was about to bombard him. However, his face remained the same as he clenched his hands. Three dark light seals flashed and appeared on the surface of Mu Chen’s fist.

A punch was blasted out! The three Limitless Death Seals suddenly erupted outwards with a brilliant black light, formed into a line, and emitted a such a domineering Spiritual Energy fluctuation, that it caused the very air around it to become distorted.

Bang Bang Bang!

Just before making contact with Chu Qi’s attack, the three Limitless Death Seals suddenly exploded. Then, layers of black fluctuations were emitted from the explosion like overlapping waves.

Fireworks blossomed as the black and yellow light collided with each other in midair. A visible Spiritual Energy shockwave spread out and uprooted the trees on the mountain top that had stood within its wake .

Smoke started to rise.

In the sky, Chu Qi had taken two steps back. He stared at Mu Chen, who was on the peak of a mountain, and frowned. He did not attempt to test Mu Chen out during the previous attack. Thus, he was surprised that Mu Chen had been able to withstand it head-on.

“Boom!”

As the smoke cleared itself, a rumbling echo could be heard from within the dust. A light array emerged, and a furious lightning dragon issued out a roar. It torn through the air as it headed directly towards Chu Qi.

“A Spiritual Array?!”

This special Spiritual Energy fluctuation instantly startled Chu Qi. However, his eyes flashed, and he actually decided not to avoid it. Instead, he took a step forward and clenched his fists. The clothes on his arms instantly shattered as his veins began to pulse like a dragon. Then, he immediately fired out a punch.

Boom!

The air exploded due to the mighty punch from Chu Qi. As the violent Spiritual Energy emerged, the winds created by his fists directly shot towards the furious lightning dragon. With outstanding strength, he directly destroyed the beast with one attack.

“I never expected that you were a Spiritual Array Master. However, this kind of Spiritual Array is useless against me.” Chu Qi landed on a cliff as he stared at the place where Mu Chen stood.

“Is that so? Then, I’ll give you one that’s even more powerful!”

Within the dusty clouds, sounds of laughter rang out. Then, another powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation surged out from within the clouds. The dusty cloud was blown away, and the scene within was revealed.

At that location, a brilliant golden Spiritual Array had already formed above Mu Chen's slender body. An extremely fierce Spiritual Energy fluctuation was slowly emanating from it. It caused numerous marks to appear on the nearby ground.

"This is a Rank 2 Spiritual Array?"

The people watching the battle were stunned. A commotion broke out immediately. This Mu Chen was actually a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master as well?

"Golden Revolution Soulreaver Array!"

The golden wheel was extremely fast; many people could only see the golden light with their eyes, and faint traces that were left in the sky as the air was ripped apart.

Only the Spirit Stage powerhouses were able to observe it carefully. However, their expressions instantly became serious. The golden wheel was too fierce. If it directly hits, even a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse would be instantly killed.

Once these two men started fighting, they were truly quite ferocious.

The golden light rapidly enlarged itself in Chu Qi's eyes. Facing the fierce and matchless winds Chu Qi became serious. By now, he finally knew why Mu Chen had not put him in his eyes. He was actually hiding his identity of a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master underneath the veil of a Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

But, although this measure was quite powerful, it wasn't enough for Chu Qi to admit his own defeat!

Boom!

Dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from Chu Qi's body. His eyes actually emitted jaded color at this moment. Then, a growling sound rang out from his mouth as he took a step forward.

The faint and massive shadow of a Spiritual Beast appeared as

Spiritual Energy lights gathered behind Chu Qi's back.

The Spiritual Beast was completely golden. It was as if its body was covered in a golden crystal armor. It even had a pair of majestic jaded eyes, which made the whole scene an impressive display of power.

"Is that the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast? Ranked as the 99th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. It is among of the best of the best and comparable to a Low-Level Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast!"

"So this is the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that Chu Qi has ingested? It's definitely amazing!"

As the shadow of a Spiritual Beast emerged behind Chu Qi, Chu Qi let out another growl. He clenched his hands tightly together and fired off a punch. As winds were created by his fist, the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast roared and fired a golden hoof out as well.

A brilliant, golden light shone as the winds, which were created from Chu Qi's fist, fused with the golden hoof. The fluctuations surging out exponentially increased because of this.

"Clang!"

The winds created by Chu Qi's fist were colored with a monstrous golden light as it collided forcibly with the golden wheel. Sounds of metal colliding with each other could be heard. Then, a golden light wave surged out and spread out into the distance.

"Shatter!"

Chu Qi yelled. Golden light instantly resurfaced on his arm and the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast also let out a roar towards the sky.

Clang!

Another punch from Chu Qi fiercely bombarded the golden wheel. A terrifying power poured out and finally cracks were appearing on the golden wheel. In the end, the golden wheel was forcibly destroyed underneath numerous gazes.

“Amazing!”

Many individuals secretly inhaled a mouthful of cold air. Chu Qi was definitely powerful. He actually shattered the golden wheel that could have instantly killed a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse. Even for Spirit Stage Middle Phase experts, this sort of strength could be considered among best of the best.

“Sister Ye, will Brother Mu be fine?” Mo Ling instantly became worried when he noticed how formidable Chu Qi was. This person was many times more powerful than someone like Ge Hai.

Ye Qingling also had a serious expression. She had witnessed how powerful Mu Chen’s Spiritual Array was. A couple of days ago, this very same Spiritual Array had instantly killed a Spirit Stage Initial Phase Spiritual Beast with a powerful defense. In addition, it had severely injured two other Spiritual Beasts. This sort of power was something that even a Spirit Stage Middle Phase would have to avoid. Who would have expected that Chu Qi would be this ferocious and directly destroy it head-on?

“He actually made Chu Qi utilize the power of the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast this quickly...” From a nearby mountain slope, a handsome boy muttered to himself with a serious expression.

“Mu Chen. In order to defeat you, I’ll use my strongest power. This is my respect to you!”

In the sky, Chu Qi’s jaded eyes stared sharply at Mu Chen. He immediately took a step forward, and the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast growled. Golden light gathered at both of his arms at an astonishing speed. At this moment, the Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to tremble.

“Golden Crystal Godfist!”

Chu Qi’s muffled roar resounded throughout the area. With a sluggish speed, he clenched his fists tightly together and fired off another two punches. In the instant he let out these two punches, a golden sun formed underneath his fists. The dazzling light emitting from the sun had actually covered the entire sky and caused countless eyes to sting.

“Boom!”

Chu Qi’s body trembled violently, and his face turned slightly pale. Then, a golden sun, accompanied with the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast’s roar, descended down towards Mu Chen.

Boom!

Due to the golden sun, the air began to vibrate. The mountain, which Mu Chen was standing on, also started to tremble violently and numerous boulders began to fall.

Mu Chen lifted his head, and his black eyes stared at the golden sun falling down. His gaze turned solemn when he noticed the powerful energy within the golden sun. Chu Qi’s strength was quite outstanding within the Spirit Stage Middle Phase.

“Hu.”

White air was slowly exhaled from Mu Chen’s mouth. A tinge of coldness appeared within his black eyes. He knew that many people were targeting him recently, and Chu Qi was the very first one that made his move.

In order to get rid of this endless streams of trouble, he needed to show his strength to the world.

He had to let everybody know…Even if he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road midway…Even if he had not obtained the Spiritual Road Empowerment, he was still the Mu Chen from back then!

Mu Chen slowly loosened his fist. A faint golden light appeared

on the center of his palm. Then, a golden light beam gathered and formed into a golden pagoda engraving.

Mu Chen’s eyes turned sharp as he charged towards the sky. The golden pagoda engraving, that was on the center of his palm seemed to come alive at this moment.

It was as if the golden pagoda had emerged just to suppress everything in the world.

Chapter 133 – Vajra Pagoda

Boom!

As Mu Chen charged at the attack, a golden light erupted from his palms. Then, a mysterious engraving of a golden tower started to form in his palm, and a bizarre fluctuation emerged.

“Vajra Pagoda!”

At this moment, the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen’s body seemed to have completely activated itself . The golden light flashing within his hand had instantly turned even more dazzling, giving off the appearance that it was constructed from pure gold.

As Mu Chen took flight into the air, he shot off a palm fiercely. In that instant, golden light surged through the sky, and an enormous golden hand emerged. A clear, golden tower engraving could be seen on the massive golden hand.

Bang!

The golden hand was fired off majestically and, under numerous gazes, it smashed heavily into the golden sun that was descending down towards it.

Dong!

The two powerful attacks collided fiercely with each other, and golden waves spread out furiously from the sky, causing numerous bursts of gales.

“Suppress this for me!”

Within Mu Chen’s eyes, a golden light seemed to glow. He clenched his hands tightly, and a cold cry resounded throughout the sky.

Bang!

As Mu Chen’s voice faded away, the golden tower engraving on the golden hand instantly lit up. As the engraving moved, it

seemed to have formed into a true golden pagoda and attempted to suppress the golden sun.

Under the cover of the golden hand, the powerful golden sun, that was formed by Chu Qi's Spiritual Energy, rapidly darkened. It was as if it was truly suppressed by the pagoda.

At this moment, Chu Qi's expression finally changed. The golden tower engraving on the golden palm was too bizarre. He lost connection with every part of the golden sun that was covered by the golden hand. Moreover, the sun was constantly being weakened.

"What sort of attack is this? Isn't this a little too weird!?"

Chu Qi's eyes jumped. He never thought that his strongest attack would have been stopped as well.

"Boom!"

As the golden hand descended completely onto the golden sun, the golden sun darkened and began to dissipate. Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes flashed. His hands changed, and the golden hand erupted out again. As it flashed with dazzling light, it appeared on top of Chu Qi and smacked down.

"Roar!"

Behind Chu Qi, the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast roared towards the sky as if it had detected danger approaching it. At this moment, Chu Qi hurriedly lifted his head and gritted his teeth. Spiritual Energy erupted out from his body, and a violent wind was created as his fist bombarded towards the golden palm.

Bang!

Against the fierce attack from Chu Qi, the golden palm seemed to be like a mountain within a storm and remained unmoving. The terrifying golden palm seemed to have suppressed the air and shattered the fierce winds created from Chu Qi's palm. In the end, many people witnessed a scene where the palm was smashing

directly against Chu Qi's body.

Dong!

A muffled sound resounded within the sky. Golden shockwaves spread out, and Chu Qi fell down almost instantaneously. Blood oozed out of his body and left a long trail as he fell.

Chu Qi's body created an enormous crater on the ground, and he spat out another mouthful of blood. His face was extremely pale and the Spiritual Energy that should have been circulating within his body had completely vanished.

The region instantly became silent. Anyone who did not know about Mu Chen before inhaled mouthfuls of cold air. It was evident from the look on their faces that they felt horror from this scene. After all, Chu Qi was a powerhouse at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase level. Moreover, he had ingested the Soul Essence of a Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast. With his abilities, there were barely any opponents for him in the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. However, right now, just in front of them, Chu Qi was defeated by Mu Chen, who was only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase...

There were also a few people here that came from the Spiritual Road. It was apparent that their strengths were much more powerful than the other individuals. When they watched this scene occur in front of their eyes, they managed to remain calm. However, their eyes shone, and a quiet fear ran trembling within their hearts.

They originally wanted to take advantage of Mu Chen's weak strength and trample over him. Then, by using his reputation, they would be able to increase their own fame. But this scene made them gradually realize that the boy in front of them...Although he had lost the Spiritual Road's Empowerment, was still Mu Chen, that Mu Chen, that they feared. He was able to stand out within the Spiritual Road. Thus, even in the Great Thousand World, he was outstanding as well. He would ultimately reach the same level

as the ones that stood at the peak of cultivation and shine with a dazzling light that solely belonged to him.

“Brother Mu is truly impressive.”

Mo Ling and the others stared at this scene with surprise. Their eyes were filled with worship as they watched the conclusion of the fight.

Ye Qingling also gently let out a sigh of relief. She stared at the boy that slowly descended from the sky. At this moment, this boy had turned into an exceptionally dazzling existence. Although she had never met Mu Chen before in the Spiritual Road, his name has long been known to people.

Thinking about it, the current Mu Chen might be as dazzling as he was initially when he was within the Spiritual Road.

The person that King Luo, Luo Li, likes, is truly extraordinary.

Under numerous gazes, Mu Chen landed near Chu Qi. His black eyes were slightly cold as he stared at the Chu Qi, who was completely pale. This person truly had a bit of skill. If it wasn’t for the fact that he had advanced to the Spirit Stage and obtained the mysterious Spiritual Art, Vajra Pagoda, it would have been difficult for him to defeat him today.

“It’s your win.” Chu Qi wiped the blood from his mouth and he stared complicatedly at Mu Chen. He originally thought that it would be a piece of cake for him to defeat Mu Chen using his strength as a Spirit Stage Middle Phase coupled with the power of the Soul Essence that he had ingested. But his expectations were completely off from the final result.

To make Ji Xuan, Yang Hong and the others fear him within the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen truly had something that made him impressive. Even without the Spiritual Road’s Empowerment, he was not someone that an ordinary person could shake.

A purple golden light suddenly lit up on Chu Qi’s forehead and it

shot off towards Mu Chen. Chu Qi said faintly: “This is the price I’ll pay. Take it.”

“A Rank 7 Symbol…” When the surrounding individuals noticed the purple golden symbol, they could not help but speak out. This symbol was considered to be at the pinnacle in this region. They did not know how many Spiritual Beasts Chu Qi had hunted in order to increase his symbol to this level. But unfortunately, he had lost everything with just one battle.

However, they did not react strangely when Chu Qi handed over his Symbol. After all, this situation occurs too often. Once the challenger lost, they would hand over the symbol to the victor.

Mu Chen waved his hand and the purple golden light floated on the center of his palm. He glanced at it faintly, but he did not reply back to Chu Qi.

Swish.

Sounds of winds breaking resounded suddenly nearby. A dozen figures quickly rushed over and landed beside Chu Qi as they lifted him up.

“Ohoho, Brother Mu. It was Chu Qi’s mistake this time. This symbol will be the price that he’ll pay. I hope that you would not care too much about it.” The handsome boy smiled at Mu Chen as he cupped his hands.

The surrounding men also had a complicated expression plastered on their face. It was the first time that they’ve seen Chu Qi in such a helpless position.

However, Mu Chen continued to fiddle around with the purple golden light and remained silent.

At this moment, Ye Qingling and the others also rushed over to Mu Chen’s side. They stared vigilantly at the men from the Chu Clan.

“Brother Mu…” Seeing this, the handsome boy thought that Mu

Chen would refuse to let them go. His smile instantly stiffened.

“Take it back.”

Mu Chen glanced at him for a moment and flicked his fingers. He sent the purple golden light back towards Chu Qi. At this moment, the latter was completely stunned. A Rank 7 Symbol was something that took a large amount of efforts from him. He believed that it would be tempting to anyone, thus, he never thought that Mu Chen would return it back to him.

“I hold no grudges with you. Although a Rank 7 Symbol is nice, it isn’t worth much to me.” Mu Chen replied faintly. Although the symbol on his forehead had dimmed after he had bought the “Dragon Elephant Array”, nobody would object to this. After all, it was easy for a powerful person to rapidly increase their symbol’s rank.

Chu Qi had a complex expression as he absorbed the purple golden light back into his symbol. He replied: “Thank you. The person she likes is truly outstanding.”

Once Mu Chen noticed Chu Qi’s expression of getting hurt in love, he could not help but curl his lips.

“Ohoho, thank you Brother Mu for being this generous. The Chu Clan will treat it as if we owe you a favor. If there is anything that you need us to do, feel free to ask us. We will definitely do our best to help you.” The handsome boy let out a sigh of relief once he noticed Mu Chen handing the symbol’s Spiritual Aura back to Chu Qi. He immediately cupped his hands again and smiled.

Mu Chen waved his hands and no longer wanted to talk with them. But just when he was about to turn away…

“Wait…” Ye Qingling suddenly grabbed onto Mu Chen’s arm, stared at the handsome boy and asked, “We have something that we want to trouble you about.”

“Feel free to say it.” The handsome boy was slightly startled.

“Recently, we’ve been searching for trails of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts . Since there are so many people within the Chu Clan, you should have collected a variety of information. I wonder if you have any information regarding about this in particular?” Ye Qingling asked.

“Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts?” The handsome boy and Chu Qi exchanged gazes with each other. Both of them could see the surprise within their eyes. Mu Chen and the others were actually searching for Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts? Aren’t they acting too courageous?

“Boss…” From the rear, a person walked up to the two of them. He quietly muttered: “If it’s about Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, we, indeed, have a bit of information about them. It’s over at the Valley of Ice…”

“Valley of Ice?” The handsome boy and Chu Qi’s expressions instantly turned solemn as if they recalled something.

A few days ago, someone within their group passed through a mysterious region and heard a shocking sound. In the cold and windy environment, a massive creature seemed to have appeared. The pressure emitted out from it was not something that an ordinary, High Rank Spiritual Beast would possess.

“Brother Mu, why don’t we find a place to talk about this?” The handsome boy exchanged gazes with each other. Then, he stared at Mu Chen and smiled.

Ye Qingling, who had only casually asked about this matter, had her eyes brighten up once she noticed the expression on Chu Qi’s face. Beside her, Mu Chen was also quite surprised. Based on their expressions, they really had information regarding Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts?

It was indeed a pleasant surprise.

Chapter 134 – Mysterious Spirithail Dragon

In the Ye Clan's camp, Mu Chen, Ye Qingling and Chu Qi were sitting together in the central tent.

"Brother Fang, can you tell us about the news you have gathered related to the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts yet?" Mu Chen smiled as he stared at the handsome boy beside Chu Qi. After the previous conversation, he had come to know that the latter's name was Fang Zhong, and he had also participated in the Spiritual Road. Right now, he was also at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. Since he was friends with Chu Qi, he had co-founded the Chu Clan with him.

Hearing this, Fang Zhong smiled and nodded his head. He had a good impression of Mu Chen as he did not show any arrogance even after he defeated Chu Qi. He pondered for a moment and said: "A week ago, we discovered a relatively unique region. Because the region is constantly covered by ice and snow, we call it the Valley of Ice."

While we were there, we discovered numerous precious worldly treasures. However, the strange thing was that there wasn't a single Spiritual Beast that stepped inside the region, nor were there any Spiritual Beasts that dared to seize these worldly treasures."

"Earlier, few of our men went inside to search. But just when they were planning on sneakily taking a few of the worldly treasures, a shocking sound rang out within the depths of the ice region. Then, they discovered a massive shadow of a beast that had hidden itself within the snow. But one thing is certain, the Spiritual Energy pressure emanating from it was not something that a High Rank Spiritual Beast could compare with."

Hearing this, Mu Chen was instantly lost in his own thoughts. He immediately asked: "Did you find out what Spiritual Beast it is?"

A Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast was too powerful. Even if it was the weakest of the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, it wasn't something that they could defeat. Therefore, they had to research it completely and figure out what Spiritual Beast it was and its respective rank on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking before taking action.

"After this happened, our men drew a rough outline of what they had seen based on their memories." Fang Zhong exchanged glances with Chu Qi, and the latter pulled out a leather sheet, which he handed over to Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen received it, he immediately glanced at the leather sheet. On the surface of the paper, a simple outline of a massive figure hidden within the snow was drawn. From its appearance, it seemed like a giant serpent. However, the enormous wings behind it were completely unfolded as it summoned snow.

"Although the Spiritual Beasts that are ranked in the top 80s of the Myriad Beast Record have all entered the level of being a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, I do not believe that there is a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast that is in the top 50s within the Northern Heavens World." Mu Chen slowly spoke.

Hearing this, Fang Zhong and the others nodded their head. If a Top 50 Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts was at its mature stage, they would be comparable to the Heavenly Transformation Stage or even Heavenly Completion Stage. Thus, it was probably impossible for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to control the situation if they had placed such a terrifying existence within this place.

"That being the case, we can only choose from the Spiritual Beasts that are between the 50th and 80th rank of the Myriad Beast Record. Among these Spiritual Beasts, there is only one that is shaped like a giant serpent, has wings and enjoys living in an arctic location."

Mu Chen pointed at the leather sheet and slowly muttered as he looked at Chu Qi and the others: “That is the Spiritual Beast that is ranked 73rd, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.”

“Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.” Chu Qi, Fang Zhong and Ye Qingling were all stunned.

Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. Born in arctic lands and possessing snowy wings since birth, it could summon snow and cause the lands to be in an endless winter. It would shed its skin every 100 hundred years and every time it shed its skin, its strength would increase significantly. Once it had shed its skin three times, it would enter its mature stage and its strength would be comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase powerhouse.

“Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase...”

Mu Chen smacked his lips. He truly hoped that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had not reached maturity yet. otherwise, it would be extremely difficult for them to succeed in killing it. Thinking about his past encounters, Mu Chen had borrowed the Nine Netherbird’s power and had only barely managed to deal with Liu Jingshan, who had only advanced into the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. If the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had reached Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase, it would be impossible for him to kill it even if he borrowed Nine Netherbird’s power again.

“This Mysterious Spirithail Dragon probably isn’t at its mature stage yet. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for our men to escape underneath that Spiritual Energy pressure.” Fang Zhong mused.

Mu Chen nodded. He also believed that it was unlikely for the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon to be at its mature stage. Thus, he tilted his head towards Ye Qingling. It was quite a decent target for him.

“Ohoho, Brother Mu. From your appearance, are you planning

on targeting the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon?" Fang Zhong smiled.

"I'm a bit interested in it." Mu Chen smiled and did not hide the interest he had about the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

"The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon is too powerful. You cannot defeat it." Chu Qi muttered deeply.

Since the majority of them were only at the Spirit Stage, how was it possible for them to defeat a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast that was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage?

"It's true that we cannot defeat it with us alone." Mu Chen smiled and immediately asked: "But what if we include another 100 Spirit Stage powerhouses?"

Fang Zhong and Chu Qi's expressions changed slightly.

"Within this current Northern Heavens World, there are many people. I believe that many of these people would be interested in a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast. If we were to spread the news about the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon out, there should be many people who would flock over there."

"No matter how powerful a Mysterious Spirithail Dragon is, it would be powerless against that many individuals. Once that happens, we could take advantage of the crisis to seize the Soul Essence. That is our chance." Mu Chen said faintly.

"With that many individuals, it's would no longer be certain that you would be able to obtain the Soul Essence, even if we managed to defeat the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon." Fang Zhong replied slowly.

"But at least there's a chance, right?" Mu Chen smiled.

Fang Zhong and Chu Qi both turned silent. It was true. At least they would have a chance of success.

"Thank you both of you for telling me such important

information.” Mu Chen cupped his hands to the two of them. Without them bringing him the news about a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, it might have taken a bit of time before they managed to find one.

Fang Zhong and Chu Qi exchanged gazes with each other. The former suddenly let out a cough and smiled: “Brother Mu, we are also quite interested in your proposal. If it’s possible, can you include us in this?”

“Regarding the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence, we do not truly have a desire for it. After all, the two of us had already ingested a Soul Essence. Although we could ingest it once again, it is too troubling. Therefore, we would not plan on snatching this.”

“However, there are many precious, worldly treasures within the Valley of Ice. If there’s an opportunity, we would also like to obtain a few materials from the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon’s body. After all, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon’s body is an amazing material for creating Spiritual Artifacts. In the future, we might find a Spiritual Blacksmith to create a powerful Spiritual Artifact for us.”

Hearing this, Mu Chen communicated with Ye Qingling using their gazes. Then, he smiled and nodded: “We eagerly welcome you. Since it’s like this, let us cooperate once.”

The information was brought over by Chu Qi and the others. Moreover, they weren’t weak either. If they were to cooperate, it would definitely benefit them.

“What are you planning to do next, Brother Mu?” Seeing Mu Chen give them his approval, Fang Zhang and even Chu Qi smiled. A hint of eagerness filled their eyes. Although the two of them were quite mature, they were still young. Thus, they liked to do things that would stimulate them. A battle against a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast was something that they were deeply interested in.

“My plan is actually quite simple. We will first take a group of

people to the Valley of Ice to explore the terrain. At the same time, we will send a few men to spread information that a Mysterious Spirithail Dragon is within the Valley of Ice. I believe that the Valley of Ice would be quite bustling within two days. We would not need to guide the others and could just wait for the developments to occur. After all, there will definitely be someone who would be willing to be the first wave of attack." Mu Chen smiled.

Fang Zhong and Chu Qi nodded their heads. It was indeed true that there was no need of any special plans. After all, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was too powerful. Probably, there was nobody within the Northern Heavens World who could defeat it by themselves. In that case, they could only rely on numbers. As for who would obtain the Soul Essence, it would depend on their own abilities.

"Since it's like this, we will take our leave first. Tomorrow, I will bring our men over and we'll set out together." Fang Zhong and Chu Qi both stood up as they spoke.

Mu Chen nodded and watched as the two departed the tent.

"We should also begin our preparations. About this trip towards the Valley of Ice, we should only bring men who possess the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Otherwise, it would be dangerous since others do not possess sufficient strength to protect themselves." Mu Chen said as he turned towards Ye Qingling.

Ye Qingling nodded and immediately headed out in order to secretly arrange her men.

On the other hand, Mu Chen stretched his waist slightly while a hint of interest emerged within his black eyes. Ohoho, Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. You are quite an excellent target. This time, you'll probably be tormented...

On the following day, Fang Zhong and Chu Qi arrived on time

and brought approximately 30 men over. All of these men possessed the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. It was evident that they understood that it was not something that they could complete with just numbers.

The Ye Clan's strength wasn't something that could compare with the Chu Clan. They only had approximately a dozen Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase members, which wasn't even half of the Chu Clan. However, with Mu Chen leading them, the Chu Clan members did not dare to underestimate them.

Mu Chen discussed with Fang Zhong briefly. Then, he beckoned Mo Ling over and said: "After we depart, you should secretly spread the information out based on what I had said. Be careful to make sure that nobody finds out that we spread this information out deliberately."

"Brother Mu, relax." Mo Ling nodded his head. He was filled with regret as he could not follow Mu Chen and the others to meet a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast. However, he understood that he would only drag them down if he went without sufficient strength.

Seeing this, Mu Chen said no more and exchanged glances with Fang Zhong. He waved his hand: "Let's go."

...

The Valley of Ice was located in a forest that was situated at the northwest of the interior of the Northern Heavens World. This place was far too remote. Thus, it was rare for individuals to head over there even if the Northern Heavens World was filled with people.

In order for Mu Chen and the others to arrive at this location, it took them an entire day. Numerous Spiritual Beasts would bother them along the way. Fortunately, the group was filled with experts. Thus, no causalities occurred even though their pace was slowed.

On the second day's afternoon, Mu Chen and the others gradually slowed down their pace. This is because they detected that the temperature was dropping at an alarming rate.

They exchanged gazes with each other and their spirits shook. It seemed that they weren't far away from their destination.

As the group entered a mountain, they looked around and were completely shocked. The originally lush forest had suddenly disappeared. Instead, what had replaced it was a world filled with snow. Cold snowflakes mixed with whistling winds descended on this world of ice. A cry rang out from from the air around them.

"So this is the Valley of Ice..."

Mu Chen stared at the world of ice that was hidden by the mountain and let out a sigh. Just when he was about to speak, an ancient, giant beast's roar rang out from the depths of the world of ice.

Bang!

At this moment, the snow descending was shaken and spread apart. An amazing chill emitted from the gap.

Mu Chen's body was like a boulder as he stood on the peak of the mountain. However, his eyes remained fixed on the depths of the world of ice. Under the blizzard, he could vaguely see a massive creature summoning snow.

Although there was still quite a bit of distance to the massive creature, its Spiritual Energy pressure had already spread all the way to this place.

Within Mu Chen's black eyes, a hint of passion surged. They had predicted it correctly. The massive creature that was hidden within the world of ice was indeed the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, ranked 73rd on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Rankings!

Chapter 135 – Formation

On the top of the mountain, everybody could feel the Spiritual Energy pressure emitting from the depths of the frozen world. Their expressions shook a little bit, and a hint of eagerness surged within their eyes. They had indeed correctly identified their target.

Mu Chen gradually retracted his gaze from the frozen world and whispered, “Let’s go. We’ll sneak in. However, you shouldn’t touch any of the worldly treasures. We’ll find a place and wait until the area starts to get lively.”

“Yes.” Everybody immediately nodded once they heard this.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen rushed out and charged into the frozen world, facing the blizzard. Behind him, dozens of figures followed quietly.

As they entered the depths of this World of Ice, Mu Chen and the others were gradually able to feel the chill of this world. Although the Spiritual Aura was quite abundant and numerous worldly treasures, there weren’t any traces of Spiritual Beasts. Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts all possessed an extremely strong respect of territorial rights. Thus, ordinary Spiritual Beasts would not dare to enter the territory that a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts was occupying.

After Mu Chen and the others had quietly entered the World of Ice, they were able to clearly feel the formidable Spiritual Energy pressure as they approached the depths of this world. A tremendous roar rang out from the blizzard and would shake the world from time to time.

But against such a spectacle, Mu Chen was able to remain calm. After all, he had once experienced the terror of the Nine Netherbird. The scene of black flames surging through the sky in order to fight against the heavens was deeply engraved in his mind.

Compared to the Nine Netherbird, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was insignificant. This was because, even if the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was in its mature stage, it was ultimately still only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Even if it had experienced numerous good fortunes and opportunities, it was impossible for it to enter the Myriad Beast Record's Heaven Ranking and step into the realms of a Divine Beast.

On the other hand, the Nine Netherbird had the ability to do so. As long as it broke through the shackles of world, it would be able to shed its spiritual form and become a Divine Beast. It would then become a powerful existence within the entire Great Thousand World.

"Okay, we can't move forward anymore."

Mu Chen suddenly stopped and rushed into a hidden crack in the mountain. This crack was situated just in between two mountain peaks. Thus, they had a wide view of the outside world. If they looked outside, they would be able to see the depths of the World of Ice.

Once they arrived at this location, the pressure of the Spiritual Energy had also become increasingly powerful. If they were to head forward any further, it was likely that they would be discovered by the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. With just the men they had here, they wouldn't be its opponent; thus they did not want to risk it.

Chu Qi, Ye Qingling and the others all nodded their heads. All of them were aware of the formidable Spiritual Energy pressure as well.

"Next up, we will wait until this location gets lively." Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the depths of the World of Ice as he muttered.

At an unknown time, a rumor suddenly began to spread out within a region inside the Northern Heaven World's interior. It

was said that there was a World of Ice hidden behind numerous mountains to the west. At that location, there were a few people that discovered a heavily wounded Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. Furthermore, there were numerous worldly treasures within the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's domain.

Like a drop of water landing on a calm pool and causing ripples, this rumor quickly spread out.

"It's said that there's a heavily injured Mysterious Spirithail Dragon within the Valley of Ice!"

"The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon seems to be guarding a worldly treasure known as the Ice Deity Tree. If a Spirit Stage powerhouse was to obtain the Ice Deity Fruit from the tree, they would immediately advance!"

"Right now, there are many forces and powerhouses heading towards the Valley of Ice. Shall we also head there for fun?"

All sorts of rumors spread out at an alarming rate. The entire region became restless, and numerous individuals headed quickly towards the direction of the Valley of Ice.

Once this information was passed to a few extremely powerful forces and powerhouses, they stared into distance with a strange gaze. A Mysterious Spirithail Dragon...

A Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast of this level was enough to let their greed cloud their hearts.

"Gather everybody. We're heading towards the Valley of Ice!"

Orders were issued quickly, and many powerhouses also secretly took their leave as they headed out towards the Valley of Ice. That region had undoubtedly become extremely popular in an instant...

...

Valley of Ice.

Within the crack of the mountain, Mu Chen was sitting cross-

legged calmly. Behind him, Ye Qingling, Chu Qi and the others were also doing the same. Dense Spiritual Energy was being emitted from them in order to resist against the cold winds that blew in.

“It seems that the information about this location has already been spread.” Mu Chen suddenly spoke. He was able to detect numerous Spiritual Energy fluctuations which had entered this barren tundra in just one short day.

Chu Qi and the others also nodded their heads, as they had also detected them.

“However, there still aren’t enough men.” Mu Chen smiled as he muttered this to himself.

Time quietly flew by, and another day had come to pass.

On the second day, the originally quite World of Ice had turned into a noisy location at an extremely rapid speed. Numerous figures had arrived in this barren wasteland and the noise emitted from them seemed to have stopped the endless blizzard.

A steady stream of men entered the depths of the World of Ice. From their hidden spot, Mu Chen and the others were able to see countless, powerful figures moving around in the blizzard. Their auras weren’t weak at all.

For the men that entered the depths of the World of Ice, they noticed that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was quite familiar to them. However, they were not idiots. They clearly knew the difference between the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and themselves. They could only rely on numbers in order to defeat this powerful existence. If any of them were to rashly rush in, they would definitely be killed instantly by the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

Thus, many of the men would stay within the boundaries of the World of Ice as they waited for more people to gather.

This wait only took one afternoon. When it occurred, Mu Chen and the others were slightly shocked, as they stared at the approaching figures that covered the entire sky.

From a rough glance, the amount of people gathered had exceeded 10,000. Moreover, there were at least hundreds of Spirit Stage powerhouses among them. These numbers had clearly surpassed the number of Spirit Stage powerhouses within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

“As expected of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy…”

Mu Chen could not help but sigh. This was only a portion of the men within the Northern Heavens World. Yet, the formation was already quite terrifying. Just how terrifying would it be once every single one had been included in the formation? The attractiveness of the Five Great Academies was truly shocking.

“Next up, let’s wait for the show to begin.”

Mu Chen spat out a mouthful of cold white air. A smile filled with expectations had emerged on his handsome face. The commotion was quite enormous now. Thus, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon would soon be alerted. When that happened, it would definitely be furious.

“Once we enter the fight, it would definitely be a spectacular sight.” Fang Zhong exclaimed. It was hard to imagine that this scene was all secretly caused by them.

“When do we begin?” Chu Qi asked.

“There’s no need to be impatient.” Mu Chen shook his head and replied: “We aren’t the only ones that are planning to take advantage of the others. Moreover, there are many powerhouses that appeared at this location. Many of them will have the same idea as us.”

Chu Qi and the others nodded. Although a third party would definitely benefit from the tussle between two others, there were

too many third parties at this location. Thus, these third parties would definitely fight against themselves as well.

Human figures emerged everywhere within the World of Ice. The noisy voices rang out and dissipated the majority of the raging blizzard.

As the people gathering at this location increased, nobody dared to take the initiative to enter the depths of the barren ice land. They were all waiting for the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon to emerge from the depths.

And they did not have to wait long. A thunderous roar rang out, and a feeling of blind fury and fierceness could be sensed within the roar. It was evident that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had detected the human insects that had stepped inside its territory after it had been awakened from its slumber.

Roar!

This roar formed a sonic impact as it spread out. It caused the blizzard to descend down like numerous razor sharp blades. A few unlucky individuals were going to be directly cut by these sharp blades and had to immediately protect their bodies with Spiritual Energy.

“Be careful everybody. The beast is coming out!” A roar filled with Spiritual Energy rumbled.

Bang.

The ice lands seemed to tremble at this moment. The snow suddenly blew into the depths of the World of Ice, and everybody could see a massive blizzard sweeping over from the depths.

The display of strength was extremely shocking.

The blizzard was exceedingly swift, and in a few seconds, it appeared in front of countless individuals. Afterwards, the blizzard was ripped apart as a pair of enormous wings covered with ice suddenly unfolded itself from within.

Roar!

An abnormally powerful Spiritual Energy rushed out together with the roar and a formidable Spiritual Energy pressure spread throughout the region.

Boom!

The blizzard directly exploded, and snow descended down from the sky. A massive monster emerged within the snow, and at this moment, numerous individuals' eyes narrowed.

It was an exceptionally beautiful creature. Its body was that of a dragon while a dazzling, glistening ice armor covered it. Cold breaths blew out from its hideous, gigantic mouth and froze the surrounding air. A pair of giant, blue eyes stared coldly at the numerous insects in front of it.

At the same time, it slowly flapped its wings, causing wind and snow to emerge.

The originally noisy environment had instantly become silent. Even when many individuals were prepared psychologically, shock still filled their hearts when they personally witnessed the might of the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast in front of them.

"Is this the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon?"

Mu Chen also stared at the massive creature that occupied the space. His face turned serious, but a hint of delight flashed through his eyes. This is because he noticed that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was still only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase.

If it was only at this level, it was something that they could deal with.

"The show finally begins."

As Mu Chen murmured to himself, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon let out a furious roar. It opened its gigantic mouth, and an icy torrent rushed out directly towards the crowd of people.

The Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast had finally made its move.

Chapter 136 – Ten Thousand Men Slaying Spirithail Dragon

Boom!

The white, icy torrent descended down towards the crowd like a snow-white waterfall; at the same time, an extremely formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out.

Ah!

Shrill screams resounded, but strangely no blood had been shed. The ones that were hit by the rushing torrent instantly erupted into numerous light beams that brought them away.

Mu Chen was slightly startled as he watched this scene occur before his very eyes. He was able to clearly see that the symbols of the ones that were hit were destroyed and formed into the light beams which soon disappeared.

“So the symbols will protect people who would otherwise be killed. Once it shatters, it executes a mysterious Spiritual Energy and directly transmit them away. But in this case, they are considered eliminated from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.” Ye Qingling muttered beside Mu Chen.

Mu Chen nodded. So the symbol actually had this sort of protective measure. Although they were able to use Spiritual Energy within the Northern Heavens World’s trial, the ruthlessness could not compare with those of the Spiritual Road. In the Spiritual Road, nobody would care about whether you lived or not. Aside from yourself, there was nobody you could rely on.

“Ohoho, the participants of the Spiritual Road are selected through numerous screenings. If they did not use this sort of method in the Northern Heavens World, at least half of the participants would be dead. Even the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wouldn’t be able to pay that kind of price.” Fang Zhong

smiled.

Although the Five Great Academies were all immensely powerful and were well-known throughout the entire Great Thousand World, they would recruit a lot of students. Thus, if half of them were dead, the parents of these students would probably be furious.

“Even though they won’t die, the price that they’ve paid for being eliminated is severe. Just now, there were two unlucky Spirit Stage powerhouses among the ones that were hit.” Chu Qi also muttered. With this sort of strength, they would have had a certain amount of ability. Based on ordinary situations, it wouldn’t have been difficult for them to raise their symbol’s rank to Rank 5. Unfortunately for them, they were instantly eliminated by the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

“Let’s continue to watch. Right now, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon is in its peak state and would be a monstrous torrent against the people that came.” Mu Chen smiled. He raised his head and stared at the massive creature in the distant sky.

It was evident that the figures, who were on top of the trees, were shocked by the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon’s attack. Only after this attack, they had understood that, although they had numbers, a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast was something at the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

This strength was enough to instantly kill any one of them!

However, there were some capable individuals within the group and they hurriedly shouted out in response to the appearance of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. “All the Spirit Stage powerhouses should attack together. The Spiritual Rotation Stage should retreat and perform concentrated bombardments with Spiritual Energy!”

And what’s more, the people, who obtained an entry for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, were all individuals with a

little bit of ability. Once they heard these shouts, they acted decisively, and numerous figures rushed out into the sky as dense Spiritual Energy erupted out.

A hundred or so figures appeared in front of the group and emitted out a powerful, rumbling Spiritual Energy.

“Roar!”

In the sky, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon stared at these humans, and a hint of viciousness flashed through its icy-blue eyes. It immediately roared again, and an icy torrent erupted out from its mouth once again.

“Attack!”

The hundred Spirit Stage powerhouses all shouted out. A variety of attacks then exploded out at the same time. The sky became a dazzling spectacle of light as the rumbling Spiritual Energy attacks collided against the overwhelming ice torrent.

Bang!

The formidable attacks collided heavily with each other in the sky, and a massive shockwave erupted out. A gorge was carved into the ground that had once been covered with snow and ice.

As the blizzard swept across the area, the attacks from both sides gradually faded away. The attack from the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was actually blocked by these hundred Spirit Stage powerhouses.

“It’s truly amazing when there are so many people.” Mu Chen could not help but praise once he witnessed this. With a hundred Spirit Stage powerhouses joining forces together, they were able to cause trouble for an existence such as the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

“Attack!”

In the sky, another cry rang out. In the rear, the thousands of

Spiritual Rotation Stage also let out a cry together.

Boom!

Thousands of Spiritual Energy attacks instantly swept out from them. Underneath this attack, even the blizzard that covered the sky was blown away. Numerous lights pierced through the sky and landed on the massive body of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

Dong!

A deep sound rang out constantly. Against such an attack, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was actually forcibly blown back a few hundred meters. On the surface of its body, traces of scars appeared on its glistening ice armor.

Roar!

A bit of pain surged through its body and thus angered the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. It let out a furious roar and started to flap its massive and snowy wings.

A violent Spiritual Energy erupted out, and ice started to condense at an alarming speed. In a few seconds, countless ice spears had formed. Every single one of these ice spears emitted out a Spiritual Energy fluctuation that caused everyone to jump.

It was evident that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was truly furious.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon flapped its giant wings, and countless ice spears rushed out instantly. They ripped through the air and descended down towards the figures that had attacked it.

“Boom!”

Against this terrifying offensive, the Spirit Stage powerhouses’ faces instantly changed. They hurriedly pushed the Spiritual Energy to the limits and countered with numerous devastating Spiritual Energy attacks.

Bang Bang Bang!

As countless ice spears rushed through the sky, Spiritual Energy would charge over to counter it. This scene was exceeding spectacular and magnificent.

Chi Chi!

Unfortunately, in this such of terrifying collision, there were still a few unlucky individuals that had been hit by the ice spears. The symbol on their foreheads instantly shattered and turned into a light that transmitted them away.

The entire world was completely covered with terrifying collisions as shockwaves emitted out.

Mu Chen and the others stood at the crack of the mountain as they watched the horrifying collisions that covered the entire sky. A hint of shock filled their eyes. This scene was truly like a small-sized war.

A war between humans and a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast.

Mu Chen stepped forward and his hand touched the mountain cliff that was covered with snow. However, his gaze remained fixed at the horrifying collisions that occured in the distance.

“Eh?”

Suddenly, Mu Chen frowned. He tilted his head and stared at his own hand that touched the mountain cliff. He discovered that the snow at this location was showing signs of melting. In addition, a hint of heat penetrated through the snow.

“Could the large battle have triggered some sort of change?”

Mu Chen stared at the slowly melting snow and frowned. However, he did not think much about it as he focused his gaze back onto the battle.

The collision between the two sides continued. Every single attack of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was blocked by the

crowd using the advantage of numbers. Although there was quite a bit of loss, they had still managed to suppress the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

This was a battle of endurance. Although the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's strength far surpassed everybody on the scene, but if it was based purely on Spiritual Energy density, it alone wasn't enough to compete with everybody once they joined forces.

As long as the stalemate persisted, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon would be at a disadvantage. Furthermore, it was able to detect that there were still some cunning and powerful humans that were hiding at certain locations. It was evident that they were waiting for the moment when it would go into a tired state.

In addition, it could not consume too much energy, otherwise...

Roar!

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon issued out a roar and flapped its wings as the glistening ice armor on its body emitted out a burst of intense light. It was actually charging head-on against the Spiritual Energy attacks.

Boom!

It collided with the avalanche of attacks as it charged into the crowd of humans. Then, it flapped its wings as its massive tail swept across the sky and crushed the mountains.

Chi Chi!

Countless individuals burst into light beams as they were hit. Their symbols shattered and transmitted them away.

The crowd hurriedly scattered and signs of people rushing away emerged throughout the mountain.

"All-out attack everyone, let's slay this beast!"

"Kill!"

"Let's attack together!"

Various cries resounded throughout the sky. As their friends had their symbols shattered, numerous people's eyes turned red. They pushed their Spiritual Energy to the limits and started a bombardment on the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's massive body.

Both sides were completely furious.

Mu Chen could not help but grin. It was lucky that the people here had the protection of the symbol. Otherwise, this place would have turned into a bloody river already.

"The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon has used up a lot of Spiritual Energy." Ye Qingling stared at the massive creature in the sky. After such a battle, the latter's ice armor had shattered in many locations. It also started to become dim and it was evident that it had consumed enormous Spiritual Energy.

"Everybody should pay attention. We'll wait until Mysterious Spirithail Dragon consumes a bit more energy or when the other hidden individuals start taking action..." Mu Chen glanced at them quickly. The hidden individuals were definitely powerful. If they were to store their power and join forces against the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, it would definitely cause a severe injury to the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

"Yes!"

Ye Qingling, Fang Zhong, Chu Qi and the others all nodded their heads. They all began circulating the Spiritual Energy within their bodies.

Mu Chen also started to circulate his Spiritual Energy. However, his gaze suddenly turned serious, and he gripped the mountain cliff tightly. He discovered that the heat was become more and more intense. It did not seem that it was caused by the battle.

Mu Chen's eyes flashed. He hurriedly squatted down and swept his sleeves. The snow spread out and quickly melted away. These rocks were actually somewhat hot.

“What is it?” Chu Qi and the others noticed Mu Chen’s strange action and was stunned.

Mu Chen frowned and felt something was wrong. It seemed that a powerful surge of heat was rapidly approaching this location from underground.

“Something’s wrong. Let’s not make any moves right now.” Mu Chen said in a deep voice.

Ye Qingling and the others exchanged gazes. It was evident that they had some doubts. However, they nodded immediately once they noticed Mu Chen’s serious expression.

Mu Chen touched the hot rocks and stared into the snowy white landscape. Shortly after, his eyes narrowed. This is because that area had suddenly turned completely red.

Boom!

The earth suddenly shook as if an earthquake has occurred and it suddenly cracked open. Then, numerous lava pillars erupted out into the sky.

Bellow!

A deep cry rang out accompanied with the erupting lava pillars. It resounded through the entire sky and a Spiritual Energy pressure that was in no way inferior to the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was emitted out.

Mu Chen’s expression instantly turned solemn. A hint of shock flashed through his eyes.

Underneath this earth, there had actually been another Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast?

Chapter 137 – Geocentric Flame Japalura

Reded, fiery magma erupted into the skies and descended down like a rain of fire. As it made contact with the blizzard, layers of mist formed as the snow sublimated away.

“What’s going on?!”

“What is that?!”

“It seems like something came out from underground!”

This sudden change of events startled everyone at the scene. They immediately turned their gaze towards the ground that had cracked open. At that location, the domain of ice was rapidly melting and was changing into a somewhat dark-red color. The temperature had also rapidly increased.

“What’s happening?” In the crack of the mountain, Ye Qingling and the others exclaimed in surprise.

“It seems that our intelligence was probably wrong. It wasn’t just one Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast located here; there were two of them.” Mu Chen said in a deep voice.

The expressions of Chu Qi and the others changed instantly. This situation was completely beyond their expectations.

“This Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast was probably hidden underneath the ground, so it’s no wonder that we could not detect it.”

Mu Chen’s eyes stared sharply at the newly-sundered ground, which was covered with overflowing magma, and replied: “It probably detected the battle above early on. However, it remained hidden as it probably wanted to wait for both sides to run out of Spiritual Energy. Heh, this beast is quite calculating.”

Chu Qi and the others exchanged gazes with each other. It seemed that they hadn’t been the only ones that wanted to be the

third dog that seized the bone; even this Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast wanted to be it. But it had to be said that, for Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, their intelligence wasn't any lower to that of a human's.

"What should we do now?" Fang Zhong smiled bitterly. If it was only one Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, they had a chance by relying on numbers. However, once the second had appeared, that chance had completely vanished. Even if everybody joined forces together, they weren't an opponent for these two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

"Let's wait for a while."

Mu Chen's gaze twinkled as he spoke: "Although they are both Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, it isn't guaranteed that they'll work together. From the looks of it, they seemed to have a hostile relationship with each other. Thus, the primary target for the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast within the magma is probably the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon."

"That's right. These Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts probably want to devour each other as well. This way, they would be able to obtain a much more powerful bloodline as well as Spiritual Energy. It would be extremely beneficial for their evolutions. Adding all that, they definitely must be enemies!" Fang Zhong's eyes flashed as he responded.

Ye Qingling exchanged gazes with the rest of the group and noticed the delight within their eyes. If that was the case, wouldn't they have a bigger chance of obtaining a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence?

However, Mu Chen wasn't as optimistic as them. The current situation was quite unique. It was best to wait and watch the situation before making a judgement.

"Let's watch for a while."

He replied before he turned his gaze back towards the distant battlefield. At that location, magma kept overflowing out from the crack on the ground. From underneath the icy lands, a massive shadow emerged.

The shadow approached the surface rapidly, and, with an explosive noise, it crashed against the icy lands. The ground shook and magma surged out. Then, a massive creature jumped out of the magma while emitting a powerful Spiritual Energy pressure.

Boom.

While the ground trembled, numerous gazes shot over towards the magma. From the magma, they noticed a massive creature of flame slowly crawling out from it.

This flame creature was like a lizard. Its entire body was covered with raging flames, and it seemed as if magma was flowing out from the surface of his body. The semi-liquid magma constantly dropped and melted the snow and ice.

On its hideous head, there was a flame horn that was condensed from magma. It emitted out a terrifying temperature that almost caused the air to ignite.

“This is...” Countless gazes focused onto the creature that had appeared from the magma and immediately narrowed.

“Geocentric Flame Japalura [1. A type of lizard. More info here: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Japalura], Ranked 70th on the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking.” Mu Chen slowly spoke as he stared at the massive creature.

Ye Qingling and the others’ gazes immediately turned serious. This Geocentric Flame Japalura was in no way inferior to the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

“Oh my god! It’s another Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast!”

“What should we do?!”

“Retreat, retreat!”

It was apparent that the others had also recognized the massive creature that carried such a formidable Spiritual Energy pressure. They immediately let out screams filled with horror.

Panic quickly spread throughout the crowd. If it was like earlier when they were fighting against Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, they could still win the battle by relying on numbers. But currently, they were in complete despair. Two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were enough to slaughter them all.

In the mountain plains, people began to retreat in panic. The fighting intent that they had earlier no longer existed.

Bellow!

The ground trembled as the Geocentric Flame Japalura stepped out of the magma. It waved its enormous tail that was covered in flowing magma and completely obliterated a mountain. Accompanied with magma, the mountain boulders instantly crushed dozens of individuals, who immediately turned into beams of light.

Once the crowd noticed the ferociousness of the Geocentric Flame Japalura, fear completely filled their hearts and they hurriedly retreated.

At this moment, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon stopped its attack on the crowd. Instead, its icy-blue eyes focused on the Geocentric Flame Japalura. It knew that its rival would appear.

“Roar!”

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon issued out a roar at the Geocentric Flame Japalura. Spiritual Energy swept out and a blizzard descended down onto the latter.

However, the latter completely ignored the blizzard. Magma continued to flow out of its body, and the icy blades that could instantly kill Spirit Stage powerhouses melted before they could

touch the Geocentric Flame Japalura's body.

Swish!

Seeing that it could not stop the Geocentric Flame Japalura's movements, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon immediately became furious. Its hideous mouth opened and let loose an icy torrent. Every area that the torrent passed through immediately became frozen.

With this, the Geocentric Flame Japalura finally stopped. The flame horn on its head, that had magma flowing out, suddenly shone. Then, a massive magma pillar exploded out and collided fiercely against the icy torrent.

Boom!

As the ice bombarded against the magma, the entire ground seemed to have trembled. Powerful Spiritual Energy shock waves instantly destroyed the frozen ice on the ground.

The ones that were planning on retreating were immediately stunned. Why did these two Spiritual Beast start fighting against each other?

"Roar!"

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon roared out furiously. It flapped its wings, and its massive body became like a meteor made of ice. It then collided directly against the Geocentric Flame Japalura. Since the bodies of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were extremely powerful, this kind of attack was their most powerful and lethal weapon that they possessed.

Against the charging attack of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, the Geocentric Flame Japalura did not retreat. Instead, magma covered its limbs, and it charged headfirst against the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

Bang!

As the two massive creatures collided in midair, ice and magma sprayed throughout the sky. At this moment, the sky seemed to have trembled.

The two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were fighting against each other while being entangled. Icy torrents and magma furiously eroded against the two Spiritual Beasts.

At this moment, the World of Ice was completely ruined. The magma and icy torrents brought forth devastating roars.

Everybody had stopped their attacks and watched in shock at the two massive creatures. Because of their existences, the ground trembled nonstop as fresh blood landed and tainted the snowy white lands.

“The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon seems to be at a disadvantage...” Ye Qingling suddenly spoke as she watched the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts battle against each other.

“The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had already consumed a large amount of Spiritual Energy previously and suffered numerous injuries. Moreover, the Geocentric Flame Japalura was extremely cunning and hid itself. It seems to have stored up power before it commenced its attack. Thus, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon can’t really be considered its opponent.” Mu Chen slowly responded.

“Then what should we do?”

“Wait!”

Mu Chen said in a low voice: “Although the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon is at a disadvantage, their strengths are still relatively the same. The Geocentric Flame Jalapura would have to pay a certain price in order to kill it. When that happens, it would be the best opportunity for us to take action.”

Chu Qi and the others nodded. Perhaps many people were waiting for this moment to occur. After all, the value of two

Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were too tempting.

“Rumble!”

The earth trembled and the two massive creatures tumbled around crazily as they bit each other. Compared to before, the scene was many times more tragic and horrifying. However, everybody was able to perceive that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was gradually weakening as time passed. By then it had suffered many severe injuries.

“Roar!”

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon seemed to be aware of its situation. Thus, it suddenly growled and forcibly broke away from the Geocentric Flame Jalapura. Then, it flapped its wings and flew off to the distance while fresh blood flowed out of its body.

It was actually planning to escape.

Bellow!.

The Geocentric Flame Jalapura also issued out a roar. This was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity. How could it let the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon escape! It immediately stomped the ground and turned into a magma-like light and chased the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

The two massive creatures disappeared into the distance as they left this ruined area.

“Chase! Do not let them get away!”

“Two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. One would probably increase his symbol's rank directly to Rank 8!”

“If I am able to obtain one of their Soul Essences and successfully ingest it, it would be enough for me to defeat a Spirit Stage Middle Phase with the strength of a Spirit Stage Initial Phase!”

“Chase!”

Everybody stared at the already distant Heaven Rank Spiritual

Beasts and immediately recovered from the shock. Many people instantly rushed after the massive creatures.

Swish!

Sounds of wind breaking resounded out. The people that were hidden in the shadows weren't able to endure it any long and rushed out as well.

"Let's go!"

Mu Chen also waved his hands and was the first one to rush out of the crack. The situation in front of them was the perfect opportunity. They could not give up on this chance.

Hearing this, Ye Qingling and the others quickly followed.

Mu Chen and the others were situated at the front of the crowd. He lifted his head and his black eyes stared at the two massive creatures in the distance. A hint of eagerness filled his eyes.

But while Mu Chen was chasing after the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, he did not realize that, within the mandala flower in his aura sea, the Nine Netherbird had suddenly opened its eyes. Black flames surged, and its gaze brightened up.

"Is it a Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and a Geocentric Flame Japalura?"

Chapter 138 – Snatch

The current location was a peaceful and harmonious lush forest. This land had accumulated huge amount of vitality as time passed. Occasionally, roars from Spiritual Beasts would resound out from the depths of the mountain.

Dong!

However, in an instant, this peace was destroyed. The ground had started to tremble, and numerous Spiritual Beasts quickly fled from the mountains. All of them glanced behind them in fear as an fiery-red and icy-blue color rapidly approached from the skies.

They could vaguely see two massive creatures fighting against each other viciously inside two colored balls of energy. Powerful surges of Spiritual Energy swept out like gales, and the entire forest was being destroyed at a rapid speed.

Roar!

As the two massive creatures fought against each other bitterly, fresh blood constantly oozed out of their wounds. The entire world seemed to be tainted by the scent of this blood. Even the Spiritual Beasts that would normally have entered a berserk state when they smelled the blood were all shivering in fear and they did not show any vicious aura.

All of them could sense the powerful Spiritual Energy pressure that was being emitted from the bodies of the two massive creatures.

As the two massive creatures were fighting, numerous figures were trailing them. Their gazes were filled with shock as they noticed the damage caused by the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

“As expected from a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast,” Ye Qingling exclaimed. She immediately stared in front and said: “The injuries

of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon are becoming graver with each exchange. It probably wouldn't be able to sustain itself much longer."

Mu Chen nodded. He also detected the weakening of Spiritual Energy fluctuations being emitted from the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

"However, there are many people following behind, and most of them possess the strength of a Spirit Stage." Mu Chen glanced behind for a moment. To the rear, there were many figures heading in the same direction as they were. Almost all of them were at the Spirit Stage and were quite powerful. Furthermore, he could detect that there were a few that had originally hid their strength extremely well, yet now they emitted a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation.

It seemed that all of these individuals would be difficult to deal with.

"Mu Chen."

Just when Mu Chen was thinking about this, his expression suddenly turned serious. This was because a thought was conveyed directly to his mind. It was from the Nine Netherbird!

A hint of surprise flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. It was evident that he had not expected the Nine Netherbird to contact him by itself.

"What is it?" Mu Chen quickly asked.

"The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon would probably play its trump card against the Geocentric Flame Japalura in a while. When that happens, they would be gravely injured. At that moment, you should reduce the suppression you're exerting on me using the mandala flower. I'll come out and eliminate the two of them!" The Nine Netherbird's thought was sent over.

"You're going to take action?" Mu Chen was shocked. This was

something uncommon, the Nine Netherbird was actually going to take the initiative to help him?

“Hmph, if I help, I will naturally need to obtain some sort of benefit-Okay, I won’t talk to you about it now. However, it’s unlikely you will succeed unless I help.”

The Nine Netherbird grunted: “After I kill them, you must immediately extract the Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essence and place their bodies within your Mustard Seed Bracelet. Then, you should immediately flee. After all, there are a few troublesome individuals in that ant colony behind you, so you must leave that location as quickly as possible.”

“Okay.”

Mu Chen did not hesitate at all. This is because what the Nine Netherbird had said was correct. This matter had attracted too many people over and had even surpassed his own expectations. If he had help from the Nine Netherbird, it would be easier to deal with this current situation.

“Everyone. Even if anything strange happens to me, you don’t have to worry about it. Perhaps, all of you can head back in advance. I’ll come back soon.” Mu Chen lifted his head and said to Ye Qingling and the others.

Ye Qingling and the others were stunned by Mu Chen’s words. A hint of confusion filled their eyes. However, they nodded immediately. It was best not to question Mu Chen right now.

Mu Chen turned his gaze forward. In front of him, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon’s Spiritual Energy was rapidly declining, and a hint of powerlessness was also present in its roars.

Roar!

The earth suddenly trembled, and the temperature suddenly decreased. Snowflakes actually emerged out of thin air and descended to the ground. At this moment, the Mysterious

Spirithail Dragon's originally powerless roars suddenly become urgent. The Spiritual Aura within the world suddenly showed signs of resistance.

"It really is desperate now." Mu Chen could feel the change occurring in the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. His eyes flickered, and he immediately began to circulate his Spiritual Energy quietly.

Roar!

In the distance, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had gotten rid of the Geocentric Flame Japalura's entanglement and flapped its wings in the air. Then it let out a berserk cry as light engravings emerged from the ice crystals on its wings. Scarlet blood also began to ooze out from the light engravings.

The light engravings quickly turned blood-red.

From below, the Geocentric Flame Jalapura also detected the danger and no longer charged in head-first. It stomped the ground furiously and cracked it open. Magma spewed out from the cracks, and the land turned into a land of lava rapidly.

Swish!

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's snow-white wings began to flap more rapidly. The Spiritual Aura within the world surged and quickly formed into a massive light ball filled with freezing Spiritual Energy. A bloody engraving covered the surface of the light ball.

An extremely horrifying fluctuation emanated from the massive Spiritual Energy light ball. This instantly caused Mu Chen and the others' expressions to change.

Boom!

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon issued out a roar, and the freezing Spiritual Energy light ball that contained all of its strength blasted out. Accompanied by a blizzard, it was like an meteor of ice as it descended down fiercely onto the Geocentric Flame Jalapura.

Bellow!

Facing the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's desperate attack, the Geocentric Flame Jalapura also issued out a roar. The flame horn that had magma flowing out instantly gushed out massive amounts of magma. Magma also shot out from the crack in the ground and, together, they finally formed into a pillar of magma which rushed towards the freezing Spiritual Energy light ball.

Bang Bang Bang!

As the two attacks collided, the pillar of magma instantly crumbled and lava sprayed out everywhere. However, the freezing Spiritual Energy light ball continued to descend downwards and finally exploded on the Geocentric Flame Jalapura.

Boom!

An indescribable snowstorm immediately emerged at this moment. The mountain and forest instantly turned into a world of ice. Although Mu Chen and the others, who were trailing the Spiritual Beasts, were quite a distance away, there were still a dozen or so Spirit Stage powerhouses that were wrapped up in the snowstorm. Their symbols instantly shattered and they vanished into beams of light.

Mu Chen and the others hurriedly hid themselves behind a mountain in order to avoid this terrifying impact that rushed over towards them. However, the chill that accompanied the snowstorm still made the Spiritual Energy within their bodies slow down.

Mu Chen stared into the distance and noticed that the snowstorm was gradually fading away.Some distance from his current location, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had fallen down in a weakened state causing the ground to tremble.

Near the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, the Geocentric Flame Jalapura's originally red body had turned slightly dim. The flame

on its horn had been extinguished and cracks had emerged on the its surface. It was evident that it had suffered a heavy injury.

This devastating battle gradually quieted down. Everybody stared at the two gravely injured Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts and their eyes turned red due to greed. However, they were temporarily restrained due to the slowing effects of the chill.

“Mu Chen, go!”

The Nine Netherbird’s thoughts resounded in Mu Chen’s mind. At the same time, a black flame surged through his body and completely burned away the chill that eroded his body.

Swish!

Mu Chen immediately moved and dashed out underneath many astonished gazes. In a blink of an eye, he appeared at the battlefield filled with ice and flames. A black flame surged like a river within his black eyes.

Li!

A clear cry suddenly rang out from his body. Once the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura heard this cry, a hint of fear instantly emerged in its eyes.

“Swish!”

Within Mu Chen’s eyes, the black flames were burning violently. With a final swishing sound, they had turned into two beams of black flames that ripped through the void.

Chi!

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura could only see the flash of the black light. However, they were soon aware of the pain that came along with it. The beam of black flames had actually completely ignored all their defense and forcibly tore through their sturdy heads.

The two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ massive body slowly

stiffened and their life force quickly faded away.

“Hurry, do it!”

The Nine Netherbird’s thoughts resounded out again. But this time, it had become a lot weaker than before. It was evident that the Nine Netherbird had used up a large amount of energy in the earlier attack.

Swish!

Mu Chen immediately rushed over and a suction force appeared in his palms. A red and blue light rushed out from the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ broken heads and landed into his hands.

Within the two lights were a miniature ice dragon and flame lizard. At this moment, they were struggling furiously, making it nearly impossible for Mu Chen to grip it tightly.

“Hmph!”

Mu Chen grunted and a black flame emerged in his palms. After the black flames completely covered the two Soul Essences, he immediately moved beside the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ corpse and waved his hand as he placed it into his Mustard Seed Bracelet.

Kacha.

Once the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were placed within the Mustard Seed Bracelet, subtle cracks emerged on the bracelet. Although the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura were dead, their corpses still possessed a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation. Since they had been completely absorbed into the Mustard Seed Bracelet at once, the Mustard Seed Bracelet could not endure it.

From the start of Mu Chen’s attack to the retrieval of the corpse, all of this only lasted for a few seconds. However, the numerous Spirit Stage powerhouses could only watch as Mu Chen snatched away the Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essence as well as the corpses...

“You’re seeking for death!”

Mu Chen’s actions immediately caused the Spirit Stage powerhouses to enter a state of rage. They shouted out furiously at him as they rushed over.

“Hand over the Soul Essences!”

Among the Spirit Stage powerhouses that rushed over, there were three of them that were exceedingly fast. In a flash, they had appeared near Mu Chen, and three powerful Spiritual Energies began to envelop Mu Chen.

These three individuals actually possessed the strength of a Spirit Stage Late Phase!

The hidden experts finally could not resist on showing their true selves and immediately took action!

Chapter 139 – The Great Chase

Three people stood in midair with dense Spiritual Energy fluctuations were emitting from their bodies. Based on these fluctuations, it was evident that they had reached Spirit Stage Late Phase.

At the moment, these three individuals were staring coldly at Mu Chen. They all had the same idea, to kill the latter.

The skinny boy in the middle of the trio stared coldly at Mu Chen as he spoke. “Don’t you think your appetite is too enormous? So many of us have been chasing this far in order to obtain the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts; every single one of us had to pay a great price, and you actually dared to take it all away?!”

“You’re only a mere Spirit Stage Initial Phase, yet you are quite ambitious. Aren’t you afraid that you’ll be killed? Hurry and hand over the Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences as well as the corpses! Perhaps we’ll let you get out of this alive!” The person on the left also shouted out coldly.

As for the person on the right, he maintained a heartless expression as he firmly fixed his gaze on Mu Chen. Sharp Spiritual Energy surged out from his slightly clasped palms.

At this instant, Ye Qingling and the others also recovered from the shock. They stared at the three figures in the sky and their expressions instantly changed.

“It’s actually Xie Guan, Wu Hu and Qin Zheng. Damn it, why would they be here right now?!” Fang Zhong shouted out. His voice trembled with shock. These three individuals were quite famous in the Spiritual Road. When the Spiritual Road was over, they were assessed as “Quasi-King Class”. Although there was a small gap between them and an actual King Class, they were still quite powerful.

Mu Chen wasn't their opponent at all.

"Boss Xie. I've seen him before! He's the Blood Calamity Mu Chen!" In the sky, a person suddenly shouted as he recognized Mu Chen.

"Oh? Mu Chen?"

Xie Guan and the others were startled and immediately glanced at Mu Chen again. However, they soon sneered: "I never expected that the famous Blood Calamity Mu Chen would only be at this level right now. What a joke. And I thought that I heard rumors about him being assessed as a King Class, how ridiculous!"

Mu Chen glanced at the trio for a moment. Although he did not know them, he knew that they must have performed quite decently in order to reach the Spirit Stage Late Phase. However, it was obvious that he had not met them in the Spiritual Road.

"It seems that the current situation is quite terrible..."

Mu Chen's eyes flashed. Xie Guan and the others were indeed powerful, but more importantly, there were dozens of Spirit Stage powerhouses watching in the rear. With this sort of lineup, it was enough for them to fight against a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast. It was evident that it was impossible for him to deal with them in a head-on battle. After all, the Nine Netherbird's power had already been used when he killed the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts earlier.

"I must leave this place first. If I had been able to ingest the Soul Essence, I wouldn't have been afraid of them." A thought flashed through Mu Chen's mind.

"Mu Chen, hand over the Soul Essences. Otherwise, I do not mind on eliminating the so-called Blood Calamity from this plane of existence." Xie Guan extended his hand over and shouted coldly.

"Divide these two Soul Essences by yourself!"

Mu Chen waved his sleeves and two clumps of light shot off from

his sleeves. Once he threw the clumps of light over, he immediately turned into a flash of light as he charged away from this location at an extraordinary speed.

Xie Guan and the others reflexively extended their hands to catch the clumps of light. However, they immediately noticed that something was wrong. Although the clumps of light were emitting Spiritual Energy fluctuations, they weren't something that could compare with a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence.

It was evident that these were only two common Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences.

"Bastard, you're dead meat!"

Xie Guan and the others' expressions instantly turned cold. They immediately charged onwards as they chased after Mu Chen.

"Chase. He actually dares to keep the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essences for himself! We can't let him go!" From behind, dozens of Spirit Stage powerhouses also shouted as they followed.

Ye Qingling and the others were completely stunned by the ongoing events. They quickly exchanged gazes with each other.

"What should we do? It will be dangerous for Mu Chen if the other Spirit Stage powerhouses continue to chase after him. After all, the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essences are too tempting. The group that will chase after him can only become increasingly larger. Moreover, his strength seems to be at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase again..." Fang Zhong smiled wryly.

Chu Qi also frowned. No matter which measures Mu Chen would take, he believed that it was clearly impossible for him to face this sort of lineup.

"Let's follow them and see what happens." Ye Qingling gritted her teeth. Mu Chen was definitely in a terrible situation. They would, without a doubt, worry if they left right now.

Fang Zhong and Chu Qi both sighed and nodded their heads. Thus, the three of them also started chasing after him rapidly.

Mu Chen immediately pushed his speed to the very limits. Directly behind him was the trio formed by Xie Guan, Wu Hu and Qin Zheng. And behind the trio was a large group of Spirit Stage powerhouses...

This strange scene of a group chasing a fleeing individual persisted for a while.

Every one of them was extremely fast and charged out of the mountains in just half an hour. However, this commotion had instantly alerted numerous individuals. Many of them were flabbergasted as they watched this bizarre scene occurring in front of their very eyes. The formation of nearly 100 Spirit Stage powerhouses shocked many people.

“What’s going on?!”

“Why are so many individuals chasing after one person?”

“It seems that someone obtained two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences!”

“What?! Two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences?”

“Quick! Quickly now! Send a message to the boss, and tell him that we’ve discovered something good!”

The commotion caused by the Spirit Stage powerhouses quickly caused a widespread disturbance. Once the information was spread, an uproar was instantly created. Greed quickly filled the eyes of many people. A few Spirit Stage powerhouses immediately rushed out and joined the fray.

Therefore, the fact that Mu Chen was being chased over acquiring two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences spread quickly...

Mu Chen gritted his teeth as he detected the amount of auras

behind him was increasing. Because of this, he did not dare to move to regions with many people and could only take unpopulated routes. But even so, the large force that was chasing him continued to be in hot pursuit.

“Damn it!”

Mu Chen cursed quietly. This time, he really stirred up a hornets’ nest.

“Swish!”

As Mu Chen cursed, he suddenly felt the Mustard Seed Bracelet shudder. Two clumps of light flew out. The two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences!

Pu!

Black flames gushed out of Mu Chen’s chest and completely enveloped the two clumps of light. Then, it forcibly pulled the Soul Essences directly into Mu Chen’s body.

“Bastard, what are you planning to do?!” Mu Chen shouted in anger.

Within his aura sea, the Nine Netherbird stared at the two Soul Essences that entered the mandala flower. A hint of cunning flashed through its eyes. It smiled as it sent out a thought over to Mu Chen: “I’ll ingest these Soul Essences, you should continue escaping. Relax, I will provide you the energy to escape.”

Once its voice faded away, it completely ignored Mu Chen. A hint of seriousness and hesitation flashed through its eyes as it stared at the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences. Then, it quickly opened its mouth and completely swallowed the Soul Essences.

Boom! An amazing Spiritual Energy fluctuation erupted out from the Nine Netherbird’s body.

“Sh*tty bird! You dare trick me!” Mu Chen gnashed his teeth in

anger. This damn Nine Netherbird had actually swallowed the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences and had left nothing for him!

"Just you wait!"

Although he was quite angry, Mu Chen also knew this wasn't the moment to quarrel. He hurriedly circulated his Spiritual Energy to accelerate...

The information about Mu Chen possessing two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts spread at an alarming rate. After all, this information was too amazing. A Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence was quite appealing to everyone here.

Thus, in just half a day, this information spread throughout the interior of the Northern Heaven World.

Northern Heavens World's Interior, South-East Direction.

The location was barren red valley. At this moment, numerous people had appeared in the depths of the valley. Every single one of them was glancing towards the center. From that location, a single-eyed, giant ape was shouting towards the sky; a formidable Spiritual Energy pressure gushed out from its body.

Judging from the Spiritual Energy pressure, the single-eyed giant ape was also a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast that was comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase!

But at this moment, many hideous sword injuries were plastered on the body of this giant ape. Every single one of these sword injuries was quite fatal. Moreover, there were hundreds of individuals unleashing attacks at the top of the valley, which brought the single-eyed giant ape into battle of will.

At the forefront of the valley, a dozen individuals were standing there. However, there were three figures among these dozen individuals that stood at the front of the pack. There were one girl and two boys.

The two boys were burly and skinny respectively. At this moment, they were completely focused on the single-eyed giant ape whose Spiritual Energy fluctuations were weakening. They were completely on guard against the one eyed giant ape's ferocious counterattack.

Next these two boys stood a slender and beautiful girl. She wore a black dress and her smooth, supple silver hair was extremely eye-catching. Compared to the two individuals beside her, she seemed a bit more relaxed. Even when she looked at the single-eyed giant ape, her clear glass-like eyes remained completely calm.

Even though her attitude was like this, none of the powerhouses thought that she was arrogant. That was because she was the one that gravely injured the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast in front of them. It was only because of this that the rest of them had a chance against it.

"Ohoho, Luo Li. If you obtain the Spiritual Aura of a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, you would probably become the first one to increase their rank to Rank 9, right?" The skinny boy smiled at the eye-catching girl, who was completely silent.

"Probably."

The girl's glass-like eyes remained quiet. Even though this was a shocking topic to everyone in the Northern Heavens World, she was not affected by it at all.

Seeing this, the skinny boy did not seem surprised. It was evident that he knew the girl's attitude quite well.

From behind, a commotion suddenly rang out. A figure hurriedly rushed over and leaned towards the skinny boy as he spoke: "Boss, I've just received news that someone has actually obtained two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences in the Northwest direction. Right now, he's gravely injured, and he's being chased by hundreds of Spirit Stage powerhouses. Should we intervene as well?"

“Oh? Two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essence?”

The skinny boy was stunned. The burly boy also showed a surprised expression and asked: “Which amazing person did this?”

“He seems to be called Mu Chen?” The person thought for a moment before responding.

Just when his voice faded, he suddenly noticed that his two bosses’ expressions changed. Then, the two of them slowly turned their gazes towards the black dressed girl.

The girl in black dress suddenly turned around and revealed an extremely elegant face. At this moment, ripples started to emerge in her eyes despite not yielding even the slightest of changes when they were talking about her pre-eminent Rank 9.

“What did you say his name was?” The girl in black dress asked quietly. Her voice was trembling while she asked this. It was evident that her emotions were slightly out of control.

Once the messenger saw this, he did not dare to respond slowly and hurriedly muttered: “He’s called Mu Chen. Currently, he has obtained two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast Essences and is being chased by hundreds of Spirit Stage powerhouses. It was reported that he is severely injured.”

“What direction?” Hearing the words “severely injured”, the girl in black dress immediately clasped her slender hands. A hint of coldness immediately flowed through her serene eyes.

“Northwest.”

The girl in black dress immediately started to move.

“Luo Li. There’s no need to be impatient. The Single-Eyed Diamond Ape won’t be able to last much longer. If you wait for a little bit more, you will become the first one in this Northern Heavens World to have increased their rank to Rank 9. Wouldn’t it be a bit rash if you were to leave at this critical moment?!” The skinny boy quickly muttered once he noticed her intention.

The girl in black dress paused for a moment and tilted her head slightly. Her clear and beautiful eyes stared at the skinny boy as she slowly spoke: “I came to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy because of him. If he’s not in this place, then what’s the purpose of me being here? Just what is the use of a Rank 9 Symbol then?”

The girl in the black dress glanced at the skinny boy, who was smiling wryly, and the hint of coldness faded away from her eyes. She whispered: “He’s hurt. He needs me right now. I want to be by his side. Don’t stop me, otherwise, I’ll get angry.”

The skinny boy chuckled bitterly as he stared at the girl in black dress. Quickly after, he said: “That guy truly makes me jealous… Should I send someone to go with you?”

“No need. I can resolve it all by myself.”

This time, a hint of killing intent laced the girl’s voice. She stopped conversing with the skinny boy and rushed away. Her body turned into a beam of light as she charged towards the northwest direction.

Mu Chen, you promised me. You said we’ll enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy together. Therefore, you must wait for me.

Chapter 140 – Changes inside Body

Swish! Swish!

The sounds of winds being cleaved through could be heard resounding throughout the mountains. Beams of light flashed as numerous figures stormed through the area. At the same time, numerous shouts could be heard.

In front of the flock of men was Mu Chen, currently wearing a gloomy expression. These bastards had already chased him for almost an entire day, yet they didn't show the slightest signs of stopping.

Moreover as the chase continued, the people following him had increased. The attractiveness of the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences was too great. But most importantly, Mu Chen only appeared to be at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. As such, his currently perceived level wasn't enough to make the ones that were at a slightly higher or even the same level to fear him.

His perceived weakness caused everybody to want to catch him and seize the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences.

"I must think of a plan to get rid of them." Mu Chen frowned.

Dong!

Just when Mu Chen was pondering his problems, the sound of a sudden explosion came from inside his body. A vibration instantly spread throughout his body.

Puchi.

This sudden vibration caused Mu Chen to shudder in surprise. His face immediately turned pale, and he spat out a mouthful of blood. At the same time, his figure staggered a bit.

"Hurry, he won't be able to last much longer, capture him!"

"Don't let him escape!"

Far behind Mu Chen, the flock of men witnessed this scene and were completely delighted. Mu Chen's stubborness and speed were much higher than they had anticipated. Even after they chased him for nearly a day, they failed to surround him. Judging from his current appearance, it seemed likely that Mu Chen couldn't hold on any longer.

"What's going on?!"

A hint of dismay flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. He immediately concentrated and reached into his aura sea. Once he entered the aura sea, he discovered a formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuation that was spreading out like ripples.

And the source of this Spiritual Energy was the Nine Netherbird that was inside the mandala flower cage!

At this moment, the Nine Netherbird's body had doubled in size and its body was covered in black flames. Its eyes betrayed the pain of its current struggle.

"What the hell are you doing?!" Mu Chen shouted out. This damn bird, it had actually secretly absorbed the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences, and now it even caused this mess? It was truly trying to kill him.

While the Nine Netherbird had been lying down on the mandala flower, a tinge of icy-blue and fiery-red appeared in its black flames.

Mu Chen immediately understood what was happening. The Nine Netherbird had eaten too much. It had attempted to ingest two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences at once, but a backlash had occurred. After all, it had still been in an extremely weakened state. If he was being honest, he had to say that the Nine Netherbird's injuries were far more severe than those the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had sustained earlier. If it had ingested the Soul Essences one by one, perhaps it wouldn't have been a problem. However, it had been extremely greedy...

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura were known for controlling the powers of great blizzards and rushing magma respectively. The nature of these two elements naturally opposed each other. Right now, the Nine Netherbird had placed them together. This caused the resistance to sharply increase, which led to the backlash.

“You deserve it!”

Mu Chen scolded. The damn bird had finally gotten what it deserved.

However, scolding aside, he was quite anxious as well. After all, the Nine Netherbird was inside his aura sea. If another backlash occurred, the explosion would probably destroy him instantly. Therefore, he could not afford to do nothing in this situation.

“What should I do?” Mu Chen asked helplessly. He was extremely unfortunate. Right now, he was being hunted by others. Now an accident occurred inside his body.

“Ingest them!” The Nine Netherbird sent its painful thoughts over to him.

“I must get rid of the pursuers temporarily. So no matter how much pain you’re in, you must help me now. Otherwise, we’ll both be dead!” Mu Chen gritted.

After saying this, he immediately left his aura sea. Then, he turned around and noticed that the men chasing after him had already covered quite a bit of the distance that had initially been separating them. He took a deep breath and felt a powerful energy surging out of his aura sea.

“Dong Dong!”

When this energy emerged, Mu Chen was able to feel a slight disturbance within his aura sea. It was evident that the Nine Netherbird’s condition got worse due to it sending part of its power over to Mu Chen.

But at this moment, neither had the time to care much about it.

Boom!

At this moment, black flames gushed out of Mu Chen's body. Then, a pair of black flame wings formed on his back. The air instantly exploded as he turned into a black beam of light. With unimaginable speed, he disappeared into the horizon.

As they watched this scene occur in front of their very eyes, the faces of the people chasing after Mu Chen immediately turned pale.

"Chase. We'll chase after him using the residual Spiritual Energy fluctuations!"

"He must be desperate right now. As long as we catch up to him, he will not be able to escape!"

Numerous shouts rang out. They immediately increased the circulation of Spiritual Energy inside their bodies and accelerated as they continued their chase...

By relying on the Nine Netherbird's power, Mu Chen was able to escape the flock of men in a few minutes. He immediately entered a group of mountains and descended near a waterfall.

When Mu Chen landed on the ground, he immediately sat cross-legged. He had to manage his time well. Although he had been able to escape the mob temporarily, he had left traces of Spiritual Energy along the way. Since he didn't have time to erase them, it was only a matter of time before they caught up.

Mu Chen's thoughts quickly entered his aura sea again and noticed that the black flames on the Nine Netherbird was showing signs of distorting. Its body was constantly expanding and contracting.

This was the appearance of Spiritual Energy being in a completely unstable state.

Mu Chen's thoughts quickly entered the tiny spirit body that was sitting on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel. Then, the little body rushed out and appeared in front of the mandala flower. His hands changed forms and Spiritual Energy shot out. However, he became stunned when he noticed that his Spiritual Energy completely shattered once it made contact with the Nine Netherbird's chaotic and violent Spiritual Energy.

Mu Chen was startled. He smiled bitterly when he discovered that it would be impossible for him to help with the mere strength of a Spirit Stage Initial Phase. Not only did the Nine Netherbird have its own Spiritual Energy, it also possessed the Soul Essence of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura. There was nothing he could do now.

A thought was conveyed to him by the Nine Netherbird."Use the mandala flower! Did you truly believe that you could had helped with your strength being only at Spirit Stage Initial Phase?"

"If I could activate this thing, did you think that I would have let you act so arrogantly in front of me?" Mu Chen shouted in anger. If he had been able to activate the mandala flower, he would have completely ingested the Nine Netherbird in the beginning.

Although he was utterly furious, Mu Chen still managed to calm himself down. His spirit slowly descended and landed near the mandala flower. He hesitated for a moment before extending a blurry hand made of light, and gently touched the cage.

When he made contact with the mandala flower, Mu Chen discovered that his spirit was able to fuse with the mandala flower without any obstruction. Immediately after he had discovered that, obscure fluctuations surged into his heart.

This made Mu Chen feel something unique. He had a feeling that the mandala flower that emerged from the mysterious black paper had some intelligence of its own.

"Can you help me out?"

Mu Chen knew that he could not control this mysterious mandala flower right now. Therefore, he sent his thoughts over to see if they would have any effect.

Buzz.

Just as Mu Chen sent these thoughts over, the mandala flower actually started emitting brilliant purple lights. The beautiful and enchanting petals also blossomed slightly.

A golden magical engraving seemed to emerge on the petal. Then, these engravings shot out like a purple golden web and completely enveloped the Nine Netherbird.

Chi Chi!

When the purple golden web enveloped the Nine Netherbird, smoke erupted from the Nine Netherbird's body. Its body struggled violently and it sent an angry thought over: "What the hell are you doing!"

Although it detected that that the two Soul Essences were also in pain while being constricted by the web, the Nine Netherbird was also suppressed by it. It was as if the mandala flower planned on eliminating all of them.

"How should I know!" Mu Chen was also shocked by the scene that was occurring. He had no way of controlling the mandala flower.

"Don't hurt it!" Mu Chen gnashed his teeth and quickly sent a new thought to the mandala flower.

However, he quickly discovered that this thought of his played no effect. Although the mandala flower had a bit of intelligence, it did not have any wisdom. Since Mu Chen asked for it to help him, it felt that it had to eliminate anything that could harm him. Since the two Soul Essence had been ingested by the Nine Netherbird, it planned on eliminating the Nine Netherbird along with it.

"Hurry and spit out the Soul Essences! Otherwise, you'll be

eliminated as well!" Mu Chen quickly thought of this point and shouted out.

"Their Spiritual Energy has already been fused into my body. How can I spit them out?!" The Nine Netherbird responded furiously.

"You..." At this moment, even with Mu Chen's temper, he had the impulse to curse furiously. Did this damn bird have to be this impatient?

"Sooner or later, I'll be killed by you!"

Mu Chen gnashed his teeth and moved his body. His spirit directly entered the mandala flower and appeared on the back of the Nine Netherbird. His hands touched the purple golden web and tried to remove it. After all, he was the owner of this body, and if that was the case, the mandala flower probably wouldn't hurt him, right?

The Nine Netherbird was shocked by Mu Chen's action. A hint of complexion flashed through its eyes. This idiot. Why is he this stupid? How could he charge in before figuring whether or not the purple golden web would hurt him?

When the purple golden web touched Mu Chen's body, it shuddered for a moment. Then, it directly phased through Mu Chen's tiny spirit form and continued to suppress the Nine Netherbird.

"It's completely ignoring me." Mu Chen touched his unscathed body and said helplessly.

"It's planning to eliminate anything that could be a threat to you." The Nine Netherbird actually turned calm. It stopped struggling and allowed the purple golden web to suppress it.

"You really deserve it!" Mu Chen cursed. This guy truly only had itself to blame.

"You dare curse at me!" The Nine Netherbird was completely

furious. It flapped its burning wings and directly sent Mu Chen flying away from its back. However, it was evident that it did not use much strength and Mu Chen landed gently in front of it.

When Mu Chen landed in front of the Nine Netherbird, he asked helplessly: “What should we do then?”

The Nine Netherbird glanced at him and became silent. It said: “It’s not like there isn’t a way. It’s only attacking me because it recognizes that I am a threat to you. If I’m not a threat to you, it will probably stop its attack.”

“Threat?” Mu Chen was stunned. He bitterly replied: “Then, could it be that I must ingest you?”

“Dream on. The Nine Netherbird possesses the bloodline of the ancient Undying Bird. Even if it’s a destroyed Soul Essence, we will never let a human ingest it. We would never let them control us!” The Nine Netherbird shouted angrily.

Mu Chen let out a hollow laugh and responded: “I was only joking.”

The Nine Netherbird stared fiercely at Mu Chen and became silent again. After a while, it finally spoke in a somewhat difficult voice: “Aside from ingesting me, there is actually another way.”

“What is it?” Mu Chen hurriedly asked.

A hint of struggle flashed through the Nine Netherbird’s eyes. Then, as if it had made a major decision, it slowly closed its eyes.

“Bloodline Bond.”

Chapter 141 – Bloodline Bond

“Bloodline Bond?”

Mu Chen seemed slightly stunned as he repeated these words slowly back to himself. Then, his eyes sparkled as he looked at the Nine Netherbird and asked: “What’s that?”

“It’s something that only a member of an ancient Divine Beast’s lineage can do. Simply put, it uses a special technique to link our bloodlines together.”

“A benefit is that you will possess my abilities. This is a higher ranked method of obtaining a Spiritual Beast’s abilities compared to simply ingesting the Soul Essence.”

A faint thought was conveyed over by the Nine Netherbird: “The disadvantage of this is that we will form a tight connection with each other. If you were to die, I would die as well. Similarly, if I die, you will die as well.”

Mu Chen froze immediately and smiled bitterly: “Isn’t this quite vicious?”

“Stop pretending. Although humans are able to increase their lifespan through cultivation, but based on an ordinary death, you are the ones that would definitely die first unless you somehow managed to cultivate to an extremely high level.” The Nine Netherbird said disdainfully.

“And you think that I’m willing to form a Bloodline Bond with an insect-like human? The Nine Netherbird possesses the bloodline of the ancient Undying Bird. Compared to everything about you, it is many times more noble!”

“You don’t even know how many people attempted to form a Bloodline Bond with us. Despite that, the Nine Netherbird race has never done such a shameful act. If it wasn’t for the fact that there isn’t another method, I would never have suggested such a thing in

the first place!”

A hint of anger was within the thought that was conveyed over. When humans ingested a Soul Essence and erased the Spiritual Beast’s will, it was one of the most despicable and lowly act of obtaining the Spiritual Beast’s capabilities. However, a Bloodline Bond surpasses the act of ingesting in terms of method and potential.

This is because this was the only method that could fuse two bloodlines together, allowing the cultivator to use an extremely formidable power.

However, a Bloodline Bond requires agreement from both parties. To high rank existences, it was simply a disgrace for them to lay down their dignity and willingly form a Bloodline Bond with humans. Therefore, they would rather be completely obliterated instead of doing such a thing.

Mu Chen smiled helplessly. After all, this entire thing had happened because of the Nine Netherbird. Who told it to be so greedy and to swallow two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essence at once?

From the sounds of it, the Bloodline Bond possesses many benefits to him. However, Mu Chen felt a bit off as he would have to bundle his life together with someone else.

“Do you agree or not? Stop acting so indecisive!” Seeing Mu Chen turn silent, the Nine Netherbird spoke up immediately. It could feel the purple golden web gradually tightening on itself.

Mu Chen sighed and nodded. He immediately turned serious and said: “Although there isn’t much meaning in me saying this, I would like to clarify that I do not have much desire to form this Bloodline Bond. I only promised because I owe you favor. And now, there is only one method of resolving this dilemma. Otherwise, no matter how many benefits I would obtain, I would not tie my life together with someone else.”

The Nine Netherbird was truly powerful. However, Mu Chen wasn't someone who would sacrifice something that he adheres to just for strength. He had confidence in himself. Perhaps he wasn't as powerful as the Nine Netherbird currently, but he firmly believed in this sentence: Nobody could predict how powerful he would be in the future.

In the future, it was possible for him to surpass the Nine Netherbird in strength.

The Nine Netherbird grunted and did not make a rebuttal. It was not afraid of death; otherwise, it would not have directly face off against the Black Divine Lightning. After being together with Mu Chen, it had gradually come to understand him. The earlier act of Mu Chen touching the purple golden web without knowing whether or not it would harm him had made it feel a little bit touched. Thus, it believed that the person in front of it was at least a little bit better than the other despicable humans.

Thus, it proposed to form the Bloodline Bond. To a certain extent, it had recognized Mu Chen as an individual. Otherwise, it would rather die instead of making such a choice.

"Hurry. I don't have much time." Mu Chen urged the Nine Netherbird.

"Leave the Bloodline Bond to me. If you have the slightest resistance or reluctance, it will cause the bond to fail. Also, you will only have one chance on performing this bond. Once it fails, we will never be able to form a bond again." The Nine Netherbird reminded Mu Chen.

"This method sure is harsh." Mu Chen was slightly surprised and immediately nodded his head.

Seeing this, the Nine Netherbird suddenly flapped its wings and a black flame erupted from its body. Then, it quickly formed into a black pattern between the two of them.

The black pattern formed by the black flames gave off an extremely mysterious feeling. It seemed to communicate with something mysterious within the human's body.

"Place a drop of Blood Essence inside the black pattern." The Nine Netherbird said.

Hearing this, Mu Chen extended out a finger. A scarlet drop of blood shot out from his fingertips and landed inside the flaming black pattern.

Chi Chi.

As the fresh blood contaminated the black pattern, white mist erupted out in bursts. However, it did not evaporate away. Instead, it fused itself inside the black pattern and slowly surged through the pattern. In the end, it occupied half of the black pattern.

A hint of seriousness filled the Nine Netherbird's eyes at this moment. A black light flashed on its forehead as a drop of black blood escaped its body. Black flames seemed to be burning within this drop of blood.

This dark-black blood also fused into the black pattern and occupied the other half.

Buzz.

The two drops of blood each occupied half of the black flame pattern. Then, once the black pattern started to circulate, the two bloods actually made contact together.

Boom!

In the instant that the two bloods made contact with each other, Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird's body trembled. However, both their gazes remained firmly fixed on the circulating black pattern.

If it were to fail, the bond between the two of them would also fail. There were no other opportunities for succeeding this act anymore.

Fortunately, the two Blood Essences fused together quite smoothly. It was evident that the bird and human did not have any signs of resisting each other.

Buzzzz!

As the two Blood Essences fused, a brilliant light erupted out from the black pattern. Black flames rose and directly ignited the pattern.

Swish! Swish!

Two dark-red Blood Essences erupted out from the black flames and landed respectively on Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird's forehead. As the black flames surged, a black flame emblem slowly emerged and entered the depths of their bodies.

Once the black flame emblem entered the depths of their bodies, a mysterious feeling emerged in their hearts. This mysterious feeling made it seem like that their life was shared between the two of them.

As Mu Chen looked at the Nine Netherbird, the latter also stared at him. Both of their eyes showed a hint of complexion. The Bloodline Bond was a success. No matter what, from now on, they were both an important existence to each other.

Even if they had to risk their life, they must protect each other. This is because it is the same as protecting themselves.

Chi.

Suddenly, the purple golden web that caused severe pain on the Nine Netherbird went through the Nine Netherbird's body. This time, it did not cause any damages to it. Instead, the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences within the Nine Netherbird's body had their wills erased.

Once it was aware of this situation, the Nine Netherbird let out a sigh of relief. It stared hatefully at the mandala flower. It had truly lost its power and influence because of this. Thus, once it

recovered, it would definitely treat it nicely!

“The will within the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and Geocentric Flame Jalapura has been eliminated. Next up, we will ingest it together. However, the majority of the Spiritual Energy will belong to me. After all, you cannot bear such enormous Spiritual Energy.” The Nine Netherbird spoke.

“How fussy, why does it seem like you’re a female?” Mu Chen raised his eyebrow and challenged it. He stared at the Nine Netherbird and asked: “In the end, are you a male or a female? It seems that once a Spiritual Beast is strong enough, it can also shapeshift into a human shape, right?”

“None of your business!” As this was mentioned, the Nine Netherbird immediately turned furious. It directly flapped its wings at Mu Chen. Since it had formed a Bloodline Bond with Mu Chen, the mandala flower no longer bound itself inside the cage. Its black wings passed through the light barrier and whacked at Mu Chen’s spirit. This act sent Mu Chen’s spirit flying away.

“Violent Bird.”

Mu Chen smiled and no longer provoked it. He began to help ingest the massive Spiritual Energy within the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences...

While Mu Chen had his thoughts immersed inside his body, he did not sense that the outside danger had already enveloped him.

Outside of the mountain’s waterfall, sounds of winds breaking rang out as numerous figures rushed over. They finally emerged in the sky and found Mu Chen, who was sitting cross-legged near the waterfall.

“Hmph, we’ve finally found the boy. Let’s see how he can hide from us now!”

As they stared at Mu Chen’s figure, cold cries rang out. They were truly tired due to the one day chase. It was amazing how

tough it was to deal with a boy, who was only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

In front of the crowd, Xie Guan and the others stared coldly at Mu Chen's figure. Spiritual Energy surged out as they prepared to attack.

"Swish!"

However, three figures quickly emerged in front of Mu Chen. It was Ye Qingling, Chu Qi and Fang Zhong. They had followed the pack closely. However, they never imagined that Mu Chen would be discovered. Thus, they were forced to appear.

"Chu Qi?"

Xie Guan stared at these three individuals and immediately frowned as he locked his gaze on Chu Qi: "Are you planning on protecting Mu Chen? I'd advise you not to do this, otherwise, you'll be in trouble."

Chu Qi sighed helplessly. He truly had nothing that he could say. Based on this guy's actions, he would definitely erase Mu Chen's symbol while taking the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences.

"Everyone, let's be lenient wherever it's possible. How about letting us go if Mu Chen hands over the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences?" Fang Zhong asked. At this moment, they could only attempt to stall for time.

"Hmph, this boy is truly irritating. He made us waste so much of our time. How could we forgive him that easily? You should hurry and scram, otherwise, we'll deal with you as well!" Wu Hu, who had reached the Spirit Stage Late Phase, immediately turned cold as he shouted out loud.

"Then, we can't let you succeed either!" Chu Qi gritted his teeth and responded.

"You think you can stop us with the three of you?!"

Wu Hu sneered as he charged over. Dense Spiritual Energy surged out as it bombarded the trio.

“Together!”

Seeing Wu Hu attack, Chu Qi also shouted out. The three of them cooperated with each other and powerful Spiritual Energy collided against Wu Hu’s attack.

Dong!

As the two attacks collided with each other, the Spiritual Energy shockwave directly caused numerous ripples to occur in the waterfall. However, Wu Hu’s body only retreated back two steps while Chu Qi and the others retreated dozens of steps. At the same time, Ye Qingling, who was the weakest of the trio, turned slightly pale. After all, there was quite a bit of difference between a Spirit Stage Late Phase and her.

“All of you, SCRAM!”

Wu Hu charged out again. A punch was blasted out and sent Chu Qi and the others flying away. Then, he immediately appeared in front of Mu Chen and grinned: “Dogsh*t Blood Calamity Mu Chen, wake up!”

He grinned villainously and dense Spiritual Energy charged at Mu Chen’s chest. It was evident that he was planning to force the latter to wake up from the state of cultivation.

Seeing this, Chu Qi and the others’ expression changed. It was apparent that Mu Chen was in the state of cultivation. If he was disturbed, it was likely that the Spiritual Energy would backlash on him, causing severe injuries.

“Swish!”

But just when their expressions changed drastically, a sharp sound of winds breaking resounded out from the distant horizon. Under Wu Hu’s surprised gaze, a sharp, black light seemed to appear from the void and shot through his thighs, nailing him to

the ground.

“AH!”

Screams resounded out from Wu Hu immediately.

This sudden change of events made the other Spirit Stage powerhouses’ expressions change. They immediately shouted out: “Who?”

Every one of them lifted their heads as they stared at the distant horizon. From that location, a bright light was rushing over. In a couple of seconds, it turned into a figure of light as it landed in front of Mu Chen.

As Chu Qi stared at the slender figure, the corner of his eyes twitched rapidly. He could not believe what he was seeing.

This familiar figure…Was it Luo Li?

Chapter 142 – Reunion

Rumbling sounds could be heard as the waterfall continued to pour down and fill the sky with mist.

At this moment while standing in the air above the waterfall, hundreds of figures had an expression of astonishment when they turned their gazes to the edge of the waterfall. A girl wearing a black dress suddenly emerged in their field of vision. She possessed a delicate ,beautiful face, and her clear glass-like eyes gave off a feeling of tranquility. Her supple, long hair flowed from the crown of her head, down like a waterfall to her slender waist. A gentle breeze blew, and her long hair swayed slightly.

Although she was standing there quietly and did not utter a single word, everybody at the scene, unbeknownst to each other, felt completely stunned.

On the ground beside her, Wu Hu's leg was nailed to the ground by a black longsword. He originally had a face filled with rage, but he retracted this furious gaze when he noticed the girl in a black dress in front of him. Instead, a hint of terror appeared in the depths of his eyes, and he quickly suppressed the curses that he was about to blurt out.

In the sky, Xie Guan and Qin Zheng's expressions also froze. It was evident that they recognized the girl in black dress who stood front of them. Although they had only seen this outstanding appearance and temperament once, it was firmly etched inside their minds and was impossible to erase.

In addition, they recalled the scene of her forcing back King Xuan, Ji Xuan, in the final stop of the Spiritual Road causing him to lose his chance of obtaining the Spirit Crown.

She…was actually at this place!

A strange silence suddenly appeared within the sky.

This silence lasted only for a moment before it was destroyed by a boy, who was in the Spirit Stage Initial Phase, that clearly had not participated in the Spiritual Road. He looked at the girl in black dress and shouted: “Who are you? You actually dare help this boy? Are you planning to become enemies with so many of us?!”

“Shut up!” In the front of the group, Xie Guan fiercely turned his head back and yelled.

The Spirit Stage boy was completely stunned and his facial color constantly changing from blue to white and back. However, he did not dare to say another word. Then, he turned around and looked at the people next to him. He immediately discovered that all of them were staring at him strangely. This gaze made him shiver. Could it be that this beautiful girl in the black dress had some sort of background?

Next to the waterfall, the girl in black dress extended her slender hands and gripped the hilt of the sword which was still protruding from Wu Hu’s leg. Afterwards, she casually pulled it out.

Seeing this, Wu Hu hurriedly stopped the blood from flowing out. Immediately afterwards, he attempted to flee from the dangerous person in front of him.

“Don’t move.”

But just when he was about to move, the girl’s cold voice entered his ears. He was instantly terrified to the point of turning completely stiff and he did not even dare to make the slightest twitch.

“None of you as well,” She lifted her head and said slowly to the hundreds of figures in the sky.

Xie Guan’s expression froze. He immediately gritted his teeth and replied: “King Luo, if we have offended you in any way, we are willing to make amends.”

“You should not have chased after him.” A cold chill emerged in

the girl's clear eyes as she spoke to Xie Guan and the others.

Xie Guan's face immediately changed. Could it be that Mu Chen had some sort of relationship with Luo Li? How is this possible? Wasn't he kicked out of the Spiritual Road early on? How could it be possible that he formed a connection with Luo Li?

"So he was King Luo's friend." Qin Zheng let out a hollow laugh and spoke: "If we knew about this, we wouldn't have dared attack him. Speaking of which, this is all a misunderstanding."

Xie Guan also clenched his teeth and his heart was filled with unwillingness. When Luo Li had appeared, it had already become near impossible for them to obtain the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Symbol. This is because he knew how powerful that beautiful girl in front of them was. A person who could gravely injure a heaven-sent child like Ji Xuan wasn't someone that they could fight against.

"Since you've already chased him over here, then I'll have you stay here temporarily." Luo Li replied.

Xie Guan's heart sank as he gritted his teeth and said: "King Luo, are you planning to attack us?"

Luo Li glanced at him for a moment and replied faintly: "Although I really want to get rid of you directly by myself, he might hold a grudge towards me for doing so. Therefore, all of you are going to remain here. After all, he does not like it when I intervene with something like this."

Once Xie Guan heard this, he immediately felt delighted. As long as Luo Li remains passive, they would not fear Mu Chen.

Xie Guan and the others exchanged gazes with each and secretly nodded. They remained at their location honestly and did not dare to retreat.

Seeing this scene, a few Spirit Stage individuals behind them felt that something was off. Although they did not know how powerful

the girl in black dress was, they knew from Xie Guan and the others' expressions that these powerful cultivators greatly feared her.

"It's best to run away quickly." A few Spirit Stage Initial Phase students exchanged gazes with each other and retreated quickly from the scene.

"Idiot!" When Xie Guan heard the sounds of winds breaking behind him, he was extremely surprised and cursed out loud. Then, they noticed Luo Li lifting up her slim eyebrow as she slowly lifted up the black longsword in her hand and let out a few gentle thrusts.

The air immediately rumbled and after-images appeared on top of the black longsword. Then, a sharp sword beam, that was impossible to detect with the naked eye, seemed to rip through the void.

Chi Chi!

In the far distant location, the Spirit Stage students that retreated instantly froze and fear emerged in their eyes. This is because they detected that the symbol on their forehead had shattered at this moment. A beam of light immediately formed and enveloped them as it transported them away.

As Xie Guan and the others stared at the twinkling beams of light behind them, their heart jumped fiercely. Even the Spirit Stage students that did not move were completely covered with cold sweat. Only now did they understand how terrifying that the girl in black dress was.

"Anybody that moves will have the same fate as them." Luo Li's eyes gently swept across the crowd. However, this action was enough to make them completely shiver and they did not dare to resist at all.

In the rear, Ye Qingling stared eagerly at Luo Li, who had

completely frightened, with her own strength, hundreds of Spirit Stage students so bad that they did not dare to move. As expected from King Luo.

Next to her, Chu Qi was firmly staring at the figure passionately. His eyes were completely filled with excitement. If it wasn't for Fang Zhong pulling him back, he would probably have rushed over already.

At this moment, Luo Li still had her slender hand grasping the black longsword. However, she slowly turned away from the crowd once she confirmed that she had frightened everybody. She did not care about the other individuals and locked her gaze firmly on the boy, who was sitting cross-legged in front of her.

Suddenly, she ignored the crowd and gently sat down in front of Mu Chen. Her glass-like eyes twinkled as she stared quietly at the familiar face.

After being separated for roughly two years, he seemed to have matured a bit. However, a calm smile still remained on his handsome face.

"I've waited so long for your arrival..."

She extended her slender hand and gently touched Mu Chen's face. A warm and gentle smile slowly emerged from the corner of her lips. At this moment, her calm and serene eyes seemed to be filled with a brilliant light.

She did not know when it happened, but because of his appearance, the pitched-black world, in which she only cared about cultivation, had become completely dazzling and filled with expectations.

Even the boring and uninteresting Spiritual Road had become something that she had enjoyed.

"At least you weren't stupid and knew that you had to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy..."

The girl laughed gently. That smile even caused the sound of majestic waterfall to dim considerably. In the rear, Chu Qi's eyes that were originally filled with obsession suddenly turned bitter.

She really liked him.

In the sky, Xie Guan and the others noticed the intimate actions of Luo Li, and their hearts immediately sank. Judging from this, it was evident that their relationship wasn't simply just friends...

While Luo Li quietly sat in front of Mu Chen, her slender hand finally relaxed and let go of the black longsword as she placed it on top of her slim legs. Yet while doing so, her gaze had always remained on Mu Chen's body.

Thus, everybody felt that the scene here had become particularly strange. In the sky, a large group of individuals remained completely motionless and had their gazes completely fixated on the slender figure. Yet the figure sat quietly as she watched the boy who was cultivating.

Time passed slowly just like this. Approximately half an hour later, Mu Chen gradually opened his tightly closed eyes.

As the world in front of his eyes turned bright, Mu Chen twisted his neck slightly. But soon after, his face froze instantly as he stared at the girl in black dress that was smiling at him with her red lips.

That elegant and familiar face was still so very attractive.

Mu Chen blinked and could not help but rub his eyes for a bit as he muttered: "Did I really think about her that much? This must be an illusion, right?"

It was evident that girl in front of him had heard his murmur. Thus, her lips suddenly sprang up. Her heart, which could remain calm in face of any circumstances, suddenly bloomed like a flower. It burned passionately and delight slowly seeped out from within.

She held onto the hilt of the black longsword and the scabbard

gently poked Mu Chen's chest. She smiled and asked: "Do you need me to stab you a couple of times?"

Mu Chen's eyes widened a little bit more. In the depths of his eyes, a hint of happiness surged out. He immediately laughed and extended his arms to embrace the girl in front of him.

The girl seemed shocked by this action of his. As her sword was touching Mu Chen's chest, she could have easily blocked Mu Chen with her current strength by utilizing Spiritual Energy. But once she noticed the joy within the boy's eyes, her eyes also softened. She held the sword hilt in front of her chest, while she allowed herself to be hugged.

When Mu Chen embraced the slender waistline, he buried his face into her supple long hair and took a deep breath as he muttered: "Luo Li, I've finally found you again…"

Since the day that he had departed from the Spiritual Road, he had always been waiting for the arrival of this day. In order for it to happen, he had paid a great price.

Luo Li's glass-like eyes softened as she could feel Mu Chen's efforts over the past two years. In the Spiritual Road, a heaven-sent child was suddenly kicked out. Thinking about it, he must have suffered a lot of pressure when he went back.

Although he always had a calm smile plastered on his face, under that smile she knew how tired he was and how much hardship he had faced.

Her hands gentled extended out and wrapped around Mu Chen's waist. Then, she slowly muttered deep down inside.

Mu Chen, I'm also happy that I was able to see you again

Chapter 143 – Resolve

At the edge of the rushing waterfall, a boy hugged a girl while the sun rays descended onto their bodies. This scene was so beautiful, it could have been a painting.

In the sky, the faces of Xie Guan and the others started to twitch as they watched this scene. Since it had come to this, only a fool would believe that Mu Chen had an ordinary relationship with Luo Li.

Although they did not have much contact with Luo Li before, they knew how unapproachable this girl, who had stood at the pinnacle in the Spiritual Road, was. It was as if she maintained a distance with everyone. Her clear eyes were not cold, yet they stopped everyone from approaching her.

They had never heard of this heaven-sent girl, who was coveted by numerous talented geniuses within the Spiritual Road, having any intimate contact with the opposite sex. Not to mention this kind of scene, where she was hugged by someone else...

At this moment, Xie Guan and the others stared complicatedly at Mu Chen and their eyes were filled with pure jealousy. They knew how outstanding Luo Li was. Therefore, they could only watch and stare at such a girl from afar. However, a certain person was holding her in his arms and enjoying her unique warmth and fragrance.

“Cough.”

Behind Mu Chen and the others, Ye Qingling suddenly let out a gentle cough. If she did not interrupt them, who knows how long the two of them would remain like this. Moreover, doesn’t Mu Chen know that such an open display would be extremely aggravating to others?

Ye Qingling glanced at Chu Qi, who was beside her. The latter

was gritting his teeth and held an expression of wanting to rip Mu Chen to shreds. But fortunately, he was pulled back tightly by Fang Zhong.

If he were to rush up right now, it was highly likely that he would be dealt with by a single slash from Luo Li.

After hearing the coughing sounds coming from the rear, Mu Chen gradually recovered his senses. He immediately separated himself gently from Luo Li, and his eyes swept across the sky. There was a strange atmosphere coming from the crowd that had been awkwardly standing there. Once they noticed Mu Chen's gaze, they hurriedly turned their heads and evaded it. The viciousness that they once had when they were chasing him had completely vanished...

Mu Chen glanced at Luo Li and understood roughly what had happened. He smiled: "It seems that your strength has increased greatly during these two years."

Luo Li only smiled and replied: "If you experienced the final battle within the Spiritual Road, you would probably be at this level as well."

"How can there be so many 'ifs'?"

Mu Chen stood up and said: "However, even without that opportunity, I will still be able to catch up."

As he spoke, he directed a smile at Luo Li. "Moreover, there are so many people that like you. Since they are all quite powerful, it will probably be even more troublesome when we enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, I'm afraid that trouble would continue to find us if I don't hurry up."

Luo Li gave a shallow smile as she replied: "It's fine. I can protect you. Just like the time you protected me in the Spiritual Road."

"I'm not that weak." Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the Xie Guan and the others, who were acting unnaturally. He gave a

faint smile and asked: “Did you leave them for me?”

“It can’t be helped. I don’t wish to be complained to by a certain someone I know.” Luo Li bit her red lips with her teeth. The eyes that were staring at Mu Chen carried a rare hint of grievance. She said: “You were always like that. You would not let others intervene in your matters.”

Mu Chen smiled bitterly. He knew that she was talking about the matter within the Spiritual Road.

“It’s not that I didn’t let you intervene. It’s because I knew that there would be a great price to pay. There are some things that a man should endure instead.” Mu Chen sighed and a hint of coldness flashed through his eyes.

“That matter was secretly caused by Ji Xuan.” Luo Li’s slender hands tightened as she gripped onto the sword hilt as she muttered.

“I know.” Mu Chen smiled. He stared at the delicate face of the girl in front of him and slowly replied: “However, even if I knew that it was set up by him, I would still have done the same thing. After all, there are rules that a person has within their hearts that should not be violated.”

Luo Li looked at his eyes, and her red lips turned upwards slightly around the edges. A hint of gentleness flashed through her serene eyes. The Mu Chen’s crazy actions during the Spiritual Road had made her understand a lot of things. This is why she came to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy without any hesitation.

“The Spiritual Road is only the beginning. We will finally have a true fight now that we’ve entered the Five Great Academies.” Mu Chen smiled. The handsome smile on his face revealed a bit of anticipation.

“I hope that he can give me some sort of surprise. Otherwise, it

will be quite dull during our training within the Five Great Academies. This time, let us have a good fight."

"I'll help you." Luo Li gently spoke.

"Of course you will. If you don't help me, I'll have to spank you." Mu Chen chuckled.

A tinge of crimson emerged on Luo Li's exquisite face. She glared angrily at Mu Chen. If someone else said that to her, she would probably have instantly stabbed them with her sword. But because the person in front of her was Mu Chen, she was reluctant to do so.

"But right now, you should still deal with the current situation."

Mu Chen smiled. Then, he directed this smile towards Xie Guan and the others: "Everybody, was it fun chasing after me?"

Xie Guan and the others had an unnatural expression. Their gazes were fixed on Luo Li, who was beside Mu Chen. At the moment, they were a little bit at a loss on whether or not they should speak up. It was obvious that they were quite afraid of Luo Li.

"Say whatever you want. She will not intervene." Mu Chen smiled faintly. He knew that Xie Guan and the others were scorning him.

"Hmph. If you want me to say it, then I'll say it. It's not like I'm afraid of you."

Xie Guan finally could not endure holding back in front of this many individuals. He sneered: "We are indeed afraid of King Luo. However, we're not afraid of you. To be blunt, if it wasn't for King Luo, do you think that you would have the right to be so arrogant in front of us? Blood Calamity? A person that was assessed as a King Class? You think that you can act like this with your strength only being at Spirit Stage Initial Phase?

Luo Li's eyebrows were raised slightly. Her slender fingers could not help but flick at the sword's scabbard. At this moment, a hint

of coldness flashed through her glass-like eyes.

“I’d like to clarify that I’m currently at Spirit Stage Middle Phase.” Mu Chen smiled. Although the majority of the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essences were absorbed by the Nine Netherbird, the remnants of it was enough for him to reach the Spirit Stage Middle Phase.

“Pu.”

Xie Guan and the others let out a mocking laugh as he quipped: “Does that make a difference?”

The three of them were genuine Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouses. In their eyes, Mu Chen’s Spirit Stage Middle Phase was not much better than Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

Behind the trio, a few Spirit Stage students also agreed. Although the level of this strength wasn’t bad, it wasn’t enough to frighten them.

“I think that there’s quite a bit of difference.”

Mu Chen smiled at the trio. However, his black eyes did not carry a hint of a smile within them. He spoke: “Next up, I’ll let you three play around with me for a while. That is, if you’re capable of doing so.”

Xie Guan and the others were stunned. These words of Mu Chen meant that he wanted to play around with the three of them by himself? With his Spirit Stage Middle Phase strength, a single person would be enough to deal with him. Wasn’t he just seeking his own death by wanting to fight against three of them by himself?

The three of them exchanged gazes with each other. However, their eyes quickly floated towards Luo Li, who was beside Mu Chen.

“If you don’t enjoy being his opponent, I’m willing to exchange places with him.” Luo Li said faintly as she glanced at the trio.

“Ohoho, since you have such courage, we wouldn’t be giving you face if we avoid you.” Hearing this, Xie Guan and the others instantly relaxed and replied.

“Oi, Mu Chen, what are you doing?” Seeing this, Ye Qingling hurriedly walked over and asked. These three were powerhouses at the level of the Spirit Stage Late Phase. Even if Mu Chen had made a breakthrough earlier, he was still only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. How would it be possible for him to fight against three of them by himself? This guy was usually pretty smart, why is he being so foolish now? Could it be that he wanted to show off in front of Luo Li?

Luo Li looked at Ye Qingling, who had a worried expression on her face. Then, her glass-like eyes focused themselves onto Mu Chen again, and her gaze seemed to convey an unsettled expression. Hmph, this bastard, there’s no shortage of pretty girls beside him.

When Mu Chen noticed Luo Li’s gaze, he could only smile helplessly. Then, he turned towards Ye Qingling and laughed: “Relax, I know what I’m doing.”

Seeing this, Ye Qingling didn’t say anything more. However, her eyes glowed when she turned her line of sight towards Luo Li: “You are King Luo, right? I can finally look at you from such a close range. I have come to worship you a lot.”

It seemed this was the first time that Luo Li had met such a girl that was this enthusiastic about her. She hesitated slightly before nodding: “Hello.”

“Hello, I’m Ye Qingling…”

Mu Chen glanced at Ye Qingling, who was extremely excited and was completely speechless. So she was one of Luo Li’s fans? He shook his head helplessly and ignored the two of them. Immediately afterwards, he took two steps forward and stared at the trio in the sky: “If you are able to block one of my attacks, I’ll

forget about what was done earlier. If you fail to do so, then leave your symbols behind. I'm currently lacking them."

Hearing this, Xie Guan and the others let out a cold laugh. This guy really is mad. Did he really just treat us as if they were little dogs or cats? How is it possible that he could deal with us so easily!?

"Then we'll ask for guidance from the famous and well-renowned Blood Calamity, Mu Chen!" The three of them laughed. Their laughs were filled with mocking sarcasm.

Mu Chen smiled and completely ignored their sarcastic laughs. Then, he slowly closed his eyes.

When the crowd of Spirit Stage students noticed Mu Chen's actions, they were stunned. However, before they could say anything, they noticed that a Spiritual Seal was rapidly emerging from Mu Chen's palms.

"A Spiritual Seal? He's actually a Spiritual Array Master?!" A hint of surprise flashed through the crowd.

Xie Guan and the others still had a sneer on their faces. However, their expressions soon turned serious. This is because they noticed that the amount of Spiritual Seals within Mu Chen's hand had actually surpassed 30.

Normally, a Spiritual Array that required a total of 35 Spiritual Seals was enough to be a threat towards Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouses.

"Buzz."

Their gazes were gradually turning even more serious, as they noticed the amount of Spiritual Seals within Mu Chen's hand had already reached 35 Seals. Moreover, it showed no signs of stopping.

36 Seals!

38 Seals!

40 Seals!

When the amount of Spiritual Seals in Mu Chen's hand had reached 40, the Spirit Stage students all took a deep breath. Shock quickly filled their eyes.

40 Spiritual Seals!

Finally, at this moment, Xie Guan and the others' expressions changed completely.

Chapter 144 – Might of the Dragon Elephant Array

"Buzz!"

All of the 40 Spiritual Seals let out a tremor as they condensed in Mu Chen's hands. Then, spiritual fluctuations emitted and caused further vibrations in the surrounding air.

At this moment, everybody was shocked by the 40 Spiritual Seals. Even Ye Qingling, Chu Qi and Fang Zhong were stunned. Since when did Mu Chen have such a powerful technique?

Even among the Rank 2 Spiritual Arrays, a Spiritual Array that consisted of 40 Spiritual Seals was considerably powerful. Its might was something that even an ordinary Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouse would have to evade.

While watching this scene quietly occur in front of her eyes, Luo Li let out a gentle smile.

Swish!

Once Mu Chen flipped his hand around, the 40 Spiritual Seals instantly integrated themselves into the air. At the same time, the surrounding air quickly became distorted. A faint dark-golden light started to emit from the air.

Roar!

While the space was becoming distorted, a faint dragon's roar resounded and shook the mountains.

In the sky nearby, Xie Guan and the others' expressions had turned completely serious. The contempt-filled expression that they initially had, finally faded away. From the Spiritual Array, they could feel something that was able to threaten them.

"Let's do this together!"

The three of them exchanged gazes and completely gave up on their pride. With a shout, dense Spiritual Energy erupted from the trio's bodies. Directly behind them, the light of their illusory Spiritual Beasts emerged. It was apparent that these were the Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences that they had ingested. Judging from the density of their Spiritual Energy, it should be powerful Spiritual Beasts that are roughly in the 100s of the Myriad Beast Record.

In order to block Mu Chen's powerful Spiritual Array attack, the trio did not dare to hold back.

"Buzz!"

A dark-golden light quickly emanated out from above Mu Chen. It finally turned into a massive dark-golden Spiritual Array. Then, the Spiritual Array slowly circulated, and beams of dark-golden lights intertwined together emanating mysterious fluctuations.

Judging from its appearance, this intertwining Spiritual Array seemed to be occupied by a dragon and an elephant, which guarded the heavens and the earth.

Finally, Mu Chen's tightly closed eyes slowly reopened. He extended his slender fingers, and tapped the air as he quietly muttered: "Dragon Elephant Array!"

Boom!

As if it was a dark-golden sun, a fierce burst of dazzling, dark-golden light emerged from the array. Then massive dark-golden beams of light erupted from the Spiritual Array.

Roar!

When the light beams shot out, they intertwined with each other and finally formed a roaring dragon and a gigantic elephant whose bodies were made entirely of gold. As the dragon and elephant galloped over, the sky seemed to tremble from their impact.

Spiritual Energy that covered the world rushed over towards the

trio.

In the rear, the crowd of Spirit Stage students had pale expressions as they watched the mighty dragon and elephant. From what they felt, they knew that this power could instantly obliterate them.

“Dong!”

At this moment, Xie Guan and the two other individuals let out their attacks together. With a cry, dense Spiritual Energy formed into three Spiritual Energy pillars and pierced through the sky. With an extraordinary atmosphere, it collided fiercely with the dragon and elephant.

BOOM!

Spiritual Energy shockwaves, visible to even the naked eye, expanded from the explosion. Even the air seemed to be displaced by these shockwaves. This caused bursts of gales to rampage through the forest.

“Dragon Elephant Suppression!”

As this occurred, a hint of coldness flashed through Mu Chen’s black eyes. He quietly shouted deep down inside as he changed the seals formed with his hand.

Boom!

Faster than the eye could see, the dragon and elephant fused together and formed into a dark-golden disc. On top of the disc, a golden dragon was surging through the air as the golden elephant set foot on the ground. The aura it produced was simply shocking.

Bang!

When the suppression of the dark-golden light disc descended, the light pillars formed from Xie Guan and the others started to break. Instantly, their faces turned completely pale, and their expressions were filled with horror.

In the end, the Spiritual Energy pillars were completely shattered and the dark-golden light disc turned into lights, which rushed out and fiercely collided with the trio's bodies.

Puchi.

At this moment, the trio's expressions were pale as they spat out a mouthful of blood. Their aura quickly weakened and they started to stagger.

The crowd of Spirit Stage students' expressions changed drastically when they became aware of the fact that the combined attack of Xie Guan and the two other Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouses failed to completely stop the Spiritual Array's power. Terror emerged in the depths of their eyes.

The power of this Spiritual Array was actually this terrifying?

Xie Guan and the others were completely pale as they exchanged gazes with each other. Their eyes flashed and they fiercely rushed away. It was evident that they planned on leaving.

"Swish!"

But just when their bodies showed some movement, a slender figure appeared from the rear. Then, a black longsword gently stopped in front of them.

"If you want to be disqualified, then feel free to take another step." Luo Li glanced at the trio and replied faintly.

The trio instantly stiffened and cold sweat trickled down their foreheads. They smiled bitterly and the symbol on their foreheads twinkled. A Rank 7 and two Rank 6 symbols immediately let up and 3 Spiritual lights rushed towards Mu Chen, who was below them.

At this moment, Mu Chen did not hesitate and absorbed the three Spiritual lights. The originally dim symbol instantly became filled with light. However, even after absorbing the three symbols, Mu Chen's symbol remained at the level of a Rank 7 Symbol. It was

evident that it was becoming increasingly difficult to rank up the symbol once it reached the late stages. If he wanted to increase it to Rank 8 or Rank 9, it would be even more difficult than Rank 7.

“Ohoho, I’ll have to thank the three of you for handing over such a big gift to me.” Mu Chen cupped his hands in thanks towards Xie Guan and the others as he spoke.

The trio’s faces immediately twitched and revealed a smile filled with bitterness. Although they were constantly cursing Mu Chen within their hearts, they did not dare mutter out loud.

At this location, not only was there the terrifying King Luo, even Mu Chen, whom they had originally thought was weak, revealed an extraordinary power. The Spiritual Array that he had used earlier wasn’t something that the three of them together could stop.

“That guy really is tough…” At this moment, the trio had eyes filled with bitterness. This time, they tried to seize an opportunity only to end up much worse than they started. In order to increase their symbols to such a level, they had to pay with great effort. However, all of this effort was handed over to Mu Chen.

“Goodbye, you three. I won’t send you off.” Mu Chen didn’t bother talking with them as he let out a faint laugh.

“Mu Chen, you shouldn’t act too cocky. Although you have King Luo protecting you, there is more than one “King” from the Spiritual Road within this Northern Heavens World. Once you approach the Northern Heavens Hall, let’s see how cocky you can be!” Xie Guan gritted his teeth as he let out a sneer filled with unwillingness. Then, he did not dare to remain at this location and quickly fled into the distance.

“So there are other Kings…” Mu Chen smiled. A hint of coldness flashed through the depths of his eyes. No matter who it was, if they believed that they could step on Mu Chen because he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road midway, he did not mind letting

them understand that the Spiritual Road's Empowerment didn't give them the overwhelming advantage that they had imagined.

"Everyone, are you not going to leave? Could it be that all of you are planning to hand over your symbols to me?" Mu Chen stared coldly at the Spirit Stage students in the air as he did not have a favorable impression of these people. However, he did not force them to hand over their symbols. If he did so, it was possible that he would be easily cornered by them. After all, it was quite troubling to deal with so many people.

The Spirit Stage students in the air all let out a hollow laugh and did not dare to refute. They immediately rushed away and in a few seconds, the sky was completely empty.

When Mu Chen noticed the empty sky, he also let out a breath of relief.

Luo Li descended from the sky and stood beside Mu Chen.

"Brother Chu, Brother Fang. This time, I'll have to thank you." Mu Chen turned around to stare at Chu Qi and Fang Zhong, who had complicated expressions, as he cupped his fists as thanks. Since they were willing to stand out and help him at that crucial moment, even if it wasn't too beneficial, Mu Chen would still remember this favor from them.

Fang Zhong smiled as he shook his head. On the other hand, Chu Qi completely ignored Mu Chen and his eyes were firmly fixed on Luo Li. His mouth moved and he asked with a reddened face: "Luo Li, a...are you alright these days?"

Luo Li glanced at Chu Qi and raised her eyebrows. She thought for a moment before asking: "Do we know each other?"

Puchi.

From the side, Ye Qingling could not help but laugh. Fang Zhong also had a grin on his face as he stared sympathetically at Chu Qi. What a poor guy...

Chu Qi scratched his head and replied embarrassedly: “We’ve met in the Spiritual Road before. You’ve even saved me once…”

When Luo Li heard this, she nodded slightly. But when they judged the look on her face, everybody wondered if she had attempted to recall this memory. However, this was her personality. She would always adopt an uncaring attitude towards the things that she did not care about.

“Brother Chu, Brother Fang. It’s all thanks to your help that I’ve managed to successfully hunt the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. I’ll let you have this Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.” Mu Chen waved his hand and the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon’s massive body emerged on the ground in front of them.

“Thank you, Brother Mu.” Seeing this, Fang Zhong was completely delighted and cupped his hands in thanks.

“Also, there’s also two Spiritual Auras for our symbols. I’ll divide one to the two of you.” Mu Chen flicked his fingers and an icy-blue Spiritual Aura surged out. Judging from the Spiritual Aura coming from the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, it was probably enough for a symbol to rank up to Rank 7 completely from Rank 1.

Although Mu Chen could probably reach Rank 8 Symbol if he absorbed these two Spiritual Auras, he wasn’t a person who would seize all the benefits for himself. Since he had absorbed the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Essences, he had already obtained a massive benefit.

Seeing that Mu Chen was willing to hand over the Symbol’s Spiritual Aura to them as well, he was filled with joy that he couldn’t even close his mouth probably and hurriedly divided it with Chu Qi. This is because their symbols were already at Rank 6. Once they absorbed it, they would have ranked up to Rank 7.

After handing these items to Fang Zhong, Mu Chen looked at Ye Qingling and handed over the other Spiritual Aura. He said embarrassedly: “I originally planned on giving you one of the

Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences, but something came up and it's all gone."

Ye Qingling smiled as he took the Spiritual Aura and said: "It's fine. Although it's unfortunate that the Soul Essences are gone, I'm still quite satisfied with just this."

"I've hunted a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast before. Luckily for you, there's one Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence remaining. It's also quite compatible with you." Luo Li's glass-like eyes blinked and she suddenly extended her hand. A clump of light surged out and from within the clump of lights, there seemed to be a snowy-white unicorn.

"Is this the Jaded Unicorn that's ranked 87th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking?" Ye Qingling stared at the snowy-white Soul Essence and was shocked. She hurriedly replied: "It's too precious. I can't accept it."

"You've helped him out. Consider this as my thanks." Luo Li smiled faintly and placed the Soul Essence within Ye Qingling's hands.

"I've helped him out, yet you were the one that thanked me. King Luo really is virtuous." Ye Qingling glanced mischievously at Luo Li and said: "Your relationship is pretty good."

Mu Chen also smiled. Between him and Luo Li, they naturally would not pay attention to these things. He immediately waved and said: "Let's go. We'll head back now. Mo Ling and the others are probably quite anxious. Once we find them, we should probably head to the most inner territory of the Northern Heavens Hall..."

"Only that place will be truly lively."

Chapter 145 – Old Rival

In the Ye Clan's campground, cheers filled with excitement instantly broke out when Mo Ling and the others saw Mu Chen, Ye Qingling and the rest returning.

A while ago, information about Mu Chen being chased by others was circulated around. Thus, all of them knew about it and had been extremely worried. Although they knew how powerful Mu Chen was, the situation wasn't the same as before. The large force that was chasing after him was far too terrifying. Therefore, they were quite worried. If something were to happen to Mu Chen, Ye Qingling and the oters, who stole many of the symbols of them, would probably cause the downfall of the Ye Clan.

"Sister!"

Sun'Er hurriedly rushed over and dove headfirst into Ye Qingling's arms. The latter hugged her as she smiled.

"Brother Mu!"

Mo Ling and the others also gathered around quickly. Their faces were filled with excitement. But just when they were about to speak, they noticed the girl in black dress behind Mu Chen. Due to her appearance, the group of boys was completely stunned.

The girl in the black dress possessed a delicate, beautiful appearance. That appearance had even surpassed Ye Qingling's. Moreover, the temperament that she radiated was also magnificent. Her glass-like eyes were calm and serene. They gave an intoxicating feeling to everybody who staring into them.

Although Mo Ling and the others had seen many beautiful girls before, it was the first time that they seen such a breathtaking beauty. In that instant, the youthful boys all held back from speaking and hesitated, tongue-tied in front of this beauty.

"You shouldn't have any undesirable thoughts. This person is a

big shot. Moreover, someone already obtained her. If you dare have any thoughts about her, you would have to be careful of Mu Chen beating you up you up to the point where you're like a pig." Ye Qingling covered her mouth as she laughed.

As Luo Li's charisma was something that could even influence the usually calm Ye Qingling, it was not shocking that it affected Mo Ling and the others.

"Ah?"

At this moment, the crowd all let out a cry. Then, envious gazes were shot towards Mu Chen. Contrary to this, Mo Ling scratched his head instead as he asked: "Brother Mu, when did you find such a beauty? Sister Qian'Er would be sad if she knew."

Hearing this, Mu Chen's heart suddenly jumped. This brat truly was speaking carelessly.

"Who is Sister Qian'Er?" As expected, Luo Li approached Mo Ling as her clear eyes glanced at Mu Chen. Then, she asked with a smile.

Mo Ling's face instantly turned red and replied hesitantly: "It's a friend of ours in the Northern Spiritual Realm. She grew up together with Brother Mu."

"Oh, so it's a childhood friend." Luo Li's slender hands gently pinched Mu Chen's palm as she spoke.

When Mu Chen noticed Luo Li's expression, he was quite interested. After all, he was accustomed to her uncaring and indifferent expression. Thus, this was the first time that he saw such an expression as well.

"Let's go. Don't be jealous."

Mu Chen smiled and held Luo Li's warm and slender hand as he headed inside the camp: "Everybody should prepare themselves. We will leave tomorrow and head to the innermost region of the Northern Heavens World. However, everybody can relax. I will not

let anyone here be eliminated."

Since Mu Chen had already mixed together with the tiny Ye Clan for a while, he had a little bit of feeling towards it. Thus, he didn't mind helping them out.

"Brother Mu is amazing!"

When the members of the Ye Clan heard this, they instantly rejoiced and shouted out excitedly. With Mu Chen's word, they wouldn't have to worry about their symbols not reaching the required rank and, thus, be eliminated.

On the other hand, Luo Li's face turned slightly red as she was dragged away by Mu Chen under many people's gazes. She struggled for a moment, but Mu Chen held onto her tightly. In the end, she could only allow him to do what he wanted...

As the evening sky enveloped them, a bonfire rose up within the campground, causing it to be extremely lively.

In the corner of the campground, Mu Chen and Luo Li were sitting alone beside a bonfire. Although gazes would be constantly directed over secretly, nobody came to disturb them.

Luo Li's slender hands were holding onto the spit rack as the dazzling roasted meat emitted out an enticing aroma above the fire. Compared to what Mu Chen usually made, it was many times better in terms of smell and taste.

"Here." Seeing Mu Chen stare enviously at it, Luo Li could not help but laugh as she handed the roasted meat over.

"I can finally eat what Lord King Luo had personally made again." Mu Chen accepted and let out a sigh. This taste was truly something that he had missed.

Hearing Mu Chen tease her, Luo Li batted an eye at him. However, the corner of her lips gently lifted up and revealed the joy within her heart. As long as she was together with him, even the tiniest things made her happier than when she hunted down

Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts by herself.

While she sat elegantly next to the bonfire, her black dress outlined her slender body. Then, she quietly watched Mu Chen voraciously devour the meat as her thin fingers released the ribbon on her hair. As she did, her long silver hair fell down and released a dazzling luster underneath the glow of the fire.

“When will your hair turn back?” Mu Chen quickly finished the roasted meat and casually asked as he glanced at Luo Li’s hair. He could vaguely recall that he had once asked Luo Li about the color of her hair. Back then, she had mentioned that it was the result of the Gong Fa Spiritual Art that she had trained in.

“What? Do you not like it?” Luo Li was slightly startled and attempted to asked casually.

“How could I dare say such a thing? If I mention that I don’t like it, you will ignore me for a few days.” Mu Chen couldn’t help but laugh. Back then, he had mentioned that it would have looked better if it was black. In response, Luo Li gave a noncommittal smile towards him. But during the next three days, Mu Chen had to take care of his own food supplies. Thus, after this punishment, Mu Chen didn’t dare talk about the color of her hair.

“Speaking about the Spiritual Road, who was the one to obtain the Spirit Crown?” Mu Chen wiped his mouth and asked Luo Li.

The so-called Spirit Crown was the utmost glory and honor one could obtain within the Spiritual Road. However, the only ones that were eligible to obtain it were people that were assessed as King Class. It was also the most dazzling moment within the entire Spiritual Road.

Regarding about this, Mu Chen had actually been looking forward to it prior to him being kicked out of the Spiritual Road. After all, the individuals that participated in this dazzling moment were ones standing at the pinnacle of Spiritual Road. His blood boiled as he thought that he would be able to compete with them.

“In the end, the Spirit Crown ended up in Wen Qingxuan’s hands.” Luo Li replied.

“Wen Qingxuan? A girl?” Mu Chen was quite surprised. The Spiritual Road was quite huge and since he had been kicked out midway, he was a bit unfamiliar with a few people who stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. At the very least, he had never heard about this Wen Qingxuan.

“She is quite powerful. Currently, she entered the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. You will probably have the opportunity to meet her in the future.” Luo Li nodded. If it wasn’t for the fact that she was filled with anger and had kept a constant watch on Ji Xuan, she would have probably faced Wen Qingxuan. However, Ji Xuan wasn’t someone weak. Although she managed to push him back in the end, she had also ended up paying a heavy price.

“As expected of the Five Great Academies. It’s truly a place where groups of strong individuals gather.” Mu Chen smiled. Who knows how bustling it would be when the Exchange Festival for Five Great Academies occurs?

“Ah, right. Yang Hong also entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.” Luo Li suddenly spoke up.

“Yang Hong?” Mu Chen’s gaze turned serious. In the Spiritual Road, he had two very powerful enemies. One was Ji Xuan, the other was Yang Hong. He had never imagined that guy would have entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Wouldn’t that mean that they would meet up in the future?

“Is he in the Northern Heavens World as well?” Mu Chen looked at Luo Li while an icy look flashed across his black eyes. Although the event in the Spiritual Road was secretly caused by Ji Xuan, Yang Hong was probably involved in it as well.

“Yes. However, he isn’t in our Northern Heavens World.” Luo Li nodded. There were a total of four Northern Heavens World used

as examination grounds, and it seemed that Yang Hong wasn't in the same one as them.

"It's fine. We'll naturally meet again in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Mu Chen smiled faintly. Yang Hong, huh? Since there's no way to find Ji Xuan right now, I'll deal with you first. Otherwise, wouldn't it be a bit boring within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

"Also, there's a total of 8 people, including me, that obtained a King Class assessment inside this Northern Heavens World." Luo Li continued: "Among the eight of us, there are two that you should know. It's the two brothers, Shi Jingtian and Shi Hao."

"The Shi Family's brothers that we nearly killed in the Spiritual Road?" Mu Chen frowned. Enemies were truly destined to meet again. He never imagined that he would run into them again.

"Yes. At this moment, the two brothers are only a step away from reaching Heavenly Fusion Stage. They are quite powerful." Luo Li replied.

Mu Chen nodded. If they are only a step away from reaching Heavenly Fusion Stage, it would mean that their breakthrough isn't too far away. In the Northern Heavens World, they would be considered at the top of the bunch.

"You've already entered the Heavenly Fusion Stage, right?" Mu Chen looked at Luo Li and asked.

Luo Li nodded and smiled: "So you will have to hurry and catch up to me. Otherwise, you'll be thrown far behind me."

"Even if I'm thrown far behind you, I can still spank you." Mu Chen teased.

"Pervert." Luo Li was a little bit embarrassed and batted an eye at him. Then, she said: "I'm going to cultivate. You should guard tonight."

As these words exited her mouth, her eyes softened up. She

thought back to the days in the Spiritual Road when they had to rely on each other. Although it had been quite tough, those days had become irreplaceable memories in their hearts.

Mu Chen smiled and asked: “Then let’s have another hug?” He was still reminiscing the warm and soft skin that he had hugged today. In the past, it had been rare for him to obtain such a treatment.

Luo Li glared at Mu Chen. This guy is becoming greedier. I must ignore him.

“I’m going to cultivate.”

Luo Li’s slender hands were placed on top of the sword hilt. Then, she closed her eyes and entered a state of cultivation. From then on, she ignored Mu Chen.

Seeing this, Mu Chen smiled. Underneath the bonfire’s glow, he stared at Luo Li’s beautiful appearance. A hint of gentle kindness also passed through his black eyes.

It’s great that I’ve met you. I’m glad that I saved you when I first met you in the Spiritual Road...

“Hu.”

Mu Chen stared at the sky and let out a sigh. Then, he slowly clenched his hands. It seemed that there were many rivals of his inside the Northern Heavens World...

Shi Jingtian, Shi Hao, Yang Hong...

I made you afraid of me during the Spiritual Road. Even in the Great Thousand World, I can do the same. Therefore, you shouldn’t underestimate me because I lost the Spiritual Energy Empowerment. Otherwise, you will have to pay a great price...

Chapter 146 – Meeting Place

Within the vast mountains, commotions rang out. Numerous furious roars resounded as Spiritual Beasts charged towards a dozen agile figures.

“H…Hurry. Lead them all towards Brother Mu!”

“If you don’t want to be eaten by these Spiritual Beasts, then put your back into it!”

In front of the Spiritual Beasts, tired, breathless groans could be heard from a group of people. Then, these figures mustered all their strength to head towards a nearby hill. At that location, there were numerous figures waiting in ambush.

On the top of the hill, a massive Spiritual Array was slowly circulating. Dragon and elephant sounds could be heard from time to time, as a formidable Spiritual Energy emitted out.

Mu Chen stared at the numerous Spiritual Beasts that were attracted by the group. There were probably over 40 Spiritual Beasts. Furthermore, at the forefront of the group, there were ten Spiritual Beasts that possessed the strength of a High Rank Spiritual Beast.

However, Spiritual Beasts at this level weren’t a threat to the current Mu Chen.

“Let’s move.”

Mu Chen muttered and waved his hand. A formidable fluctuation instantly burst out of the Spiritual Array. Then, a dark-golden light erupted and formed a dragon and an elephant as they surged over.

Bang!

As the dragon and elephant passed by, countless massive Spiritual Beasts flew backwards and had their bones completely

shattered by the impact. Slowly, their life faded away.

Although the Spiritual Array was considerably powerful, there was a large quantity of Spiritual Beasts. Therefore, there were still a few agile Spiritual Beasts that managed to escape and rushed fiercely at the Ye Clan members.

Seeing this, Ye Qingling was prepared to take action. However, Luo Li, who was beside her, gripped the hilt of the black longsword with her slender hand. The longsword trembled for a moment, and the shadow of a sword pierced through the empty space.

Chi Chi!

When the Spiritual Beasts were only a few hundred meters away from the Ye Clan members, their bodies suddenly turned stiff. Fresh blood immediately sprayed out and they were actually cut into two halves. At the point where they were cut, it was as smooth as a mirror.

The Ye Clan members all sucked in a breath of cold air. Their eyes were completely filled with horror as they looked at Luo Li. They didn't know what happened, but the Spiritual Beasts had been split apart. Furthermore, it had been done from such a far distance.

If these Spiritual Beasts were them, they would have probably died in a much terrible way.

"Hurry and take the Soul Essences out. For the people whose symbol hasn't reach Rank 4, they should absorb the Spiritual Aura for their symbols." The Spiritual Array above Mu Chen's head slowly faded away as he smiled at Wang Sheng and the others.

"Yes!"

Wang Sheng and the others hurriedly responded, then, they rushed out in excitement. These Spiritual Beasts weren't weak. If they were planning to deal with it by themselves, they would have to pay a price in order to successfully kill one of the Spiritual Beast.

But with the help of a powerful person such as Mu Chen, everything had turned simple once again.

Ye Qingling looked at the excited Ye Clan members and smiled. She turned around and said to Mu Chen: “Thank you very much.”

If it wasn’t for Mu Chen, it was evident that it would have been impossible for her to help every single Ye Clan member to reach Rank 4 Symbol. Therefore, a few members would have to leave unhappily. If that were to happen, every one of them would definitely feel bitter.

Mu Chen shook his head: “It wasn’t easy to come to this place. Moreover, they definitely have some talent. If they were to successfully enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they should be able to be somewhat successful. Therefore, it would be a pity if they were eliminated due to some misfortune.”

“Right now, we are approaching the innermost region of the Northern Heavens World. We should soon reach the meeting place.” Luo Li spoke gently.

“The meeting place, huh…”

Hearing this, Mu Chen’s eyes narrowed slightly. At that location, he would probably be able to meet all the powerful individuals within this Northern Heavens World. It was truly something that he was looking forward to.

“Let’s prepare to leave.” Mu Chen said as he looked at Ye Qingling.

“Okay.”

In the following half-a-day, Mu Chen began to hurry ahead at full speed. This was because this place was already considered to be the heart of the Northern Heavens World. Thus, approximately 70-80% of the students had gathered at this location. The number of people here was simply astonishing. Even from a distance of a hundred miles, they were still able to see light figures rushing

through the air.

As they hurried, Mu Chen and the others met with numerous small and large forces. All of them were filled with excitement as they headed in the same direction. That direction led to the last stop of the Northern Heavens World's examination.

From there, they would truly enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

The students that managed to reach this location were all people with real skill. Every single one of their symbols on their forehead had surpassed Rank 4. Although it wasn't quite amazing, it was still enough for them to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Of course, these forces would all cast surprised gazes towards the Ye Clan were Mu Chen and the others resided. After all, they didn't have many individuals and many of them didn't have a particularly powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation. This made them surprised. A small force with such pitiful power was actually successful in reaching this location? And the majority of the people possessed a Rank 4 symbol?

Mu Chen and the others didn't care about the gazes of the other forces. The group of men rushed through the forest and finally slowed down as sunset approached.

At this moment, everybody was a little shocked as they stared out into the distance.

It was an open plain on top of a mountain. But at this moment, a dense mass of people were spread out to the end of their line of sight. Furthermore, a steady stream of figures were approaching from afar.

Dense Spiritual Energy fluctuations rushed out into the sky.

It was a sea of people.

This was where the truly strong people gathered.

Various genius from all over the Great Thousand World would enter the Northern Heavens World and finally gathered in this location. But only the ones that stood out from the crowd here were truly heaven-sent individuals.

“There’s so many people.” Wang Sheng and the others exclaimed out loud. They could feel that it was extremely easy to find Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase individuals here. Furthermore, Spirit Stage powerhouses were a dime a dozen here.

“Let’s enter as well.”

Mu Chen waved as he headed towards the center of the meeting place. Luo Li, Ye Qingling and the others quickly followed behind him.

But shortly after they departed, dozens of figures surrounded them from the front. Numerous gazes swept across Mu Chen and the others before they finally stopped on Luo Li’s body.

Mu Chen’s group had very little people. Moreover, the majority of them weren’t particularly strong. Coupled with the fact that they had an eye-catching existence such as Luo Li with them, it was natural that they would be targeted by others.

“Haha, where did such a beauty come from? How could you be within this tiny force? Why don’t you come to our Mo Clan? With our protection, nobody would dare touch you!” These dozen of figures weren’t weak. The leading two figures had even reached Spirit Stage Middle Phase. At this moment, they were grinning as they stared at Mu Chen and the others.

Numerous gazes were also directed towards them from the surroundings. However, when a few gazes noticed Luo Li, who was beside Mu Chen, these gazes immediately turned strange. Then, when they looked at the people that stopped Mu Chen, their gazes were filled with sympathy and joy.

At this moment, Mu Chen frowned slightly. Beside him, Luo Li’s

hand had already covered the hilt of her sword.

“Bang!”

But just when she was about to attack, the person who previously spoke up suddenly flew towards the ground and was splayed as if he was a dog. His face reddened as he got up and shouted: “Who?”

As he shouted out, he noticed a person staring at him darkly. He immediately retreated: “Boss.”

The skinny figure did not care about him and step forward. Then, he cupped his fist towards Luo Li as he spoke: “I apologize. My man spoke out without thinking about what he said. I hope that King Luo would not take it personally.”

The boy earlier heard this and his expression changed. Although he did not participate in the Spiritual Road, he knew what the words, King Luo, represented. Only the people, who stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road, possessed a title. Even his boss, who had reached Spirit Stage Late Phase, wasn’t qualified to obtain one...

Then, the skinny man turned his gaze towards Mu Chen, who was beside Luo Li. He stared at Mu Chen’s handsome face and was a little bit shocked. His eyes instantly retracted when he saw Mu Chen.

“You recognize me?” Seeing his reaction, Mu Chen asked in surprise.

“Ohoho, Blood Calamity Mu Chen, how is it possible that I don’t know you?” The skinny boy let out an unnatural laugh as he spoke: “I was nearly affected by the Blood Calamity in the Spiritual Road...”

He still remembered the monstrous and bloody day. And the coldhearted boy that had caused this disaster-like Blood Calamity was in front of him.

“Oh.” Mu Chen smiled: “Then, I’m sorry about it.”

Cold sweat flowed down from the skinny boy's forehead. However, he did not dare answer Mu Chen. In his eyes, the gentle and handsome-looking boy was far more terrifying than King Luo, who was beside him.

"In the future, you should teach your men better. Otherwise, it would be easy for you to get into trouble." Mu Chen smiled faintly and said nothing more. He immediately brought the crowd through the sea of humans and headed forward.

"Boss, who is that boy?" He only possessed the same strength as me, how could he talk to you like this?" Seeing Mu Chen depart, the person, who had acted rudely, asked secretly.

"He's your mom." Seeing the boy's wretched appearance, the skinny boy was completely furious and sent another kick towards him. "You actually dare provoke that death god. Are you f*cking tired of life? Unlike you, I still want to live a little bit longer!"

About the unrest behind him, Mu Chen didn't care about it. He brought the group through the crowd and headed towards the front.

At this location, it wasn't quite crowded. Moreover, it was split apart by many powerful forces. These forces weren't comparable to the ones before. Nobody would dare set foot within their territory.

They were considered to be the strongest forces within the entire Northern Heavens World.

Compared to them, Mu Chen's group was quite strange. This is why many people cast unnatural gazes towards them.

But apart from a few puzzled looks, the majority of them stared complicatedly at the boy beside Luo Li.

That guy really appeared.

In the northwest corner of this location, two figures suddenly stood up while they were surrounded by a group of powerful

individuals. A extremely powerful aura erupted out, which caused many gazes in this region to be directed over towards them.

“Mu Chen!”

The two figures that emitted out such a formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuation stared coldly at Mu Chen’s figure. Their cold voices resounded out directly through this open space.

“I never expected that you would appear here!”

Chapter 147 – Shi Familys Brothers

In the center of this vast open plain, the major forces had co-existed through dividing their territories. Every single one of these forces possessed a powerful lineup. Even Spirit Stage students that were powerful enough to become the leader of a Clan would have to control themselves as if they were only ordinary existences.

This is because they knew that an ordinary Spirit Stage wasn't qualified to step into this place filled with experts.

And in the central zone, there were seven eye-catching locations. These seven locations were known as the territory of the most formidable groups. In front of their formations, there were extremely powerful Spiritual fluctuations emitting out.

In the northeast corner, there was a crowd of hundreds of people. In the front of this crowd were two boys. One of them was tall and burly, while the other was quite skinny. Their appearances were quite familiar as they were the ones who assisted Luo Li in the hunt for the Single-Eyed Diamond Ape.

These two were also individuals who stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. They were also assessed as King Class. King Yan, Yan Xiao, and King Zhou, Zhou Ling. Even among this gathering location of strong individuals, they were still dazzling existences.

At this moment, it was evident that they had also discovered Mu Chen and Luo Li, who arrived at this location. Both of them wore complicated expressions as their gaze remained fixed on Mu Chen. In the Spiritual Road, they had met Mu Chen once before. More importantly, they had fought against each other. However, they had stopped once they made contact and didn't attempt to kill each other. Speaking of which, they felt a little bit of sympathy towards him.

Aside from the two of them, there were still three other locations that had two figures with formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

It was evident that they were also people who were assessed as King Class that came out from the Spiritual Road.

On the other side, two figures stood up among the crowd as they stared coldly at Mu Chen. The cold shout earlier had come out from their mouths.

These two individuals were the dual kings from the Shi Family that Luo Li had mentioned earlier. It was Shi Jingtian and Shi Hao, who were considered to be Mu Chen's rivals in the Spiritual Road.

In this region, the eight Kings from Spiritual Road had all gathered. Apart from them, there were other large forces. Although the leaders of these forces did not participate in the Spiritual Road, their strength wasn't any weaker than the Kings from the Spiritual Road. Normally speaking, these people were either brought up by large forces within the Great Thousand World or ones that had extraordinary encounters. They were all heaven-sent individuals.

This was truly the place where only the strong gathered.

The Shi Brothers' cries resounded in the air like thunder. It instantly suppressed the liveliness of this location. Suddenly, numerous gazes were cast towards the central area.

"Isn't that the dual kings from the Shi Family? These two brothers were individuals that were assessed as King Class within the Spiritual Road. It's rumored that they were only half-a-step away from reaching Heavenly Fusion Stage. When the two of them combine forces, they could even stand against a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase powerhouse."

"Did they shout Mu Chen earlier? Could it be the Blood Calamity Mu Chen from the Spiritual Road?"

"Who else could it be aside from that demon? I've heard earlier that he came to this Northern Heavens World. Moreover, he obtained two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences!"

“However, it’s said that his strength is only at Spirit Stage Middle Phase. It seems that he suffered a huge loss when he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road. Right now, he has quite a bit of gap separating him from the King Class individuals…”

“The dual kings from the Shi Family were his rivals in the Spiritual Road. Since they’ve met, it’s likely that they wouldn’t let him go easily. However, King Luo is beside Mu Chen. She is a person that is even more fearsome than the dual kings of the Shi Family. This time, it would definitely be interesting…”

Currently, there were too many people here. Among them, there were countless that came out from the Spiritual Road. With a glance, they had seen all the people that were at the scene. Thus, strange voices spread out quickly through the crowd.

At this moment, Mu Chen turned his gaze towards the two familiar figures. The Shi Brothers were somewhat burly. Shi Jingtian is bald and had a cold gaze which made others shiver. On the other hand, Shi Hao had long hair and a calm expression. However, the glare that he had when he looked at Mu Chen was filled with coldness.

“I was wondering who it was. So it was one of the people that I defeated before.” Mu Chen smiled. Since the two of them acted so rudely once they met, he naturally didn’t bother giving them any face.

“You think you still have the right to act so arrogant?” Shi Jingtian sneered. He looked at Mu Chen and a mocking smile emerged: “The once famous Blood Calamity in the Spiritual Road is only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase? With such strength, you’re not qualified to stand at this location. From what I see, you should scram!”

In the central area, the majority of the powerhouses stared unkindly at the two forces. However, they did not speak and maintained as a bystander. But judging from the surface, Mu Chen

wasn't worthy of their attention. After all, they could easily find a group of people who was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. Truthfully, he wasn't qualified to be placed on an equal footing with them.

But the people at the scene weren't idiots. They naturally did not dare to underestimate Mu Chen. Moreover, even if they did, there was still Luo Li, who stood beside Mu Chen. She was an existence that they all feared.

"If you think that we're not qualified, you two brothers could see if you can drive us out." Luo Li's clear eyes stared at Shi Jingtian and Shi Hao. Her voice was filled with coldness as she spoke.

"Luo Li, did you believe that we two brothers are afraid of you?!" Shi Jingtian's eyes darkened as he shouted out.

"If that's the case, then let me experience the Shi Family's Dual King's Stone Emperor Art." Luo Li's slender hand slowly covered the black longsword as she muttered.

Bang!

As Luo Li's voice resounded out, a formidable Spiritual Energy erupted out from her body. This Spiritual Energy fluctuation instantly changed numerous people's expressions.

"This Spiritual Energy fluctuation...She actually reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage?! How terrifying!"

As they felt the pressure emitting out from the Spiritual Energy fluctuation, sounds of shock erupted out through this area. Even the people who stood at the peak of this area turned serious and revealed a hint of fear in their eyes.

At this moment, the brothers from the Shi Family narrowed their eyes. Then, Shi Jingtian turned his gaze towards Mu Chen and sneered: "Mu Chen, you are still considered to be a well-known figure within the Spiritual Road. Although I've never liked you in the past, you still had my respect for always standing in front of

women. Why have you fallen to the point where you would need a woman to protect you now that we've returned to the Great Thousand World?"

"Shi Jingtian. You can stop with your foolish provocations." Mu Chen lowered his eyes and responded faintly.

"You shouldn't act too cocky either. So what if Luo Li is going to attack? If we two brothers join forces together, we aren't afraid of her. Do you think that with the measly amount of people behind you, you would be able to fight against our Shi Clan?" Shi Jingtian said.

"You can try it if you want." Mu Chen smiled slightly. However, his smile was filled with mercilessness. Perhaps the Ye Clan members weren't as powerful as the Shi Clan. But if they dared to attack, Mu Chen didn't mind letting them pay a heavy price.

Shi Jingtian's eyes immediately turned cold as he stared at Mu Chen. The latter also stared back at him and the atmosphere instantly turned tense.

"Ohoho, if you have something to say, then please say it. Why must you take action immediately? It's best if it's peaceful."

A sudden laughter suddenly rang out within this tense atmosphere. Numerous gazes turned around and noticed that the skinny boy was staring at the two of them from the northeast corner. It was King Zhou, Zhou Ling.

"Zhou Ling. Are you planning to intervene in this as well?" Seeing the skinny boy, Shi Hao frowned and asked coldly.

Hearing this, Zhou Ling smiled: "Currently, the majority of the people within the Northern Heavens World have gathered at this meeting place. Our goals are the same. To find the Northern Heavens Hall. However, no matter how hard we look, there is no trace of the Northern Heavens Hall."

"What do you want to say?" Shi Hao frowned and asked.

“As far as I know, the Northern Heavens Hall should be at this location. However, it hasn’t appeared yet. Thus, there is only one reason. It’s because the condition triggering the appearance of the Northern Heavens Hall have not been satisfied yet.” Zhou Ling smiled.

“What condition?” From nearby, a figure wearing a red robe asked suddenly. This person also possessed a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation. It was Yan Ling. He was also a person who stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road and was known as King Yan.

“According to my guess, the condition should be the appearance of a Rank 9 Symbol. Unfortunately, none of us have achieved it.” Zhou Ling looked helplessly in Luo Li’s direction. Originally, Luo Li was most likely to achieve it. However, she gave it up because of Mu Chen.

“A Rank 9 Symbol…”

Hearing this, everybody frowned. At this location, there were a few people that had a Rank 8 Symbol, but nobody had a Rank 9 symbol.

“Therefore, I’m proposing that we should form a Rank 9 Symbol together. Why don’t we talk about the earlier matter after we trigger the appearance of the Northern Heavens Hall?” Zhou Ling smiled.

“Form one together?” Shi Jingtian sneered: “From what I see, why don’t we force the weakest one to hand over their symbol to us. This way, it would be faster and more efficient.”

As he sneered, his gaze was directed towards Mu Chen. It goes without saying that he was targeting Mu Chen.

“It seems that you are planning to cause trouble for me today no matter what.” Mu Chen smiled coldly.

“I only wanted you to understand that right now, you simply

aren’t qualified to stand at the same place as we are!” Shi Jingtian sneered.

Mu Chen sighed. Then, he slowly stepped forward among the bustling commotions and clenched his hand. He smiled gently: “It’s certainly not my style to endure the bullying when it’s said directly to me. Since it’s going to be like this, come out. In the Spiritual Road, I could turn you into a loser dog. In this place, the outcome would be exactly the same.”

“If you lose, hand over your symbol.”

When Shi Jingtian noticed that Mu Chen dared to openly challenge him, he suddenly grinned. Wasn’t he always waiting for this moment when he had constantly provoked him?

“If you want my symbol, that’s fine. But if you lose, you will have to scram. At the same time, you must hand over Luo Li’s symbol. I don’t care about your symbol!” Shi Jingtian replied in contempt.

Mu Chen frowned. But before he could speak, Luo Li, who was behind him, responded faintly: “Fine!”

Chapter 148 – Fighting Against Shi Jingtian

WAHH.

When Luo Li muttered straightforwardly “Fine”, everybody in the central area entered into an uproar. It was evident that they didn’t understand why Luo Li was willing to accept it so easily.

If she was the one that was going to fight, it would be easier to understand. However, Mu Chen was only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. His strength wasn’t considered to be outstanding among the rest of them here. Moreover, his opponent was Shi Jingtian, a powerhouse who was half-a-step from reaching Heavenly Fusion Stage!

Did she really believe that Mu Chen wouldn’t lose?

Not far away, Zhou Ling smiled bitterly as he watched this scene. He had a slightly complex expression on his face. Since he had cooperated with Luo Li previously, he had some understanding of the latter’s personality. However, during the period when they cooperated with each other, he had never seen Luo Li, who was only concerned about cultivating, care about another person.

“Mu Chen. You’re truly a lucky guy. However, I hope that you will not disappoint her…” Zhou Ling looked at the boy, who slowly walked forward, as he muttered.

“Haha. It seems that King Luo believes in you quite a bit.” Shi Jingtian laughed as he stared coldly at Mu Chen.

“Can we begin?” Mu Chen smiled. Within his black eyes, a hint of coldness surged. He never thought that this person would still be so irritating.

“Then come at me!”

A chill surged through Shi Jingtian’s eyes and he took a step forward. Dense Spiritual Energy erupted endlessly and the impact from it crushed the nearby gravel to powder.

“The loss that I suffered in the Spiritual Road…This time, I’ll let you experience it!”

Shi Jingtian’s eyes were filled with viciousness and he no longer hesitated as he stomped on the ground. At this moment, the earth seemed to tremble. Then, he bent over and smashed his fist onto the ground.

Boom!

An extraordinary Spiritual Energy surged into the earth. Then, the very ground on which Mu Chen stood instantly collapsed. A surge of vicious Spiritual Energy erupted from the ground like a sharp spear as it shot fiercely towards Mu Chen’s legs.

At the same time, Mu Chen also moved and turned into a blur. When his afterimage was shattered, he had already appeared in front of Shi Jingtian.

Swish!

Mu Chen kept two fingers straightened as they flashed with a golden light. The light was like a golden spear, which penetrated through the void, as it lunged towards Shi Jingtian’s throat.

“You actually want to injure me with such abilities?!” Shi Jingtian grinned as hishand appeared in front to block Mu Chen’s attack. At the same moment, a greyish-white Spiritual Energy entered his arm, which caused his arm to become as hard as a rock. It was matchless in terms of toughness.

Clang!

When the sharp golden light made contact with Shi Jingtian’s palm, a loud clanging sound rang out as sparks flew. However, the latter’s palm only trembled slightly while it completely stopped Mu Chen’s attack.

“Scram!”

Shi Jingtian instantly changed his palm to a fist and blasted out a

punch. The greyish-white Spiritual Energy surged out like a flood as it smashed fiercely towards Mu Chen.

Bang!

In response, Mu Chen waved his sleeves as he retreated backwards. His feet stabilized in midair and light emerged from his palms. At this moment, dozens of lights integrated within the air.

A formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuation instantly erupted above Mu Chen. Then, a golden light Spiritual Array soon emerged.

“A Spiritual Array? And with such terrifying speed!” When they noticed the Spiritual Array above Mu Chen, many people were completely shocked. The speed at which Mu Chen arranged an array was unbelievable. Just how much control over his Spiritual Energy was required to do so?

“Buzz!”

Mu Chen’s eyes turned cold and his hand seals changed. Within the golden light Spiritual Array, a jagged, golden light wheel erupted out from within. It instantly rushed through the sky towards Shi Jingtian as it turned into a golden light.

“A Spiritual Array? So you still have such a technique. However, it’s best not to show such a disgraceful Spiritual Array!” Shi Jingtian sneered. On his arms, his veins moved like a dragon while a greyish-white color filled his entire arm.

“Stone Python Pierce!”

Shi Jingtian did not make any attempt at dodging. Instead, he blasted out a punch with his rock-like arm. A muffled sound rang out as the greyish-white Spiritual Energy brought forth powerful winds. It actually formed into a greyish-white python as it fiercely bombarded against the golden wheel.

Bang!

When the greyish-white Spiritual Energy erupted, a formidable fluctuation was emitted as well. The jagged, golden light wheel was shattered instantly by Shi Jingtian's punch. From this act, it became clear that the latter's strength was definitely quite powerful.

"Haha, Mu Chen. As expected, you've lost the might and power you had in the Spiritual Road once you've returned to the Great Thousand World. So you're only capable of this much right now?" After destroying the golden light wheel in one attack, the scornful look on Shi Jingtian's face increased as he mocked Mu Chen.

Although he was mocking Mu Chen, Shi Jingtian was still someone that had experienced the harsh trial of the Spiritual Road. His combat sense was quite outstanding. Thus, he rushed forward and approached Mu Chen. Against a Spiritual Array Master, it was most advantageous for him to counter with close combat. Furthermore, since this battle was for the symbol, it was best not to make a mistake.

"I'll defeat you in one punch!"

A hideous smile emerged within Shi Jingtian's face. He smiled coldly at Mu Chen and the greyish-white arm instantly darkened. It was as if it had turned into the most solid rock in the world.

"Dragon Rocksmash!"

Shi Jingtian's punch shot out together with dense Spiritual Energy. A dragon's roar actually accompanied it as the greyish-white Spiritual Energy formed into a stone dragon. It rushed through the air as it fiercely smashed towards Mu Chen.

Bang Bang!

Under this powerful attack, the very air around the area seemed to explode. At this moment, the flow of air interwove with the galloping dragon.

Mu Chen stared at the powerful attack as coldness flushed

through his black eyes. He clenched his fists tightly and three dark light seals emerged. As soon as they appeared, he immediately blasted out a punch as well.

These three black light seals formed into a beam of black light as it exploded against the stone dragon. A formidable Spiritual Energy surged out in waves from the contact.

Bang!

The stone dragon seemed to tremble against the fierce winds produced. However, Shi Jingtian only laughed loudly as he fired off another punch. Greyish-white Spiritual Energy surged out and completely shattered the three black light seals.

After facing off a few times, it was evident that Shi Jingtian had the upper hand.

When he destroyed the three black light seals with one punch, Shi Jingtian was about to mock Mu Chen again. However, he suddenly noticed the cold eyes that Mu Chen had and his heart jumped. Only then, he noticed that the winds produced by Mu Chen's fist weren't completely released. On the surface of his fist, black lights twinkled. Then, overbearing fluctuations surged out in waves.

"Boom!"

All of a sudden, black light seemed to flood out from Mu Chen's fist. Another black light seal soon emerged after this. Once this black light seal emerged, the surrounding Spiritual Aura seemed to tremble.

"There's actually a fourth light seal?!" Shi Jingtian's eyes finally changed slightly. He could detect that Mu Chen's mysterious black light seals were more powerful than the previous ones that were formed. Compared to the three seals that were accumulated together, the fourth seal seemed to be even stronger!

"Boom!"

Mu Chen remained calm and did not speak at all. When the fourth Limitless Death Seal was formed, he immediately fired out a punch.

Once the punch was fired off, the air immediately exploded!

The air seemed to have been compressed before it exploded as Mu Chen's attack bombarded the stone dragon. But this time, the black light actually shattered the stone dragon completely. Moreover, the remaining energy did not diminish as it continued to bombard Shi Jingtian.

Mu Chen's almighty attack instantly caused a little bit of commotion.

"Iron Wall!"

Shi Jingtian shouted out and crossed his arms in front of himself. Greyish-white Spiritual Energy surged and actually formed into a faint greyish-white light wall. From its appearance, it seemed to be formed by a sturdy rock that had been tempered through lava numerous times. It was completely unmovable.

However, Mu Chen was completely unaffected by it. The fourth Limitless Seal brought forth numerous black ripples as the air exploded. Then, it bombarded heavily against Shi Jingtian's arms.

Boom!

A Spiritual Energy shockwave that could be seen with the naked eye was instantly emitted. In that instant, a deep voice resounded out through the sky.

"Scram!"

At this moment, Mu Chen finally spoke coldly. The black light shockwaves instantly accelerated and exploded with a bang.

Dong!

Waves of air immediately swept out. At this moment, Shi Jingtian's body actually flew back awkwardly, although he

managed to land on his feet. However, he only stabilized his form after leaving behind traces of sliding for nearly a hundred meters.

"WAHH!"

Commotions instantly rang out within the area. They never expected that the situation would be reversed by Mu Chen.

"I told you back in the Spiritual Road. You shouldn't get too carried away. Otherwise, you would pay a severe price. It seems that you still haven't learnt that lesson." Mu Chen slowly released his clenched fist as he spoke faintly towards the gloomy Shi Jingtian.

"Just because I've appeared in front of you, you think that you'll be qualified to step on me?"

Shi Jingtian stared coldly at Mu Chen. At this moment, his eyes were filled with flames of rage. As he stepped forward, a cold voice filled with hostility rang out.

"Carried away? I'll show you what getting carried away truly means!"

Shi Jingtian stomped on the ground and a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation instantly erupted out from his body. Then, Spiritual Energy slowly formed into a greyish-white python behind him.

The massive python's body was completely covered with rock-like scales. On his head, there was a greyish-white spiral-patterned horn. Its greyish-white eyes were completely emotionless as if it had been drilled out from the depths of the earth.

When this greyish-white python figure emerged, Shi Jingtian's aura actually soared again.

It was infinitely close to reaching the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

"74th in Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking, a Low Rank Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, the Earthstone Spirit Python?"

As Mu Chen stared at the massive python, black flames also seeped out from within his eyes. Then, the surrounding individuals trembled slightly as they detected an abnormally fiery fluctuation slowly emitting out from Mu Chen’s body.

Chapter 149 – Black Flames

As black flames emerged from the depths of Mu Chen's eyes, his eyes turned slightly weird. Dark black Spiritual Energy also wrapped around his body. As the Spiritual Energy surged around him, hints of black flames also moved.

Mu Chen immediately stepped into the sky and slowly gripped his hands. A mysterious fluctuation also emitted from his body. At this moment, dark black Spiritual Energy also gathered behind his body. However, it did not form the shape of the ingested Soul Essence like Shi Jingtian.

This was because he did not ingest a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. What he was performing instead was the much higher ranked method; Bloodline Bond. At this moment, he currently possessed some of the Nine Netherbird's abilities. Moreover, this ability was much more flexible. This is due to the Bloodline Bond. The Nine Netherbird within his body possessed a complete intelligence. Therefore, compared to the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence where Shi Jingtian had completely erased its consciousness, it had more spirituality.

Countless gazes gathered on Mu Chen's body. They could detect that the Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitting from his body had increased considerably as well.

"How did Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy become that much stronger all of a sudden? It's even stronger than a Spirit Stage Late Phase. Could it be because he ingested a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence?" Ye Qingling said in surprise.

Luo Li's eyes focused as she stared at Mu Chen's body. A hint of surprise also flashed through her clear eyes. Perhaps others might fail to detect it, but she could tell how domineering the dark black Spiritual Energy that wrapped around Mu Chen's body was. Moreover, it secretly gave off a heart-throbbing feeling.

“A powerful Spiritual Beast is probably within his body. However, it isn’t the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura.” Luo Li muttered to herself. A faint smile immediately emerged on her face. She knew that he would be able to catch up even if he had lost the opportunity from the Spiritual Road. There were even times when Luo Li had believed in Mu Chen more than she believed in herself.

This is because they had encountered numerous difficulties and dangers during their one year within the Spiritual Road. In the end, it was always the smiling boy who had helped her escape these dangers.

Although Luo Li usually did not show much concern for anything, she was actually quite prideful deep down inside. However, this pride of hers was constantly destroyed ever since she met Mu Chen.

During the half-year chase, she actually knew that Mu Chen had countless opportunities to kill her. However, he still gave up in the end.

Back then, Luo Li felt that he was truly foolish for giving up these opportunities. But until she finally managed to defeat him and placed her sword in front of Mu Chen’s throat, she finally understood that she wasn’t able to kill him...

This boy was like a spider who would form spider webs within spider webs. On the other hand, she was a tiny chick that chased after him endlessly. But once she finally came to her senses, she discovered that the layers of spider silk had already wrapped around her tightly. She had been trapped to the extent that she did not even wish to escape.

Mu Chen was, indeed, still powerful.

Luo Li’s glass-like eyes twinkled as she stared at the thin figure. Then, she smiled softly. In that instant, numerous people’s gazes were captivated by that smile.

“No wonder you dared to show up, so you were hiding your abilities.”

Shi Jingtian also noticed the Mu Chen’s mysterious Spiritual Energy fluctuations, which had increased in strength in an instant, and his eyes turned serious. He immediately let out a cold laugh. Since he had suffered earlier, he was quite vigilant towards Mu Chen. However, he had currently summoned the Earthstone Spirit Python and his strength was infinitely close to a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse. On the other hand, Mu Chen’s power up had only caused his strength to be equivalent to a Spirit Stage Late Phase.

The gap between them had opened up instead.

“Let me show you just who is the one getting carried away!”

Liu Jingtian clenched his hands and dense Spiritual Energy surged out like a flood. Angry roars rang out from his throat as a mysterious fluctuation spread out underneath his feet.

Buzz!

At this moment, the earth seemed to tremble. As he stomped down and charged into the sky, greyish-white Spiritual Aura erupted out from his clasped hands. It actually formed into numerous greyish-white lights. These lights soon formed into numerous boulders that were suspended in the sky.

An overbearing fluctuation was emitted.

At that moment, many individuals’ gazes turned solemn. They could detect that every single one of the rocks formed near Shi Jingtian had the power to gravely injure a Spirit Stage powerhouse.

It was evident that his combat abilities had soared after activating the Soul Essence’s power.

“Stone Emperor Art, Meteorite Shower!”

Shi Jingtian's eyes darkened as he locked down on Mu Chen, who was below him. His gaze instantly turned cold as he changed the seals formed by his hands. At this moment, the numerous greyish-white lights suddenly buzzed and sounds of the winds breaking instantly rang out. These countless rocks descended down towards Mu Chen and covered almost all of his paths of retreat.

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the rocks that were rapidly becoming larger within his eyes. At this moment, he took a deep breath and circulated the Great Pagoda Art within his body. A mysterious light started to flash within the depths of his body.

Buzz.

The dark black Spiritual Energy that was surging on the surface of his body instantly turned into a blurry black light tower. On top of the light tower, traces of black flames floated around.

When the black light tower was formed, the descending rocks came violently crashing down. In the end, they had smashed fiercely onto the black light tower outside of Mu Chen's body.

Dong Dong!

The earth seemed to tremble at this moment. Countless people stared in shock at the earth where the bombardment of rocks occurred. At that location, smoke spread out and covered their line of sight. However, they were still able to feel how terrifying the attack was.

This vicious attack would definitely turn anyone who was at the Spirit Stage Late Phase into pulp.

At this moment, Ye Qingling and the others were staring nervously at the place where the smoke rose up. Their hands were clenched tightly. Sun'Er even had to cover her eyes with her tiny hands.

The only one that remained calm was Luo Li. Although Shi Jingtian's attack was indeed powerful, it clearly wasn't enough to

kill Mu Chen.

Finally, the bombardment ended. The smoke also started to disperse and everybody immediately turned their attention to that location. Then, sounds of gasps rang out.

At the place where the ground was collapsing, a person was quietly suspended in midair. On top of his body, the blurry black light tower had remained completely motionless in the face of Shi Jingtian's attack. That amazing offensive performed by Shi Jingtian had actually caused no damage to him at all!

"How is this possible?!" In the sky, Shi Jingtian was completely speechless.

"Swish!"

While he was horrified, Mu Chen's body had appeared in front of him like a phantom. Winds formed by his fists rushed out while it was being wrapped by dark black Spiritual Energy. It drew an arc as it pounded heavily against Shi Jingtian.

Shi Jingtian hurriedly summoned his Spiritual Energy and blocked with his rock-like arms. The Stone Emperor Art that he had trained in allowed him to possess powerful defence as well. Therefore, he wasn't afraid of a hand-to-hand fight.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

However, Mu Chen didn't seem to be concerned about it. His fists were wrapped in dark black Spiritual Energy and bombarded against Shi Jingtian's arms. At this moment, Shi Jingtian's expression changed drastically. This is because he detected that extreme heat was being transferred into his arm every time Mu Chen's fists landed. This intense heat would charge into his meridians, which caused severe pain in his arms.

"Something's strange with this guy's Spiritual Energy!"

Shi Jingtian was shocked. Only now did he detect that there was a hint of black flames that was within the dark black Spiritual

Energy whenever Mu Chen attacked.

“I must not fight against him head on!”

Shi Jingtian hurriedly retreated backwards. The black flame was too overbearing. If he let too much of the black flames seep into his body, it would probably scorch his meridians, which would gravely injure him.

“I must not delay this battle.” Shi Jingtian finally felt a bit of unease. Mu Chen’s strange techniques had finally made him quite uneasy.

“I’ll deal with him in one attack!”

Viciousness filled Shi Jingtian’s eyes. He immediately gritted his teeth as his arms trembled slightly. The greyish-white color in his arms turned increasingly dark. His large veins also twitched. At this moment, even his ten fingers seemed to be crafted from stone.

Accompanied with the greyish-white light, a formidable fluctuation erupted from Shi Jingtian’s palms.

“Take this!”

When the greyish-white light and Spiritual Energy had reached its peak, Shi Jingtian shouted loudly as he smacked down with his palm.

“Heavenly Stonesmash Palm!”

Following Shi Jingtian’s shout, a greyish-white light escaped his hand and instantly formed into a massive stone palm. This palm was covered with rock engravings and was extremely tough.

At the same time, Mu Chen’s palm also released out a dark black light. He, too, fired out a palm attack calmly. In that instant, faint sounds of thunders were formed and the entire sky seemed to darken.

“Vajra Pagoda!”

Mu Chen also struck with his palm. The dark black Spiritual

Energy formed into a black palm. On the black palm, dark golden tower engravings emerged and a fluctuation that seemed to suppress everything appeared.

Boom!

The two palm attacks ripped through the air and collided heavily with each other like meteorites. At that moment, a loud noise resounded. Violent shockwaves were emitted and formed gales in the area. Sand and stone were instantly swept up from the earth.

“Suppress!”

Mu Chen’s eyes turned cold and he clenched his hands. Underneath the golden tower engravings, Shi Jingtian was aghast to see that his rock palm was beginning to crack. It was as if the Spiritual Energy within it was completely erased.

“How is this possible?!” Shi Jingtian was completely speechless.

“Swish!”

However, Mu Chen ignored him and the black palm with golden tower engravings completely emerged above Shi Jingtian as it smacked down.

Seeing this, Shi Jingtian hurriedly circulated his Spiritual Energy to protect this body.

Bang!

However, the palm still beat down mercilessly at him. After a muffled cry, everybody noticed Shi Jingtian falling down from the sky and landed fiercely on the ground.

The ground instantly shattered and web-like cracks spread out.

Puchi.

Shi Jingtian had a pale expression as he spat out a mouthful of blood. Traces of horror were still shown in his eyes. He never imagined that the attacks of Mu Chen would be so terrifying. Not even he, who was infinitely close to a Heavenly Fusion Stage, could

block it!

“Swish!”

His eyes blinked as he attempted to retreat backwards. However, he heard the sounds of winds breaking and a light with black flames rushed across his eyes. Then, Mu Chen’s slender fingers, which carried black flames, stopped in front of his throat like the black scythe of a death god.

His body instantly froze and was covered with cold sweat. He did not dare make even the slightest movement.

“I’ve told you before…”

Mu Chen’s black eyes stared calmly at Shi Jingtian, who was completely horrified, as he slowly spoke: “If you get carried away, you will have to pay a price.”

“Now, you should hand over this price. Otherwise, I do not mind eliminating you.”

Chapter 150 – Northern Heavens Hall

In the central area, the bustling commotion slowly quieted down. Everybody stared in shock at the conclusion of the battle.

The outcome was beyond many people's imaginations. Shi Jingtian had actually lost!

At this moment, many individuals exchanged glances with one another before turning their gaze towards that slender figure. Their expressions instantly turned serious. As for the people that came from the Spiritual Road, they secretly let out a sigh of relief. As expected, how could a person who caused that shocking event be weak, even if he had failed to obtain the Spiritual Energy Empowerment?

All of them instantly retracted their attitude of superiority. Even if they had exited the Spiritual Road, it did not represent that they were superior to everyone. There were too many talented geniuses in the world. As for the Spiritual Road, it was only a trial and it did not mean that they were standing above their peers. If they wished to maintain their position, they would have to remain vigilant and wary. Otherwise, they might be surpassed by others.

The other superior students in the central area all stared at the scene with serious expressions. Even Zhou Ling couldn't help but smack his lips. By relying on his strength as a Spirit Stage Middle Phase, Mu Chen was able to defeat a person who was a half-step from the Heavenly Fusion Stage. He truly was powerful.

"Mu Chen!"

When Shi Hao witnessed this scene, his expression instantly changed. He shouted loudly as he charged forward to save Shi Jingtian from Mu Chen's hand.

Swish!

But just when he moved, a slender figure appeared directly in

front of him. A black longsword carrying an extraordinary sharp sword aura was only a short distance away from his throat.

Shi Hao was surprised and immediately stopped moving. He hurriedly retreated and lifted his head up. Then, he noticed Luo Li wielding the longsword as she stared calmly at him. She said: "If you're planning on intervening, I don't mind fighting against you."

Shi Hao's expression instantly changed. Luo Li was a genuine Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse. It was impossible for him to defeat her alone. Thus, he could only grit his teeth and remain motionless in front of her.

On the other hand, Mu Chen did not care about Shi Hao's actions. He only stared at Shi Jingtian, who had a gloomy and surprised expression, and smiled faintly. He did not mutter any words and immediately stabbed towards the symbol on the latter's forehead.

"Wait!" Seeing Mu Chen act without hesitation, Shi Jingtian was completely shocked. He hurriedly shouted and a purple-golden light emerged from the twinkling, purple-golden symbol on his forehead. At the same time, the symbol on his forehead darkened.

Mu Chen held onto the purple-golden light that was filled with mysterious Spiritual Aura and smiled at Shi Jingtian. He said: "Thanks."

Shi Jingtian had a gloomy expression as he slowly stood up. Then, he retreated quickly and shouted through the gaps of his teeth: "Mu Chen, I'll never forgive you!"

"You’re welcome to try me anytime." Mu Chen chuckled. He immediately directed his gaze away and asked: "Anyone else have a problem with me being here?"

The surroundings were completely silent. The people that had originally looked at Mu Chen provocatively instantly turned their gazes away. They did not dare to look directly at him. After all, even someone as powerful as Shi Jingtian was defeated. If they

were to face Mu Chen, they would only disgrace themselves.

The other superior individuals also did not respond. It was evident that the strength displayed by Mu Chen was enough to make them afraid. If they were to offend him right now, not only would they offend Mu Chen, they would also offend Luo Li as well. Thus, it was apparent that this was not a wise decision.

"Haha. As expected from the Blood Calamity Mu Chen. Although we haven't met in the Spiritual Road, I've at least heard the rumors. Now that I've met you, your reputation is well-deserved." King Yan, Yang Ling, laughed as he spoke to Mu Chen.

His laughter instantly shattered the tense atmosphere and the others started to speak as well. However, it was obvious that they were more careful with their words as if they did not want to offend Mu Chen.

Mu Chen also cupped his fist in response to the other individuals. Then, he flicked his finger and sent the purple-gold light towards Luo Li. He said: "After you absorb it, you should reach Rank 9 Symbol."

Seeing Mu Chen hand over the Rank 8 Symbol to Luo Li, they were stunned for a moment. After all, it was quite difficult to raise the symbol to Rank 8. Just by hunting Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, it would require at least three of them before it reached that rank. Therefore, there weren't even ten individuals that reached Rank 8 Symbol.

On the other side, Luo Li extended her slender hand to grasp onto the purple-golden light. Then, she smiled gently towards Mu Chen before absorbing the purple-golden light into the symbol on her forehead.

Many people in this area watched as this scene occurred before their very eyes. They immediately held their breath. Since this location was the center of the Northern Heavens World, they only needed a person to obtain a Rank 9 Symbol and the condition to

summon the Northern Heavens Hall would be fulfilled.

Once the purple-gold light entered Luo Li's forehead, the purple-golden symbol on her forehead emitted a dazzling light. This light was like a purple-golden beam, which shot out from her forehead and into the sky.

"Boom!"

When the purple-gold beam rushed into the sky, everybody noticed that the Spiritual Energy fluctuations in the world suddenly turned extremely violent. Then, noise rumbled down from the skies above.

Everybody immediately turned their gaze towards the sky.

In the sky, the purple-gold light shone as it vaguely formed into a massive purple-gold palace. This palace brought forth a shadow as it slowly descended from the skies.

Finally, the purple-gold palace slowly descended down and landed on the ground. In the instant that it landed, the earth trembled violently.

"Is this the Northern Heavens Hall?"

Many people stared eagerly at the purple-gold palace. This was the true gateway to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After passing through, they would finally become students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Rumble.

Under numerous gazes, the purple-gold palace's heavy, gold-crafted doors slowly opened. A dazzling gold light filled their eyes.

"The Northern Heavens Hall has opened. The students that have reached Rank 4 Symbol or above, please enter..." Following the opening of the purple-gold door, an old and hoarse voice slowly resounded out from within.

"Boom!"

This voice instantly broke the silence. Countless individuals, who had achieved this condition, had their eyes turn red due to excitement. The next moment, swishing sounds of winds resounded out. Then, these students all rushed into the purple-gold palace like a swarm of locusts.

When Mu Chen witnessed this terrifying formation, he also gave a huge smile. Then, he tilted his head towards Ye Qingling and the others as he spoke: "Let's enter as well."

Ye Qingling nodded her head. The Ye Clan members were also extremely excited. They had finally made it to this place after passing through numerous trials and tests.

"Let's go!"

Mu Chen waved his hand at Luo Li and the two of them took the lead as they charged forward. In a few seconds, they had appeared before the massive purple-gold door as they rushed in.

In the instant they passed through the purple-gold door, they could feel the symbol on their forehead flash slightly. It was as if something had been scanned. It was apparent that one of the abilities of the palace was to track their symbols. As for the students that did not manage to reach Rank 4 Symbol, it was evident that they had lost the opportunity to enter through the doors and were forever eliminated from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

Just when Mu Chen and the others rushed into the purple-gold palace, a brilliant light flashed through their eyes. After they recovered their consciousness, they discovered that they were inside a vast hall. Even by looking around, they did not manage to see the ends of the hall.

At this moment, numerous figures emerged within the hall. Soon, the vast and empty hall was completely crowded.

"Where is this place?"

Many people looked around, dazed. Is this the interior of the Northern Heavens Hall? How should they enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy after entering this location?

"Ohoho, little fellows. Congratulations for passing the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's examination." Just when everybody was glancing around, lights gathered around and an old figure slowly emerged in midair.

The old figure was quite familiar. It was the figure formed with light that had guided Mu Chen and the others on the Escort Platform. However, the figure standing in front of them wasn't an illusory light figure. Instead, it was his true body.

Mu Chen stared at the white-haired old man and a hint of seriousness flashed through his eyes. He could sense a strong pressure emitting from the latter's body. This pressure was clearly not something that an ordinary Heavenly Fusion Stage should possess.

"As expected from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even the person that is escorting us is terrifying to such a degree." Mu Chen smacked his lips secretly.

"I am the person that escorts you from the Northern Heavens World. At the same time, I will lead you to the true Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." In the sky, the old man stared at the mass of humans below. At this moment, the youthful faces were all filled with expectation and excitement regarding the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Since you've managed to arrive here, it is enough to prove that you were successful. Next up, I will hand over the reward that you deserve."

The white-haired old man smiled slightly and waved his hand. Then, all of the symbols on the everyone’s forehead flashed immediately. In the end, the symbols turned into a beams of light which fell into everybody's hands.

Once the light faded away, a sparkling crystal card appeared in everybody's hand. At the same time, a number emerged on the crystal card.

"What is this?"

Sounds of confusion rang out from everybody.

"This is the Spiritual Value Card. The number on top of it is known as Spiritual Value. You should not underestimate this item. It is extremely important within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, you can use these Spiritual Values to exchange the items that you want such as Spiritual Arts, Spiritual Artifacts, Diagram Arrays, Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence and even personal guidance from top-notched instructors..."

WAHHH.

A commotion instantly burst out inside the hall. Many people looked at the crystal card in their hands heatedly. So this little thing was that useful?

Mu Chen was also surprised when he heard this. He lowered his head and looked at the Spiritual Value Card in his hand. On the surface, it showed a few numbers: 1100 Points.

"1100 Spiritual Value Points...It seems that the higher the symbol's rank is, the more Spiritual Value one would obtain."

Mu Chen thought for a moment. Then, he looked at the Spiritual Value Card in Luo Li's hand, who was standing beside him. On the surface, there were a few dazzling numbers.

5000 Points.

Mu Chen could not stop his mouth from twitching. It was actually that much more than his...

Chapter 151 – The Final Challenge

5000 spiritual value points.

While Mu Chen was slightly shocked by the numbers displayed on Luo Li's spiritual value Card, he glanced around and looked at Ye Qingling's spiritual value Card. Although the latter possessed a Rank 7 Symbol, she only had approximately 800 spiritual value points. As for Mo Ling, Wang Sheng and the others, they had even less, approximately 100...

Thus, Ye Qingling and the others could not help but exclaim loudly when they noticed the dazzling amount of spiritual value points that Luo Li possessed. That amount was probably the highest among everyone here, right?

"You've suddenly become a rich woman." Mu Chen laughed as he joked around.

In response, Luo Li glared at him snappily.

All of a sudden, someone asked loudly in the hall, "Old Mister, how can we gain more spiritual value points?" When he heard this question, the white-haired old man smiled. "It isn't difficult to obtain spiritual value points. In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there is a variety of tasks. Once you complete these tasks, you will be able to obtain spiritual value points. You could also obtain them by hunting Spiritual Beasts and handing over the Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences to us. Moreover, there are private trades between students, which use spiritual value points. You will gradually understand more about this after you enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Mu Chen nodded his head slightly. It seemed that there were many methods of obtaining spiritual value points.

"Then when can we enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" A few individuals could not wait and asked. They were

looking forward to seeing the true Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a long time.

"If we follow the normal regulations, you have already qualified to enter."

The white-haired old man smiled faintly and said: "However, there's a final stage that needs to be completed. This stage is not for everyone, but only the students that have achieved a Rank 7 Symbol or above."

"Eh?"

In the hall, the people who possessed a Rank 7 or above Symbol, were shocked. Then, they stared at the white-haired old man. Was it some sort of test for them?

"This test isn't necessary. You can choose to give up and there will be no losses. However, the ones that managed to pass this test will receive an additional 5000 spiritual value points." The white-haired old man chuckled.

"5000 spiritual value points?" Numerous people instantly turned eager. As for the ones that failed to reach a Rank 7 Symbol, they could only stare enviously at the ones that did.

"May we know what sort of test it is?" A person, who possessed a Rank 7 Symbol, asked eagerly.

"It's a duel. However, your opponents are your seniors within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." The white-haired old man smiled.

"Seniors from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" The corner of many people's eyes twitched. They could feel that something terrible was going to happen.

The white-haired old man waved his sleeves and a dozen light pillars suddenly lit up behind him. As the light pillar faded away, a dozen figures appeared in the sky above.

These figures all possessed youthful appearances. Once they emerged, they stared at the youthful boys and girls within the hall mockingly.

"Yo. Looks like there's quite a few people here. It seems that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will become quite lively." A boy with red hair chuckled as he looked down at the crowd below.

"We've waited for ages before we were summoned here. Old Bai, this isn't quite efficient." A skinny youth smiled towards the white-haired old man.

"This Northern Heavens World has only just summoned the Northern Heavens Hall. It's truly quite slow. As for the other three Northern Heavens Worlds, their results were obtained a long time ago..." Another burly youth spoke out as well.

"I've heard that those three Northern Heavens Worlds had a few powerful individuals inside. They even managed to pass through the final challenge. However, it's probably impossible for them to succeed with Sister An here, right?" A few people smiled towards the central light pillar where, a glamorous woman wearing a red dress emerged. She had a scorchingly attractive body and extremely beautiful looks. However, her face remained cold and heartless, which stopped many from looking at her.

"Shut up!"

The girl in the red dress swept her gaze around and shouted coldly. In response, the dozen individuals immediately closed their mouths and did not dare to speak another word.

In the hall, countless gazes stared at the dozen individuals behind the white-haired old man. Their expressions became more serious, and they could sense the enormous pressure emitting from the bodies of those people. It was comparable to the strength of someone who was only half-a-step away from Heavenly Fusion Stage.

The beautiful girl in red seemed especially terrifying...

Mu Chen stared in surprise at these figures before his eyes finally landed on the girl in red dress. His gaze turned serious as his expression turned solemn. This was because he could sense that the girl was a genuine Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse.

She was at the same level as Liu Jingshan!

"An Ran, you'll explain how the following duels will go." The white-haired old man beckoned the girl in red dress forward as he smiled.

"Yes."

The girl named An Ran nodded her head slightly, and her beautiful, yet cold eyes stared at everyone at the scene. Her red lips parted slightly as she spoke faintly: "Newbies that have just arrived, I will represent all the seniors in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in welcoming you. No matter what sort of background you have, you should behave honestly within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Here, we will only respect the strong. If you don't have any capabilities, we will look down upon you even if you have a powerful background."

"Next up, let's talk about the final challenge that you'll face. The ones that possess a Rank 7 Symbol or above are qualified to challenge us. Of course, you can directly give up."

"The reward for successfully passing a challenge has already been mentioned by Old Bai. Although the people beside me aren't exceptionally excellent in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and are only ranked in the 50s of the Spirit Ranking within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, against the likes you, they should be quite troublesome to defeat."

"What is the Spirit Ranking?" Someone asked curiously.

"It is the lowest ranking within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." An Ran replied coldly.

Many people were dumbfounded. These people, who were half-a-step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage, could only enter the lowest rankings within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

"Oi, Sister An. You should at least give us some face in front of these newbies. The Spirit Ranking isn't as terrible as you've explained. The ones that are in the top 10 are quite powerful." The dozen individuals all had flushed faces as they complained.

"Those idiots, who are hogging the Spirit Ranking and do not dare to advance? They are powerful?" An Ran coldy swept her gaze over them. At this moment, the group of people immediately shrank back and did not dare to respond to her.

"You should know that there were a total of four Northern Heavens World used as testing ground this time. You are only in one of them. And among these four Northern Heavens World, yours was the slowest to summon the Northern Heavens Hall. Perhaps this represents that you are the worst out of the bunch." An Ran said as she looked at the group of new students.

"Just who says that! We could have had a Rank 9 Symbol appear a long time ago. However, there was a tiny problem that occurred." Zhou Ling could not help but mutter. If it wasn't for Luo Li heading over to save Mu Chen, they would have summoned the Northern Heavens Hall a while ago.

"Newbie. Don't talk about excuses in front of me. I only care about the results. Whether or not you're the weakest out of the four Northern Heavens World, you should not say it out with your mouth but prove it with your own strength!" An Ran replied coldly.

Zhou Ling curled his lips and stopped arguing with her. It was indeed true that this girl's strength was much higher than his own.

"The other three Northern Heavens Worlds have all passed the final challenge. Among the ones that passed, there were a few students that achieved the best results. They actually managed to

defeat the strongest senior among the students dispatched here."

In the hall, a few student were slightly moved. Based on the seniors in front of them, the strongest senior in each respective Northern Heavens World would at least possess the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage, right? As newbies, they managed to defeat them?

"Who are they?" King Yan, Yan Ling, asked. He was also a prideful individual. Naturally, he would want to know who was more outstanding than him.

An Ran glanced at him for a moment and said: "Bing Qing, Mu Kui and Yang Hong."

When these three names were spoken, a large uproar resounded out within the hall, especially from the people that came from the Spiritual Road. Aside from the first name, the other two individuals were people that once stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. Even among the ones that were assessed as 'King Class', they were considered to be ranked high up.

"Yang Hong..."

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed when he heard this name. That guy'd truly advanced quite quickly.

"Next up, it's your turn." An Ran said faintly: "If you want to make me recognize you're not the weakest out of the 4 groups, then show me your abilities. I absolutely detest men that only know how to speak with their mouth."

When everyone heard her words, they gnashed their teeth suddenly. All of them felt the impulse to hit her. Moreover, looking at the abundant buttocks of her hot body, it should feel pretty good when they smack her.

Although these thoughts appeared in many people's mind, they did not dare to speak up. Since An Ran was able to make the other seniors afraid, it was best for newbies like them to endure it as

well.

"Right now, all of the people that qualify for the duel can choose to give up. If you give up, take a step backwards."

In the hall, everybody looked at each other. Then, a few students that possess a Rank 7 Symbol smiled bitterly and retreated backwards. Since all of these seniors possessed the strength of a Quasi-Heavenly Fusion Stage, how would it be possible for them to defeat them?

"It seems that I have to give up on it as well." Ye Qingling smiled helplessly. She was only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. It was evident that there was no need for her to try this challenge.

"Mu Chen, Luo Li, good luck. Defeat her. Show her how powerful us rookies are." Ye Qingling smiled. The only one who could challenge An Ran was probably Luo Li. As for Mu Chen, he was probably slightly weaker.

In the hall, a gap soon emerged. In the end, there were only a dozen students that stood in the front of the group.

"The selection of opponents will be decided through drawing lots. However, you will still have the right to give up after you draw your lot." An Ran gripped her hand and numerous lights flew out.

Upon seeing this, the group below all caught the clump of lights with their hand. When the lights landed, they instantly turned into beams of light before they finally landed on the seniors' bodies.

Mu Chen was one of those who caught a clump of light and gently gripped it. The clump of light cracked open and turned into a beam of red light.

His line of sight followed the red light and he was instantly stunned. Of course, he wasn't the only one that was dumbfounded. Even the other newbies were shocked.

This is because at the end of the Mu Chen's beam of red light was

An Ran, who had a cold expression.

Chapter 152 – An Ran

Mu Chen was standing at one end of the red beam while An Ran, who had a cold expression, was on the other end. This scene instantly silenced the hall and many people had a strange gaze.

Mu Chen had actually been matched with the strongest one among the seniors.

"Heh." On the side, the Shi Family's Brothers sneered as if they had seen something fortunate.

At the same time, Zhou Ling and the others frowned. Isn't Mu Chen's luck too terrible? He actually selected the trickiest one of the seniors. Judging from the individuals here, the only one who could fight against An Ran was probably Luo Li.

Although they were quite shocked when Mu Chen defeated Shi Jingtian, An Ran was much more powerful than Shi Jingtian.

"Spirit Stage Middle Phase?"

In the sky, the dozen seniors were surprised as they stared at Mu Chen. They could not help but chuckle: "This is quite interesting. Why is it such a weak newbie? Moreover, isn't he too unlucky..."

Under numerous gazes, Mu Chen smiled helplessly. He truly had bad luck.

Next to Mu Chen, Luo Li stared at Mu Chen with quite a worried expression. She could sense how tricky this senior known as An Ran would be.

As for An Ran, she stared at Mu Chen emotionlessly and said: "You should give up. I don't want to waste any time. Perhaps you can ask the girl beside you. If she is willing to fight against me, I will allow you to exchange with her. In this place, she is the only one that can fight against me."

Hearing this, Luo Li lifted her eyebrow for a moment. Then, she

looked at Mu Chen hesitantly. Although the boy in front of her was warm and gentle like the sun, he possessed a strong pride deep down inside. Thus, she did not want her actions to hurt his pride, which boys seemed so concerned about it.

Mu Chen looked at Luo Li, who was hesitant in speaking. Then, he smiled faintly and gripped onto the fading red beam of light: "If it wasn't for Yang Hong, I wouldn't mind letting you replace me on this. After all, it's best if I can focus on fewer matters."

Luo Li nodded slightly. She understood the meaning behind his words. If there was no Yang Hong, he would step back. But since Yang Hong had achieved the best results in another Northern Heavens World...

Since Mu Chen had defeated Yang Hong in the Spiritual Road, the prideful Mu Chen would not allow himself to be any worse off than to Yang Hong.

"Good luck." Luo Li said gently.

Mu Chen nodded before lifting his head. He smiled at the icy-cold senior known as An Ran: "There's no need to exchange. I'll be the one fighting. Please give me your guidance, senior."

An Ran frowned for a moment as she stared at Mu Chen. Then, she replied coldly: "In order to keep a bit of face, you would challenge an opponent that you know you won't be able to win against. This action is truly foolish. At times, it's best to endure temporarily. The new students this time are truly disappointing."

In the hall, many students gnashed their teeth when they heard her demeaning tone. However, they did not dare to talk back.

However, Mu Chen smiled gently at the cold, yet beautiful appearance of An Ran and replied: "Senior An. Allow me to speak bluntly; when I was learning how to endure, perhaps you were still learning how to fall in love with others."

At this moment, the hall instantly turned silent. Even the dozen

of seniors widened their mouths and stared dumbfounded at the boy below them. Isn't this boy too amazing? He actually dared to provoke An Ran?

The white-haired old man also smiled as he stared at Mu Chen. However, he did not intervene in the conversation.

"What did you say?!"

An Ran's expression was completely cold as she stared at Mu Chen. Her chest heaved slightly, and it was apparent that she was suppressing her rage. Then, she moved and appeared in front of Mu Chen. In that instant, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation enveloped Mu Chen.

"Senior. Everyone has the right to speak at this location. Since you mocked all the students here, we also have the right to speak back at you." Luo Li took half a step forward and blocked the Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitting from An Ran's body.

An Ran stared ruthlessly at Mu Chen and said: "It's true that everybody has the right to speak. However, they would also have to pay the price for being so defiant. I hope that your strength can match your mouth's abilities. Otherwise, I will truly look down upon you."

"Thank you senior for your reminder." Mu Chen smiled faintly. Since the other side was being so rude and forceful, he did not bother being too polite.

"Old Bai, let's begin!" An Ran said coldly.

In the sky, Old Bai nodded his head and said: "Is everybody ready?"

While his words faded away, he noticed that nobody rejected. Thus, he waved his sleeves and numerous lights descended. They landed directly and enveloped the seniors, Mu Chen and the other new students.

The light also enveloped An Ran. She stared coldly at Mu Chen

for a moment before closing her eyes tightly. She had already planned on teaching a lesson to the newbie known as Mu Chen. He dares act this arrogant when he only possess such pitiful strength? Did he really believed that this place was the weak and powerless Spiritual Academy that he was in before?

Swish!

Once the lights faded away, Mu Chen and the other's bodies suddenly disappeared as well. This made everyone within the hall completely stunned. However, a large screen of light soon appeared in the sky. Within the light screen, many figures appeared. They were the people that had disappeared.

So they could actually rely on this screen of light to view the upcoming battles.

Numerous gazes focused themselves on the light screen. Then, they began to search for two figures. Instead of the battles where the results were obvious, it was evident that they wanted to see how Mu Chen would face off against the strongest senior among the group...

Would it be a massacre where Mu Chen was defeated pitifully or would it be similar to the battle earlier where he completely reversed the situation against Shi Jingtian?

The crowd continued to stare at the screen with eyes filled with expectations...

When Mu Chen opened his eyes, he was located inside a vast and empty hall. This hall wasn't as big as the place before. But more importantly, it was completely empty as if there were no other people around.

"Freshmen, are you prepared to pay the price of what you've said earlier?" An icy cold voice rang out from in front of him. Mu Chen turned his gaze over and noticed that An Ran staring at him coldly.

"Senior. No man would ever like such a cold woman." Mu Chen

smiled helplessly and replied.

"Even now, you still dare to talk back to me!" A cold chill was projected from An Ran's eyes. She bit her teeth angrily. This was the first time she met a person that could make her this angry.

"Since senior doesn't like what I'm saying...'

Mu Chen smiled as his eyes instantly turned emotionless: "Let's fight!"

Once these words were spoken, Mu Chen rushed forward. He had activated the Shadowspirit Step to the limits and turned into numerous afterimages. At the same time, the winds produced from his fingers were like lightning as they stabbed violently towards An Ran.

An Ran let out a cold laugh and did not evade Mu Chen's attack. Instead, a powerful Spiritual Energy gushed out of her body like an erupting volcano. With just the Spiritual Energy impact, she had completely pushed back Mu Chen.

The gap between a Spirit Stage Middle Phase and an Heavenly Fusion Stage was just too enormous.

"With only such abilities, you actually dared to act conceited?”

An Ran's eyes were completely cold as she spoke: "Bring out your full strength. Otherwise, you won't have an opportunity to attack again."

"Vajra Pagoda!"

Mu Chen did not hesitate at all as a dark black Spiritual Energy erupted out from his body. As he smacked out with his palm, a dark black hand was formed in the sky. Golden tower engravings appeared and disappeared on the hand as it attempted to suppress An Ran.

Against such an opponent, ordinary attacks would be completely useless. He had to use his full strength.

"This is at least a bit better than before." An Ran stared at the dark black palm, which possessed a powerful Spiritual Energy suppression, and grunted. Then, she pushed off from the ground and headed directly towards the dark black palm. Spiritual Energy erupted from her slender hands and formed into a long spear. It immediately gave off an incredible atmosphere.

"Spirit Destruction Spear!"

A cold cry exited An Ran's mouth as she swung her slender arms. The long spear formed by Spiritual Energy flashed as it became a pillar of light. Afterwards, it tore through the skies and collided heavily against the palm.

Dong!

A powerful Spiritual Energy shockwave was emitted and instantly distorted the air. Soon after, An Ran's eyes turned cold. Then, An Ran's eyes turned ruthless as Spiritual Energy erupted out from her body.

Boom!

A dazzling light forcibly collided with the black hand and cracks soon emerged. In the end, the black hand had shattered completely.

The Vajra Pagoda that Mu Chen had formed was finally forcibly destroyed by someone else. This...was the difference in strength.

An Ran moved and stood in the sky. Her cold eyes stared down at Mu Chen. But just when she was about to sneer and mock Mu Chen, her expression suddenly turned serious. This is because she noticed that Mu Chen's body had remained motionless throughout the previous exchange, yet in the sky above, a powerful golden light erupted. As the lights condensed, it formed into a massive and complex Diagram Array.

"A Spiritual Array?!" A hint of shock finally appeared within An Ran's eyes. She could sense the violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation

emitting from the Spiritual Array. Judging from the fluctuations, it was already close to a Heavenly Fusion Stage.

"So this guy was also a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master? No wonder he dared to act this arrogant when he's still at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase." An Ran finally understood why Mu Chen had acted the way he did before. However, she only sneered in response to the Spiritual Array. After all, to fight against a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse, would require at least a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master. Right now, Mu Chen was still quite far from it.

At this moment, Mu Chen spat out white air from his mouth. His black eyes focused themselves on An Ran as he changed hand seals. Then, a muffled cry resounded out.

"Dragon Elephant Array!"

Roar!

At this moment, sounds of dragons and elephants resounded out loudly as a powerful Spiritual Energy surged out...

Within the hall, many new students were surprised as they stared at the screen of light where Mu Chen was being shown Although they weren't in the same place as Mu Chen, they could still sense how powerful the Spiritual Array activated by Mu Chen was.

But even if the Spiritual Array was powerful, was it truly enough to defeat An Ran, who was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage?

Chapter 153 – The Freshman's Counterattack

Roar!

Deafening roars rang out within the vast and empty hall from the dragon and elephant. At that moment, the entire hall trembled as a formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted from the giant Spiritual Array above Mu Chen.

"Dragon Elephant Array!"

A flash of light surged through Mu Chen's eyes as he changed his hand seals. At the same time, the massive Spiritual Array shook. Then dark-golden beams of light surged out and formed into a galloping dragon and elephant. As they galloped through the empty skies, a powerful pressure erupted viciously in An Ran’s direction

While An Ran stood in the air and stared at the golden dragon and elephant, dense Spiritual Energy gushed out from her hands as she struck out towards it.

"Shattering Ethereal Palm!"

Once An Ran attacked the golden dragon and elephant, the air in front of her seemed to become distorted. A dense Spiritual Energy gathered and formed into a palm of light as it smacked heavily against the approaching golden dragon and elephant.

Boom!

The two attacks collided, and an terrifying Spiritual Energy shockwave was instantly emitted.

"Dragon Elephant Suppression!"

Mu Chen said out softly. The golden dragon and elephant quickly turned into a golden disc with a dragon and elephant covering it. Then, with a loud explosion, it completely shattered the palm of

light as it charged fiercely towards An Ran.

"Wave Surfing Slash!"

An Ran's eyes remained cold as Mu Chen's attack approached her. Dense Spiritual Energy gathered on her hands and formed a wave-like blade of light. Then, as she swung her arm down, the blade of light rushed out and slashed the golden disc. Metal clanging sounds rang out when they collided. In the end, the blade of light actually split the golden disc into two halves.

Commotion instantly rang out from the new students within the giant hall. An Ran was truly too powerful. Moreover, she had numerous powerful Spiritual Arts. Although the power of the Spiritual Array arranged by Mu Chen contained extraordinary power, she was able to destroy it completely.

Swish!

While the new students were focused on the match between Mu Chen and An Ran, a beam of light suddenly shone down into the hall. Afterwards, two figures emerged from within the beam of light and everybody immediately turned their gaze in that direction. They noticed that Luo Li and a senior, who had a flushed expression, had reappeared within the hall.

"Thanks for the battle, senior." Luo Li looked at the boy with reddened cheeks as she spoke softly.

Hearing this, the boy suddenly let out a bitter laugh. Who would have known that this beautiful girl would actually be this powerful? With her Heavenly Fusion Stage strength, it was no wonder that An Ran had said that she was the only one that could compete against her.

"Luo Li actually won this quickly?"

The new students recovered from the shock and exclaimed out loud. Then, they stared in shock at the girl in black dress that possess a slender body. However, the latter's eyes remained calm

and completely ignored everybody's gazes. She only lifted her exquisite face and stared at a few screens made of light until it finally landed on the screen where Mu Chen was located. A hint of worry appeared in her eyes.

Bang!

An Ran's body appeared in front of Mu Chen's body as her hand contained a terrifying Spiritual Energy fluctuation. It headed mercilessly towards Mu Chen's chest. However, it was blocked completely by the latter's arms.

A muffled sound rang out and Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted from that spot. Mu Chen's body was instantly sent flying away and his feet slid on the ground for a few hundred meters until he finally stabilized. It was evident that his arms were slightly numb.

In that moment, Mu Chen's eyes turned slightly serious. This was his second time fighting against a real Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse. The first time was naturally against Liu Jingshan. However, he was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage back then. The gap between the two of them was simply indescribable. Therefore, he could only fight against him after borrowing the strength of the Nine Netherbird. But even so, the price he paid was that he had to fall unconscious for nearly half a month.

Right now, it was apparent that he was much stronger than before. Even if he only relied on his own strength, he was still able to fight back against a powerhouse of that level, though he was completely being overwhelmed.

If he wanted to defeat An Ran, it wasn't enough with just these methods!

An Ran's body turned into a figure of light once again as she rushed over towards him. A cold laugh rang out as another vicious Spiritual Energy impact enveloped Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's body trembled slightly before he retreated quickly back using afterimages. Only after he evaded An Ran's attack did he dare let out a breath of relief. His consciousness entered his aura sea and saw the Nine Netherbird elegantly extending its wings with black flames as it sat comfortably on the mandala flower.

It was evident that the current Nine Netherbird had regained a bit of power after absorbing the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Japalura's Soul Essences. Not only was the color on its body becoming more profound, even the black flames that shrouded its body had become a lot denser.

"You shouldn't need my strength against such an opponent, right?" The Nine Netherbird said lazily: "Moreover, I don't want to attack since I still have a lot of Spiritual Energy that's not digested yet."

"I just came here to get the power that belongs to me."

Mu Chen replied snappily. After the Bloodline Bond, to a certain extent, a portion of the Nine Netherbird's powers belongs to him as well. He could easily use it as if it was his own. At the same time, a portion of his powers could be used by the Nine Netherbird. However, it was evident that the Nine Netherbird does not care about his current power.

This was one of the benefits of the Bloodline Bond.

Of course, the power that he could freely use could not compare in strength with the all-out attack that the Nine Netherbird had done back then against the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. However, it was already sufficient for him right now.

"That's fine."

The Nine Netherbird slowly closed its eyes as it lay lazily on the mandala flower. Black Spiritual Energy erupted from its body like flames as it gushed into the tiny spirit that was sitting on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel...

"Did you become quiet because you finally are aware of the difference in strength?"

An Ran sneered as she increased the ferocity of her attacks. By relying on her Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase strength, she had completely suppressed Mu Chen.

"Playtime's over. It's time to end this!"

Since An Ran noticed that Mu Chen had stopped speaking, she started to feel bored as well. The Spiritual Energy within her hands suddenly became a lot of stronger. Afterwards, she shot down heavily towards Mu Chen in order to end the battle.

Bang! But just when she smacked down with her hands, a hint of light flashed through Mu Chen's black eyes. Then, the corner of his lips were lifted up slightly.

"Senior An. It's not a good habit to rejoice this early."

A fleeting smile appeared on Mu Chen's face as he immediately fired out a punch. At this moment, dark black Spiritual Energy surged out like a flood. Within the Spiritual Energy, a black flame rose as it released an overwhelming heat.

Boom!

The winds formed by Mu Chen's fist directly collided against An Ran's hand. In that instant, a powerful shockwave exploded out. Even the ground underneath their feet collapsed from the strength of the collision.

As the shockwave exploded outwards and gravel flew everywhere, Mu Chen and An Ran's body both trembled for a moment before they were blown back from the shock.

In the hall, the countless new students exclaimed aloud. Mu Chen actually repelled An Ran in a head-on battle? Wasn't he completely suppressed early on?

"That boy is quite interesting." Currently, the majority of the

battles have already ended and many seniors have already reappeared within the hall. They stared at the screen of light and were dumbfounded. It was evident that they did not expect that Mu Chen would be able to fight against An Ran to this extent.

In the hall where the battle was being fought, An Ran also stabilized herself as her cold expression revealed a hint of shock. Mu Chen was able to fight evenly against her in a head on battle?

"How is this possible?"

An Ran looked forward towards Mu Chen. Mu Chen's body was completely wrapped in dark black Spiritual Energy. On the surface of his Spiritual Energy, a mysterious black flame floated around as it gave off an extremely dangerous fluctuation.

"Why did his Spiritual Energy suddenly increase this much?" An Ran was completely dazed. If it was earlier, Mu Chen was able to fight evenly against a Spirit Stage Late Phase. However, the current Mu Chen had already reached the gateway to the Heavenly Fusion Stage. Although there was still a gap between the two of them, it wasn't impossible for him to make up for it.

"Senior An, now let's fight again."

Mu Chen looked at An Ran and smiled. Within his black eyes, a black flame rose and the surging energy within his body instantly made his blood boil.

"As if I'm afraid of you!"

Although An Ran was astonished deep down inside, she still gave a sneer with her mouth.

Swish!

Just when her sneer faded away, swishing sounds instantly rang out. Numerous afterimages appeared and Mu Chen's body had already emerged in front of her like a ghost. Then, his fist that was wrapped with rumbling black smoke quickly grew with within An Ran's eyes.

"Shattering Ethereal Palm!"

An Ran reacted quickly and countered with a palm. Spiritual Energy rumbled as it fiercely collided against Mu Chen's attack.

Bang!

Visible Spiritual Energy shockwaves ripples expanded out. The two Spiritual Energy interweaved against each other as each tried to erode the other. However, An Ran's face changed slightly. This is because she noticed that Mu Chen's dark black Spiritual Energy rushed over overbearingly as the two Spiritual Energy collided with each other. As the black flames rose, even her Spiritual Energy was completely burned away.

"What the hell is this? It could even burn Spiritual Energy!"

An Ran was surprised. Once she felt her Spiritual Energy weakening, her body instantly moved to the sky. At this moment, her face gradually turned serious as she exhaled.

Afterwards, the Spiritual Energy around her body instantly erupted out as a icy-blue hawk appeared behind her. Once the icy-blue hawk appeared, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation emerged as well.

The icy-blue hawk's body was completely covered with an ice armor. From its body, it released a chill which seemed to have frozen the air.

Mu Chen's eyes turned solemn when he noticed the icy-blue hawk behind An Ran's back.

"That's..."

In the hall where the new students were located, numerous people stared at the screen of light where the battle seemed to have reached the climax. At this moment, the seniors' expressions had also turned serious. That guy actually managed to force An Ran to summon the "Northern Goldenstripe Seahawk".

That was a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast ranked 65th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking.

The freshman, which only seemed like a Spirit Stage Middle Phase, was actually powerful to this extent?

Chapter 154 – Spirit Bird Suppresses the Ice Seahawk

Powerful Spiritual Energy rushed out of An Ran's body as a massive icy-blue hawk unfurled its wings behind her. At that moment, the air suddenly froze and a devastating chill filled the hall.

When compared to the cold air emitted from the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, this frosty chill was much more severe.

"To be able to force me to use the Northern Goldenstrip Seahawk; you can be proud of yourself even if you lose." Although An Ran still had a cold expression, her eyes had turned quite serious while facing Mu Chen. No matter what happened, the latter had revealed strength that had surprised her. Moreover, she did not forget that Mu Chen was still only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. If he was to advance into the Heavenly Fusion Stage in the future, he would probably easily surpass her.

Since An Ran had always believed that strength is everything, she retracted the contempt she had after realizing the full extent of Mu Chen's power. She had finally recognized him as an opponent that was on par with her.

"Then please enlighten me senior. However, I don't want to give up yet."

Mu Chen felt the surging power within his body and replied eagerly. This power gave him the impulse to cry out into the sky; it was as if he finally wanted to fight seriously against someone!

An Ran grunted and an icy-blue light swept out from her body. At the same time, the icy-blue hawk flapped its wings. Immediately afterwards, An Ran's body slowly fused with the icy-blue hawk.

Ji!

When she had fully merged with the icy-blue hawk, an amazing

sharpness instantly erupted within the hawk's eyes. At this moment, the icy-blue hawk seemed to come alive. It cried to the skies as a flood of Spiritual Energy was released from its body.

Kacha.

Layers of ice began to form near the icy-blue hawk's surroundings. Even the moisture within the air was completely frozen.

Following the icy cry that emitted from its body, the icy-blue hawk flapped its wings and flew up into the air. Layers of ice continued to grow endlessly from within its body. From a distance, it appeared to be a life-like ice sculpture.

However, this particular ice sculpture was extremely dangerous.

"Frozen Wings!"

When the icy-blue hawk’s body was completely enveloped by ice, it flapped its wings and a dazzling, frosty pillar was formed and descended down towards Mu Chen.

Bang!

When this terrifying attack descended from above, the air seemed to explode. Chill filled the air; layers of ice formed as it swooped down, creating an icy path in its wake

Everybody could feel how terrifying An Ran's mighty attack was.

It was as if a fierce creature from the Northern Seas, carrying with it an endless chill, had descended into the world.

Mu Chen lifted his head, and his black eyes reflected the terrifying icy-blue hawk. However, not even the slightest bit of fear could be found in his eyes. Instead, the raging fire within his eyes burned ever more vigorously.

"Let's have a good fight then!"

The smile on Mu Chen's face had suddenly turned a bit unruly. He stomped on the ground as he darted forward. Dark-black

Spiritual Energy gushed out like flames and enshrouded his body.

Xiong Xiong.

All of a sudden, the dark black Spiritual Energy expanded exponentially. From afar, only the black smoke rushing into the skies could be seen. In its wake, a long and dark tail of light formed. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy rumbling throughout the area was extremely powerful.

The two figures of light rushed at each other within the massive hall and collided against each other fiercely.

In the hall where the freshmen were located, many of them were completely shocked as they watched this scene. They never expected that Mu Chen would choose to fight against An Ran's powerful attack directly instead of evading her attack.

At this moment, Zhou Ling and the others had also finished up their battles. They, too, stared solemnly at the light screen. The power displayed by Mu Chen had also completely shocked them. Although judging from his strength, he only seemed like a Spirit Stage Middle Phase, he was displaying a power that rivaled or even went beyond what they possessed.

The two brothers, Shi Jingtian and Shi Hao, both turned gloomy upon seeing this. It was evident that the power revealed by Mu Chen was much more powerful than earlier, when he was facing Shi Jingtian.

"No matter what sort of measures you possess, it's impossible for you to be at an advantage against a Heavenly Fusion Stage if you fight head on against them!" The two brothers gnashed their teeth as they stared tightly at the screen of light.

"Brother Mu, good luck!" Mo Ling and the others, with their fists clenched tight, seemed extremely nervous as they stared at the blazing black flame in the screen of light.

Boom!

Under numerous nervous gazes, the black and blue lights were like meteorites as they collided fiercely inside the battle hall.

An amazing chill rushed over from the impact and the sheer frost even formed layers of ice on Mu Chen's body. Even the dense black flames seemed to be suppressed by it.

In an instant, black flames fought back and arose within Mu Chen. A low growl seemed to be coming from within his throat. Then, dense black Spiritual Energy mixed with black flames burst out overwhelmingly from his body.

The layers of ice on his body instantly melted into nothingness.

Li!

In that instant, a clear cry also rang out from within Mu Chen's body. This cry was filled with pride and dignity as if it was the king of all birds.

Once this cry resounded from Mu Chen, the icy-blue hawk trembled for a moment. Although it was already ingested, it could still sense the oppression that had come from within Mu Chen's body.

Dark black Spiritual Energy concentrated violently on the surface of Mu Chen's body. Soon he took the form of a giant bird with black wings. As the giant bird extended its wings, black flames surged out.

Bang!

Overbearing dark-black Spiritual Energy formed into a mysterious black bird as it charged forward. The rumbling black flames emitting from it instantly melted the cold chill from the icy-blue hawk.

Horror finally filled the icy-blue hawk's eyes. Even An Ran was able to detect a blazing heat rushing over towards her.

This heat instantly made the Spiritual Energy within her body

boil up as if it was being burned.

"Shatter!"

A hint of chill flashed through Mu Chen's eyes as he shouted coldly. Then, a loud explosion rang out.

Boom!

The illusory black bird that was being enveloped by black flames flapped its wings. Immediately after, the flames surged out and destroyed the layers of ice armor on the icy-blue bird. In the end, the black bird turned into a black light and pierced through the icy-blue bird.

The black flames rushed away like smoke. However, the icy-blue hawk behind it was filled with cracks. In the end, it exploded out and An Ran's body emerged as the blue lights twinkled in the sky. At the same time, An Ran's face was filled with disbelief.gf

The dense dark black Spiritual Energy around Mu Chen's body also slowly faded away. Although he was a bit pale, his eyes were still exceptionally bright.

Inside the hall, two figures of light suddenly appeared and enveloped both Mu Chen and An Ran. As the light dissipated away, the two figures also vanished from the hall.

Inside the freshman hall, everybody widened their eyes as they stared at the fading screen of the light. The entire hall was completely silent and everyone was filled with disbelief.

They could not believe that Mu Chen had actually destroyed An Ran's terrifying attack!

"Amazing."

Zhou Ling and the others also sighed. A hint of admiration could be heard within their voices. Although they had fought against Mu Chen in the Spiritual Road, they did not bear any grudges against each other as they brushed past him. Therefore, they had not

experienced how frightening of an existence Mu Chen was. They could only perceive that Mu Chen was extraordinary from the event that had happened later on.

And now, they were able to personally witness and feel the pressure that the handsome boy had emitted.

The two Shi brothers' expressions turned ugly. However, they did not say anything. It was evident that they were still filled with shock. Even by joining forces with each other, it was near impossible for them to win against An Ran's attack from earlier. However, Mu Chen was able to do it...and was only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase...

They did not understand how Mu Chen had managed to do this, but this did not stop fear from appearing within their hearts. Mu Chen’s demonstration had finally made them understand that even if he had been kicked out of the Spiritual Road in the middle of the competition; even if he did not receive the Spiritual Road's Empowerment, he was still the Blood Calamity that countless geniuses feared in the Spiritual Road.

"Haha, Brother Mu won!"

As for Mo Ling and the others, they immediately cheered. Sun'Er even clapped her soft and white hands as delight flashed across her petite face.

Luo Li, on the other hand, only gently smiled. Her eyebrows were like crescent moons as a hint of happiness and pride emerged in her clear eyes. The boy that she would often think about deep down inside was indeed extraordinary.

In the hall, two beams of light descended and Mu Chen and An Ran emerged from within. The latter's cold expression had already faded away; instead, what replaced it was a face full of complex emotions. She looked at Mu Chen before she looked over to Old Bai and said: "I lost."

On the side, the seniors quietly smiled when they heard this and directed their gaze towards Mu Chen. This boy truly isn't ordinary. He actually made An Ran admit defeat.

"It seems that there are a few powerful individuals within this bunch of freshmen." With just an exchange of gazes, the seniors could tell that every one of them had thought of the same thing.

Old Bai grinned as he nodded his head. His gaze also swept across Mu Chen's body as he smiled: "There's something interesting within this fellow's body."

Mu Chen smiled in response, but did not explain anything. Although he was not trying to hide the existence of the Nine Netherbird, there was no need to reveal it. After all, the name of the Nine Netherbird was far too famous. Moreover, the Nine Netherbird within his body possessed the qualifications to enter the Heaven Rankings. Once it succeeds in its evolution, its position would instantly improve as it will become a genuine ancient divine beast.

"This is your reward."

Old Bai flicked his fingers, and the crystal card in Mu Chen's hand instantly brightened up. The originally 1100 Spiritual Value Points suddenly became 6100...

"Okay, now that everybody's challenge has been completed, next up..."

Old Bai smiled slightly and waved his sleeves. The air behind him instantly distorted and, with a flash, an enormous bronze door appeared out of thin air. Then, the giant doors slowly opened.

"The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy welcomes everyone."

At this moment, all the students stared eagerly at the opening bronze doors. Even Mu Chen could feel his heart pounding. After all, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was the holy land for cultivation within numerous youths' hearts...

And finally, its doors were open for them!

Sounds of raging flames.

Chapter 155 – Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy

Although there was an endless number of continents within the Great Thousand World, the Northern Heavens Continent was still one of the most dazzling ones.

And the source of the Northern Heavens Continent’s brilliance was the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

It was one of the widely-known "Five Great Academies" within the Great Thousand World, where numerous young geniuses gathered. Every one of their students would reveal their magnificent talent as they embarked on the road of becoming one of the dazzling powerhouses within the Great Thousand World.

The Great Thousand World was enormous. Among them, there were countless races and various powerful forces. But even so, many of these geniuses would choose to enter the "Five Great Academies" for training. Just based off this, one could see the how unique the "Five Great Academies" were. Otherwise, why would these wellborn geniuses give up on their own race's inheritance and travel across many continents to train at one of the "Five Great Academies".

Because of the brilliance of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, this place was naturally quite outstanding. When compared to the Northern Spiritual Realm within the Hundred Spirit Continent, the Northern Spiritual Realm couldn't even be considered a rural province of the Northern Heavens Continent.

Within the Northern Heavens Continent, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy maintained a exclusive position. Aside from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there were still countless small and large forces within this continent. This continent was truly where talented geniuses were concealed.

Someone had once said, even Sovereign powerhouses would have to retract their pride and arrogance when they arrived at the Northern Heavens Continent. Judging from just this, one can see how complex and deep the waters were of this continent.

Although the waters were deep within the Northern Heavens Continent, the turbulence caused within it would never spread to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This is because all of the forces and powerhouses within the Northern Heavens Continent know that the quiet Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which was located at the center of the continent, was in fact a sleeping dragon. Although, normally, it did not normally reveal its strength, its presence was enough to frighten everyone once it did revealed its might.

Moreover, everyone knew that the strength displayed by a Spiritual Academy would only be the strength on the surface. The truly terrifying strength was the not this, but the hidden strength that they concealed.

Over the thousands of years, there were numerous powerhouses who came out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academies. Among them, there were a few powerhouses who once stood at the pinnacle. Although they had already left the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and perhaps became a leader of a force or territory, it was impossible to remove the bonds they had with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even if they did not do anything during normal circumstances, once the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was in danger of being wiped out...the individuals would be able to see how terrifying a power that was hidden deep inside the academy.

This was the confidence and power of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Perhaps it might not be the strongest within the Great Thousand World. Its human connections would make even the elite forces and races with powerful backgrounds fear it...

When Mu Chen and the others stepped through the giant bronze

doors, they could feel a sense of dizziness emerging from within. This was due to the dimensional transfer. Fortunately, the nausea did not last, and before long they felt their bodies stabilizing. Then, the light in front of their eyes suddenly turned brighter.

Everyone opened their narrowed eyes as they stared at the unfamiliar world in front of them. Shock emerged on the faces of many.

The originally empty stone platform was instantly filled as Mu Chen and the others appeared. In front of them was a majestic sight.

An vast and endless land could be seen. On the ground, there were numerous cultivation halls that were connected with each other. Occasionally, waterfalls would descend down through the mountains as grand ripples of mist emitted out.

The scene in front of them was too impressive. Thus, even though the stone platform that Mu Chen and the others were standing on, was quite vast, it was nothing compared to the scene in front of them.

In the skies above the Spiritual Academies, numerous figures would pass by. A few would be flying within the practice grounds. Hence, powerful Spiritual Energies would collide and cause muffled sounds.

Among the endless mountains within the Spiritual Academy, the most eye-catching mountain was the one that was situated in the center. The mountain was oddly shaped and appeared to be a divine bird that had spread its wings. A sense of oppression that enveloped the entire land could be felt from the bird-shaped mountain.

At the top of the wings of this bird-shaped mountain, there were stone tablets on each respective wings. On the stone tablet, dazzling light that could be seen throughout the entire Spiritual Academy radiated outwards.

Mu Chen stared at the massive stone tablet situated at the left wing and stared at the top of the tablet. As the golden lights shone, two grand words were formed.

Spirit Ranking!

“Spirit Ranking...” Mu Chen murmured. Could this be the Spirit Ranking that An Ran previously mentioned?

“That is the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Spirit Ranking.” A voice faintly appeared beside him. Mu Chen turned around and noticed An Ran beside him. She stared at the massive stone tablet as her red lips twitched.

“What is the Spirit Ranking?” Mu Chen asked in confusion.

“Just as the name implies. This is a ranking that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy made for the Spirit Stage students. It is the most basic ranking within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As long as your strength is within the Spirit Stage, you have the qualifications to enter this ranking. However, this Spirit Ranking only includes the top 1000 Spirit Stage within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy,” An Ran explained.

Only after the explanation did Mu Chen finally understand the ranking. He was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. Just what rank would he possess on the Spirit Ranking?

“If you believe that the ones on the Spirit Ranking would only possess the strength of a Spirit Stage, then you’re too naïve.” An Ran grunted: “The bastards that are ranked in the top 10 are probably on par with me.”

Mu Chen was stunned. Afterwards, he was completely surprised. After all, he only defeated An Ran after relying on the shared power between him and the Nine Netherbird. Could the people ranked in the top 10 possess Spiritual Beasts that were comparable with the Nine Netherbird? However, it couldn’t be possible that they would possess Bloodline Bond like him, right?

“These individuals only used a loophole. Normally, you only need to infuse your strongest Spiritual Energy within the Spiritual Value Card that Old Bai gave you earlier and you would possess the right to enter the Spirit Ranking. The Spiritual Value Card would send the information to the Spirit Ranking and rank you.”

“The individuals, who are ranked in the top 10, all used a loophole. In the instant that they advanced into the Heavenly Fusion Stage, they infused the Spiritual Energy within the Spiritual Value Card. Just like this, they would be able to unleash an energy comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage with their Spirit Stage strength. By doing this, their rankings would naturally be very high. After all, how could an ordinary Spirit Stage compete with them?”

Mu Chen smacked his lips. In other words, the individuals that were ranked within the top 10 of the Spirit Ranking had occupied the top 10 of the Spirit Ranking while their true strength had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage a long time ago?

“Are there any benefits in occupying the top 10 of the Spirit Ranking?” Mu Chen asked. It probably was pretty glorious for them to use this method in occupying the top 10 ranks, right?

“Every day, the top 50 of the Spirit Ranking will automatically obtain Spiritual Values based on their rankings. How could they not be moved by the idea of earning Spiritual Values without doing anything. Moreover, just how many Spirit Stage students would dare to challenge them? However, these individuals are just trying to demonstrate their might over here only. If we were to talk about the next ranking, the Heavenly Ranking, they probably wouldn’t even enter the top 1000.” An Ran replied.

After this, Mu Chen understood. So there were such benefits from having a rank. No wonder they wouldn’t want to leave after occupying a rank within a basic ranking such as the Spirit Ranking.

“Then what’s the Heavenly Ranking?” Mu Chen continued to ask as if he was a curious little baby.

“Heavenly Ranking…” After speaking these two words, An Ran’s cold expression finally turned serious and her eyes turned completely passionate. She lifted her head and stared at the right wing of the bird-shaped mountain. At that location, there was another enormous stone tablet. Clouds were moving near the stone tablet and golden lights would occasionally flash. Every single name on this stone tablet was a powerhouse within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Heavenly Ranking. It is the ranking that students who have entered the Three Heavens Stage can enter. That ranking represents the peak of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Numerous geniuses train in order to obtain a seat within the Heavenly Ranking. Whenever the top ten ranks within the Heavenly Ranking change, it is the largest event within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

Mu Chen could feel the passion within An Ran’s tone, and his black eyes focused on the stone tablet. He stared and noticed that the names formed with golden light were permeating out with glory. It was as if they were etched there to be respected and looked up to by all students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Standing next to Mu Chen, Luo Li, Ye Qingling and the others also stared at the stone tablet which represents the true level of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Heavenly Ranking Rank 10, Zhou Fan. Cultivated at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for 3 Years.”

“Heavenly Ranking Rank 9, Luo Hua. Cultivated at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for 3 Years.”

“Heavenly Ranking Rank 8, Wang Zhong.

…

“Heavenly Ranking Rank 3, Su Xuan.”

“Heavenly Ranking Rank 2, Li Xuantong.”

When the Heavenly Ranking’s Rank 2 had its name displayed, Luo Li frowned beside Mu Chen. However, Mu Chen failed to detected it.

“Who is ranked first?”

Countless eyes moved upwards once again and stared at the top position. At that location, a name carrying a deep sense of oppression emitted out.

“Heavenly Ranking Rank 1, Shen Cangsheng.

“Shen Cangsheng…” Numerous individuals stared at the golden name. Although it was only a name, it was like an unsurpassable mountain. This trauma enveloped and entered many people’s hearts.

After all, they were only freshmen that had just arrived within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In this place filled with countless geniuses, they had only just started. However, that person had already reached the pinnacle and was standing above them.

Mu Chen stared at the domineering name and slowly retracted his gaze away. He could sense the blood within him starting to show signs of boiling.

This is the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that he had been expecting for so long. Even the competition within the Spiritual Road was nothing compared to this place. If he wanted to prove himself, this place was the best training ground for him.

One day, he would surpass all these heaven-sent children and stand at the peak as well!

Chapter 156 – Yang Hong

While standing on the massive platform, thousands of freshmen stared at the name that was at the top of the “Heavenly Ranking”. The pressure which it emitted instantly silenced everyone.

Even the freshmen that were assessed as “King Class” in the Spiritual Road had a glimmer of fear and respect as they stared at the name.

This is the person that stood at the peak of countless students within Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Shen Cangsheng…”

Mu Chen slowly spat out a mouthful of air as he gently muttered this domineering name.

“He is currently the strongest student within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even I have only seen him once, a year ago.” An Ran stared complicatedly at the name. When she met Shen Cangsheng, the latter had completed a mission to hunt down a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast and had just returned to the academy.

Under the sunset, a boy dressed in black robes had descended from the sky with a long spear that pierced through a massive Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast. Fresh blood spattered through the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As he descended to the academy with his spear on his shoulders, a trail was formed from the trickling blood.

That scene had shocked the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even for An Ran, who was a freshmen at that time, could feel a shiver coming from the depths of her soul.

“To all of you freshmen. Right now, he is not someone that you can reach.”

An Ran gradually recovered and stared at the silent freshmen as

she smiled: “The Heavenly Ranking is still too far away for you. Maybe after you’ve trained for at least two years, you may qualify to enter the Heavenly Ranking. Right now, all of you should just consider how to enter the Spirit Stage Ranking. That ranking is the place where all newcomers belong.

Hearing this, many freshmen scratched their heads. The Spirit Ranking wasn’t that easy to enter either. If they wanted to rank in the top 50s, they would probably need the strength of a Quasi-Heavenly Fusion Stage. As for the top 10, even if they possessed the strength to occupy it, they wouldn’t dare to steal the positions away from the seniors that weren’t willing to leave the ranking.

Thinking about this, all of the freshmen secretly sighed. As expected from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which they had come to view as holy ground for cultivation. The competition here was truly terrifying.

At this moment, light emerged in the sky above the enormous platform and Old Bai’s body emerged. He stared at the thousands of freshmen and nodded his head slightly. Then, he smiled and said: “Since all of you have reached the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, then it’s time to gather the remaining freshmen over from the other three Northern Heavens World. After all, they’ve reached this place a few days ago.”

Hearing this, Mu Chen frowned in response.

Old Bai waved his sleeves, and a clear bell sound resounded in the skies. Then, it created a symphony of sound waves as it spread out.

Following the ringing bell sound, Mu Chen and the others quickly noticed numerous figures that were rushing over and landing on the other stone platforms.

Due to the numerous figures, a bustling commotion rang out within this area.

On the platform where Mu Chen and the others were, thousands

of freshmen stared curiously at the other three stone platforms. These people had also passed through the other Northern Heaven World. They were also this year's Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's freshmen just like them.

By adding up the freshmen on the four stone platforms, there were probably over twenty thousand students. This number was truly extraordinary.

Swish!

On the southern stone platform, a figure of light rushed over and stood at the front of the stone platform. When this figure of light appeared, the freshmen on that platform instantly showed respectful gazes as they stared at it.

The lights slowly dispersed and revealed a slim and tall figure. It was a beautiful girl who had long, icy-blue hair. Her pair of big eyes were also icy-blue in color. When viewed from far away, she seemed like a frosty mountain, which emitted a icy-cold chill.

If An Ran was refined and elegant, then the girl with long blue hair was naturally cold. Her pretty eyes seemed to attract the chill air within the world.

Mu Chen stared at the girl and his eyes narrowed. From the powerful fluctuation that emitted out from the latter's body, he could tell that she had also advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

"She's Bing Qing. She is the freshmen that defeated the strongest senior within her Northern Heavens World." An Ran replied faintly: "It's said that she came from the Ice Spirit Clan. Hence, she was born with the ability to control ice."

"Ice Spirit Clan?" Mu Chen was stunned. Then, he said in surprise: "Could it be the rumored Ice Spirit Clan in which the Martial Ancestor, who came from a Lower Plane, challenged all by himself?"

He had heard this rumor a long time ago. The Ice Spirit Clan was

a clan that possessed powerful heritage and background. It was considered to be an elite force even within the Great Thousand World. However, in front of the Martial Ancestor, who came from a Lower Plane, the Ice Spirit Clan had been completely powerless against that man, who was a god of lightning who even wielded a lightning staff. That battle had shocked the entire Great Thousand World. Even Mu Chen, who was living in the Northern Spiritual Realm, had heard about it.

An Ran nodded. It was evident that she had heard this rumor as well.

From afar, the girl known as Bing Qing stared at the platform where Mu Chen and the others were standing after revealing her appearance. However, her gaze only remained on Luo Li's body before she turned away. She did not participate in the Spiritual Road. However, her strength was in no way inferior to the individuals that stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. From Mu Chen's group, she felt that Luo Li was the only one that was considered to be a threat to her.

Swish!

Following Bing Qing, two other figures of light rushed out and stood in front of the east and west stone platforms. On the eastern stone platform, a grizzled figure appeared. His body emitted a yellow glow as if he was a withered tree. However, he gave others a feeling of extremely danger.

"That's Mu Kui. He is also the most outstanding freshmen within another Northern Heavens World."

An Ran stared at the western stone platform. At that location, a slender boy in blue clothes stood with his hands behind his back. A completely different temperament exuded from him. While he was being quite arrogant, he was still exceptionally powerful.

"That's..."

“Yang Hong. I know him, you don’t have to introduce him to me.” Mu Chen’s black eyes slowly focused on the slender figure far away. He laughed faintly as if he was reminiscing the past.

Beside him, Luo Li also stared at that figure. A chill flashed through her clear glass-like eyes.

At this moment, the boy at the eastern stone platform also felt the gaze and tilted his head immediately. He possessed a fairly handsome face. Matched with his slender figure and unique temperament, he definitely possessed a powerful charm. From nearby, many girls would secretly glance over shyly at him.

He stared at the distant stone platform before his gaze focused on Mu Chen’s body. His face was stunned for a moment before he formed a strange smile on his face.

“Mu Chen, so we meet again.”

He smiled at Mu Chen. However, his laughter that was filled with dense Spiritual Energy, instantly caused numerous students to turned their heads over.

“However, I’m quite surprised. So the widely known and famous Blood Calamity in the Spiritual Road is now only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. Ohoho, this is beyond my expectations. I never thought that you would be this weak after losing the Spiritual Road’s Empowerment.”

The boy laughed gently and pondered as he stared at Mu Chen: “If Ji Xuan knew that you only possess such strength, he would probably be quite disappointed. After all, he had always seen you as his rival. In the end, you’ve actually became this weak and pitiful. It seems that being kicked out of the Spiritual Road had taken its toll on you.”

Yang Hong’s voice carried and instantly started commotions within the other three stone platforms. After all, there were numerous people that participated in the Spiritual Road before.

Among them, there were definitely quite a few of individuals that had been assessed as King Class. Hence, they deeply remembered the name of the Blood Calamity, Mu Chen.

After all, he was a person that even King Xuan, Ji Xuan, had feared in the Spiritual Road. How could they not be wary of him?

Numerous gazes immediately shifted away and landed on Mu Chen's body. Shock immediately filled their eyes. Compared to the freshmen that stood at the peak, the latter's Spirit Stage Middle Phase strength was incomparable.

Bing Qing and Mu Kui also stared over. Although the former did not participate in the Spiritual Road, she had a bit of understanding about the individuals stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. Naturally, she had heard of the so-called Blood Calamity Mu Chen. However, she never expected that the handsome boy in front of them was the Blood Calamity that could instantly change the expressions of people, who participate in the Spiritual Road.

At the same time, Mu Kui also frowned. A hint of disappointment filled his eyes. He naturally enjoyed fighting. If Mu Chen was strong , then he would be interested in him. However, these thoughts immediately faded away when he looked at him.

"Yang Hong. If you want an opponent, I can always fight against you," Luo Li's clear glass-like eyes stared coldly at the boy as she slowly spoke.

Hearing this, Yang Hong immediately frowned.

"If you want to mock him now, it is still too early for you. He is the same as the three of you and is one of the most outstanding people within his own Northern Heavens World. Even I was defeated by him. So what gives you the right to mock him?" Beside Mu Chen, An Ran frowned and let out a sneer.

She had lost to Mu Chen. If Mu Chen was mocked by these

individuals, wouldn't they also be laughing at her incompetence?

When An Ran said these words, commotions instantly burst out. The freshmen from the other three platforms stared in disbelief at the calm, handsome boy. With just the strength of a Spirit Stage Middle Phase, he was able to defeat a senior who was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage? How was that even possible?

Bing Qing and Mu Kui were completely startled. Then, they stared curiously at Mu Chen.

"Oh?"

Yang Hong narrowed his eyes as he stared seriously at Mu Chen. He smiled keenly: "As expected from the Blood Calamity, Mu Chen. It seems that you've hidden your strength quite deeply. This way, it will be interesting..."

Mu Chen's black eyes stared at Yang Hong and his lips also formed a smile. He took a step forward and his voice suddenly turned cold.

"If you're interested, why don't you test it out?"

Chapter 157 – Importance of Spiritual Value Points

Mu Chen's cold voice resounded through the skies as he stared keenly at Yang Hong, who was in the distance. At this moment, the Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to tremble.

The freshmen within this area instantly quieted down. Every single one of them were filled with curiosity and expectation as they stared at the two opposing individuals. These two individuals were the most outstanding freshmen within their respective Northern Heavens World. Just how amazing would their battle be when they face each other?

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Yang Hong retracted his smile slightly and smiled coldly in response to these words. Currently, dense Spiritual Energy surged out from his palms as he smiled once again: "I'd really want to test you out. Just how in the world did you defeat a Heavenly Fusion Stage with your Spirit Stage strength?"

Sparks flew between their eyes as the two of them stared at each other. A cold killing intent belonging to each of them was also apparent.

"That's enough. Now is not the time for you to fight with one another."

Old Bai's figure appeared in the air and disrupted the opposing atmosphere with a swing of his arms. He said: "One month later, there will be a freshmen competition. When that happens, you will naturally have the chance to fight against each other. Whoever manages to win in the freshmen competition will be the number one individual among the freshmen."

Hearing Old Bai's words, many freshmen's eyes lit up. Perhaps the title of the number one individual in the Northern Heavens

Spiritual Academy was still quite far away from them, they did not mind revealing their strength in the freshmen competition. This way, they would be able to obtain a bit of fame within the freshmen. After all, there were over twenty thousand freshmen this year. It wasn't easy for them to stand out from the rest of them.

As a youngster, a bit of reputation was enough to make their blood boil and to strive for it.

A hint of interest also flashed through Mu Kui's eyes. He naturally enjoyed fighting and was also a person who had stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. He was in no way inferior to Yang Hong and the others. Thus, he naturally did not want to lose the title of the strongest to anybody else...Even if his opponents were powerful individuals.

As for Bing Qing, she remained completely calm and was not affected by these words.

On the other hand, the coldness within Mu Chen's eyes faded away slightly as he took a step backwards. It was true that this wasn't the best opportunity for him to fight against Yang Hong. The latter's strength was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase and was no weaker than An Ran. Moreover, Yang Hong probably possessed special techniques. Thus, he could not underestimate him at all. It would probably difficult to determine the victor if they were to fight right now.

"From now on, all of you are official students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. No matter what sort of identity and background you possessed before, you are only ordinary students in this place. If you want to earn respect and status, you must show off your abilities." Old Bai stared at the numerous students as he smiled faintly.

"Next up, all of you have been arranged to live in the freshmen area. The freshmen area is divided into four districts: North,

South, East, West. In a bit, there will be an instructor that would lead you over."

As Old Bai's voice faded away, dozens of figures of light rushed over from nearby and stopped above them. These figures were all middle-aged individuals. However, the powerful fluctuations emitting from the body made them understood that every single one of them possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage.

When Mu Chen witnessed this scene, he could not hide the surprise within his eyes. An ordinary instructor in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy actually possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. If it was in the Northern Spiritual Realm was enough for them to be lord of the realm.

As expected, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was truly powerful.

The dozens of instructor spread out and started arranging the students. As for Mu Chen and the others, a slender figure headed over to them. In the end, the lights faded away and formed into a beautiful woman with a voluptuous body. She wore a red dress and possessed a pretty appearance. She had a charming and mature style as she smiled at them attractively.

The woman in red dress stared at the area where Mu Chen and the others were and waved. A barrier of light immediately enshrouded approximately 2000 students.

"For the ones within the light barrier, congratulations. I am your freshmen instructor and will guide you for a while. I'm called Mu Ling. If there is anything that you don't understand, feel free to find me." The women in red dress smiled as she stared at the boys and girls beneath her.

When the other freshmen from other areas noticed this charming instructor, they immediately stared enviously at them. After all, she was much more attractive than the stern-looking male instructor that they have.

“Come. Follow me, I’ll bring all of you to your respective district.” Mu Ling waved her hands and swayed her body before heading towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Let’s go.”

Mu Chen smiled at Luo Li and immediately followed. Behind him, Ye Qingling, Sun’Er, Mo Ling and the others also quickly followed. They also happened to be in the same area as Mu Chen. Thus, they would be able to take care of each other from now on.

Thousands of people followed Mu Ling and charged away from the stone platform. As they descended down, numerous cultivation halls appeared in their eyes. Moreover, they could see countless individuals flying through the skies.

Under Mu Ling’s guidance, Mu Chen and the others flew towards the west side for dozens of minutes before slowing down. Then, the former pointed down and smiled: “This is the place where you’ll be living.”

Mu Chen and the others looked down and noticed the lush scenery along with the sparkling clear lake. In this area, there were simple houses situated in groups.

“The Spiritual Aura here…”

Surprise filled Mu Chen’s eyes. He discovered that the Spiritual Aura of the world was exceptionally dense in this region. Moreover, the density would increase as they entered the depths of this region.

“There’s actually a huge Spirit Convergence Array hidden in this place!”

Mu Chen’s eyes swept across this area. Right now, his eyes weren’t the same as before. With just a glance, he was able to detect the hidden special fluctuations within the air. These were fluctuations that were unique to a Spiritual Array.

This residential area for freshmen actually has a Spirit

Convergence Array. Moreover, the rank of it had definitely surpassed the only Spirit Convergence Array that the Northern Spiritual Academy possessed.

"Little guy. You have keen eyes." Mu Ling was amazed as she stared at Mu Chen. However, she smiled and faced the crowd as she said: "The place that you will be living in is enveloped by a Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array."

When these words were spoken, commotions instantly broke out from the crowd. A Spirit Convergence Array was a symbol of power for any forces. Perhaps many of them had seen a Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array, it was still the first time that they've seen one arranged at a residential location.

"Moreover, the residential area for freshmen is also divided into A, B, C-Class. You are only assigned to C-Class right now. It is considered to be at the border of the Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array. Although the Spiritual Aura here is quite decent, it cannot compare with the B-Class and A-Class areas." Mu Ling pointed to the depths of this region. It was evident that the Spiritual Aura at that location was much more concentrated. Then, she said: "That location is the center of the Spirit Convergence Array. The density of the Spiritual Aura naturally surpassed the exterior of it."

"Can we live at that place as well?" A few freshmen drooled as they asked. It was evident that it was much more beneficial for their cultivation if they were to live inside that area.

"Of course." Mu Ling smiled charmingly as she replied: "However, we would require a fee for you were to live there. An A-Class room requires a fee of 2000 Spiritual Value Points per month. As for a B-Class room, it requires 1000 Spiritual Values Points."

All the new students were completely stunned when they heard this. So it was like that? They had to pay rent?

"Little guys, Spiritual Value Points are quite important within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This can be a mean to

motivate you to cultivate. In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there are a total of 100 plus Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Arrays, 60 plus Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Arrays, 20 Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Arrays, 10 Rank 7 Spirit Convergence Arrays and one Rank 8 Spirit Convergence Array."

WAHH.

At this moment, even the blessed individuals from powerful backgrounds could not help but suck in mouthfuls of cold air. It was evident that they were shocked by this news. Wasn't it too terrifying for the academy to possess this many Spirit Convergence Array?

"Of course, everyone shouldn't think that they could enjoy using these Spirit Convergence Array without paying a price." Mu Ling chuckled.

"What do you mean?" At this moment, everybody felt a sense of unease.

"Aside from the Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array, the remaining Spirit Convergence Array requires a fee to enter. For the Rank 7 Spirit Convergence Array, it requires a fee of 5000 Spiritual Value Points per day."

Bang.

Almost all of the students fell down at this moment. They finally understood what sort of existence Spiritual Values Points are within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It would be difficult for them to progress forward without any Spiritual Value Points here.

Mu Chen also laughed bitterly when he heard this. Right now, he possessed 6100 Spiritual Value Points. In other words, wouldn't he only qualify to cultivate for one day in the Rank 7 Spirit Convergence Array?

However, it's still quite interesting.

“Everyone shouldn’t be this sad. There are actually many ways to earn Spiritual Value Points within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.” Mu Ling smiled charmingly, but a hint of sadistic satisfaction could be seen when she looked at their miserable appearances.

“The simplest method of obtaining Spiritual Value Points is to infuse your strongest Spiritual Energy within your Spiritual Value Card every month. If you’ve improved during that month, you will automatically be rewarded for the difference. Of course, you can also do it whenever you make a breakthrough…”

“If you want to obtain Spiritual Value Points quicker, you can enter the “Lightning Territory”. That is a popular location within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.” Mu Ling pointed towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s skies in the distance. All of them immediately turned their gaze over and they noticed that the sky at that location was quite dark. They could vaguely see the distorting skies and flashing lightning.

“The Lightning Territory is a cultivation ground that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had opened up. At that location, endless amounts of divine lightning descend. This divine lightning possesses the effect of strengthening Spiritual Energy. At the same time, it can also strengthen the body. Anyone who reaches Spirit Stage strength can enter that place. Aside from cultivation, you could condense the divine lightning into a “Divine Lightning Bead”. This is quite popular within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It is said that it is worth 200 Spiritual Value Points per bead in the Spiritual Values Hall.”

“200 Spiritual Values per bead?” The corner of the crowd’s eyes twitched. It was actually that expensive? It seems that it was a decent method to earn Spiritual Values.

“However…”

Mu Ling placed her hands on her lips and smiled bewitchingly at

them: “You will also have to pay a price to enter the Lightning Territory. However, it isn’t that much. You can enter it after paying 500 Spiritual Value Points.”

At this moment, everybody’s expression turned grim and gnashed their teeth. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was truly despicable!

Chapter 158 – Spiritual Value Hall

“Okay. Next up, everybody can begin to decide where they want to live. Ah, if anyone wants to be transferred over to the B-Class or A-Class area, please let me know.” Mu Ling chuckled as she stared at the bitter expressions on the freshmen.

At this moment, all of the new students exchanged gazes with each and smiled wryly. With the Spiritual Value Points that they possessed, they could only temporarily live within the C-Class area. Only after they’ve gradually understood how to obtain Spiritual Value can they select a higher level of treatment.

Mu Chen looked at the A-Class area and was slightly moved by it. Currently, he had over 6000 Spiritual Value and was more than enough for him to select a place with dense Spiritual Aura. This way, it would be beneficial for his cultivation as well. Thus, it was worth the price that he would pay.

Mu Chen thought for a moment before suddenly leaning over to Luo Li and saying: “Why don’t we live together?”

Once she heard this, Luo Li froze. Then, she immediately blushed and glared at him with a bashful expression. It seems that this guy is going overboard now that we’ve reunited with each other.

However, Mu Chen ignored her and looked towards Mu Ling. He said: “Instructor Mu Ling, how many people can share a room together?”

“Two people.” Mu Ling chuckled as she moved her gaze alternatively at Mu Chen and Luo Li. In her eyes, a special meaning could be seen.

“Then, I want an A-Class room.” Mu Chen smiled.

Luo Li bit her lips and turned her face as she blushed. At this moment, she could only pretend that she was completely unrelated to Mu Chen. No matter how much she did not care about other

matters, she still had the modesty of a girl. How could she cohabitate with a boy? In the Spiritual Road, she only did it due to the circumstances. The ground was their bed and the skies were their blankets. However, she could not do this anymore.

After Mu Chen had said this, Zhou Ling and the others also selected an A-Class room. With the amount of Spiritual Values that they had, it was enough for them to pay this fee. As for Ye Qingling, she brought Sun'Er with her and selected a B-Class room.

Chaos appeared within the skies for a while and many freshmen had decided on where they would be living. Afterwards, Mu Ling brought Mu Chen and the others as they headed towards the A-Class area.

Once Mu Chen and the others entered the A-Class room, they could feel the dense Spiritual Aura within the world. Their consciousness trembled for a moment as they could feel that this residential area would definitely bring numerous benefits to their cultivation.

"Below here are the A-Class rooms. You can pick among them yourselves. Once you've entered the room, it will automatically deduct the amount of Spiritual Values from your Spiritual Value Card." Mu Ling pointed downwards as she smiled.

"After you've selected your room, you should rest for the day."

"Also, if you use the Spiritual Value Card in your hands, you can contact the Spiritual Value Hall. In the Spiritual Value Hall, you can exchange for a variety of items. Moreover, you can use the Spiritual Value Card to check for them. Of course, if you've taken a liking to anything, you would still have to head over to the Spiritual Value Hall in order to exchange for it."

Mu Chen and the others nodded as they stared downwards. His gaze glanced around before finally stopping at a tiny house near the clear lake. Then, he smiled: "I'll select this one."

As his voice faded away, he smiled and turned to look at Luo Li. Then, without waiting for the girl to resist, he pulled her slender hand and descended down towards that house.

At this moment, Zhou Ling and the others that were nearby had an extraordinary expression as they witnessed this scene. Wasn't this too stimulating?

However, Mu Chen ignored their reactions and landed in front of the house with Luo Li. The girl immediately escaped from his grasp blushing as her eyes were filled with embarrassment.

"Hehe."

Mu Chen smiled towards her and said seriously: "If we live together, we can at least take care of each other. Moreover, we can save Spiritual Value Points. Since we've just arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, we should be thrifty."

Luo Li batted an eye at him snappily. That excuse was not convincing at all. After all, she possessed approximately 10000 Spiritual Value Points and it was enough for her to stay her for half a year.

"Don't try to push your luck!" Luo Li warned. She pushed open the door and entered. The tiny house had two floors and looked quite tidy. Luo Li glanced around and was quite satisfied with it. Moreover, the two floor design had made her slightly relieved.

"From now on, I'll live upstairs while you've live downstairs." Luo Li replied.

This time, Mu Chen nodded sincerely and did not dare to provoke the girl, who was already embarrassed due to the cohabitation. Although the two of them knew each other's feelings, she, the girl should still maintain a bit of modesty between them.

Luo Li stepped upstairs to inspect her room. While she did so, Mu Chen wandered around and returned to his own room. At that

location, the beds were already prepared. It was evident that the treatment provided for an A-Class room was quite outstanding.

Mu Chen lay down on the soft bed and let out a deep sigh. Various emotions appeared within his heart. From now on, he was considered to be an official student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

He would be spending a few years here for cultivation.

“Dad. I will properly train myself in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The next time I return, I will definitely bring mom back with me!” Mu Chen grasped his hands tightly. After he left the Northern Spiritual Realm, there was nobody beside his dad. Thus, he must be quite lonely.

“Huuu.”

Mu Chen took a deep breath and suppressed the emotions within his heart. Then, he sat down cross-legged as he gripped his hand and a crystal-like Spiritual Value Card immediately appeared within his hand. Previously, Instructor Mu Ling had mentioned that this Spiritual Value Card was able to contact the Spiritual Value Hall. That place was the exchange ground within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. From there, he would be able to earn more information regarding about the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen gripped onto the Spiritual Value Card and emitted out a trace of Spiritual Energy. At this moment, the Spiritual Value Card lit up and a screen of light was formed in front of the card. On the screen of light, various diagrams and data appeared.

“Python’s Fury. A spear created by using the only horn that belongs to a Golden-Horn Spirit Python. Once it was used in battle against humans and Spiritual Energy was emitted out, the spear tip will be like a anger python. It possessed exceptional power and is a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact. Price : 8000 Spiritual Value Points.”

“Nineflare Art. Gong Fa Spiritual Art. Spiritual Tier Middle Rank. Price : 9000 Spiritual Value Points.”

“Phantom Magic Steps. Movement Spiritual Art. Spiritual Tier Middle Rank. Price : 7800 Spiritual Value Points.”

“Meteorfall Spiritual Array. Rank 3 Diagram Array. Forms meteorites with Spiritual Energy whose power is something that even a Heavenly Fusion Stage would not dare to fight head on. Price : 13000 Spiritual Value Points.”

“Divine Lighting Bead. Possesses the aura of divine lightning. It has the ability of strength the Spiritual Aura within one’s body as well as their body. Price : 200 Spiritual Value per bead.”

Various images flashed through Mu Chen’s eyes. As the list progressed, his eyes became more and more surprised. The majority of the items sold in the Spiritual Value Points were quite outstanding. Even High Rank Diagram Arrays could be seen occasionally. However, the price was also quite expensive. With Mu Chen’s wealth, he could not purchase any of them.

After flipping through the images, Mu Chen’s eyes finally turned serious.

“Myriad Lightning Sword. Deity Tier Low Rank. Attack Spiritual Art. Created by a Sovereign powerhouse. Price : 3,000,000 Spiritual Value Points. Only possessed by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

WAH.

Mu Chen immediately inhaled deeply once he saw this. His eye could not help but jump when he noticed it. Deity Tier Spiritual Art? This Spiritual Value Hall actually sells Deity Tier Spiritual Arts?

Mu Chen’s heart pounded rapidly before he gradually recovered from the shock. In the Spiritual Value Hall, there were a few items that were sold by students. But at the same time, there was also

something that was only possessed by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. For example, this Deity Tier Spiritual Art was the property of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and was not a private belonging of the students.

This treasure was something that would make even Mu Chen completely moved. However, the price following it also made his mouth twitch for a moment. With a price of 3,000,000 Spiritual Value Points, just how many people could purchase it within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

Mu Chen shook his head as he smiled bitterly. It was evident that this was something that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had deliberately displayed in order to motivate their students. It was something that one could see, but could not purchase...

At this moment, Mu Chen restrained himself of any thoughts about it and began looking through the images again. As he continued downwards, the amount of outrageous items would increase. However, the price that followed it also made Mu Chen turn completely pale.

“Piercing Nine Dragon Array. Rank 6 Diagram Array. Price : 3,500,000 Spiritual Value Points.”

“Ancient Golden Bird’s Soul Essence. Heaven Rank Middle Class Spiritual Beast. Ranked 34th on the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking. Price : 4,000,000 Spiritual Value Points.”

“Nine Cauldrons Divine Armor. Peerless Spiritual Artifact. Can defend against an all-out attack from a Heavenly Transformation Stage. Price: 3,300,000 Spiritual Value Points.”

These various treasures flashed across Mu Chen’s eyes. Every single one of these items made it difficult for Mu Chen keep his calm. At the same time, the prices also made him jump.

As expected from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Only they would possess such ability and bring out such treasures.

Any one of these items would definitely lead to a chaotic scramble for them within the Northern Heavens Continent. Yet it had became the best method to motivate students to earn Spiritual Value Points.

Mu Chen smiled bitterly before he glanced over again and was about to stop looking to avoid being excessively stimulated by the pictures. However, just when he was about to close the screen of light, his eyes retracted suddenly.

His gaze landed on the top of the light screen. At that location, a short text was written there. Although the text was short, it caused Mu Chen's heartbeat to increase rapidly. He could even feel an impulse coming from within his aura sea as well.

"Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence. An item from the Protector Divine Beast of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Possessed the ability to strengthen the body as well as cleansing the bones. If a human were to absorb it, it would completely change their body. They would possess a powerful body that is comparable to a Spiritual Beast. Price : 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points."

"Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence..."

Mu Chen murmured. Isn't that the item that the Nine Netherbird wanted? As long as he obtained it, the Nine Netherbird would be able to break through its shackles and shed its spiritual form and become a Divine Beast. It would awaken its ancient bloodline and become an super-existence that is in no way inferior to the Northern Sea Dragon...

In Mu Chen's aura sea, a powerful Spiritual Energy stormed out. The Nine Netherbird who was originally laid-back instantly stood up. The flaming black fire within its eyes was completely filled with excitement and delight.

"Mu Chen! Mu Chen! We found it! We must get it! We must get it!"

The Nine Netherbird's thoughts were conveyed over. It was the first time that Mu Chen had seen the Nine Netherbird being this excited and delighted.

Mu Chen smiled helplessly. He would like to help it, but it should at least look at the price of this item.

It was a total of 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points!

Just who, in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, could purchase this item?

Chapter 159 – Storming into the Spirit Ranking

Rampaging Spiritual energy rumbled within Mu Chen's aura sea, as excitement filled the Nine Netherbird's eyes. Even Mu Chen could clearly feel the emotions that it had currently.

"Don't be impatient…"

Mu Chen smiled wryly and said: "Since I've promised that I would help you obtain the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence, I will definitely do it. But let's be realistic as well, okay? After all, you're not going to tell me to go and steal it, right?"

Hearing Mu Chen's voice, the Nine Netherbird's eyes calmed down for a bit. The raging black flames on it body slowly weakened as it flapped its wings and said: "You must help me obtain it. Right now, I only require that to awaken my bloodline, break through the shackles of a Spiritual Beast, and complete my evolution."

Mu Chen nodded his head and smiled: "Relax. Since we've formed a Bloodline Bond, I will definitely help you out to the best of my abilities."

As he spoke, he stared once again at the price of the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence and shook his head as he smiled bitterly. Just how long would it take before he gathers a total of 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points?

But after he thought about it, he understood the reason behind it. After all, just how valuable is the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence? If it could be obtained easily, then it would be too good to be true.

To obtain something like this, they could only take it step by step.

Knock Knock!

At this moment, gentle knocks rang out near the door side. Mu Chen lifted his head and noticed a girl in a black dress leaning gently on the door. The girl's figure was extremely slim and soft, and her waist had curves that would move any man. Her long hair flowed down like a silver river. At the same time, sunlight was shining through the windows and made the girl's exquisite appearance even more beautiful.

Mu Chen stared at the enchanting girl in front of him and was completely loss in his thoughts.

"What are you looking at?" Luo Li walked in front of him and asked with a smile.

"I am quite fortunate that I suddenly became soft-hearted when I first met you in the Spiritual Road." Mu Chen smiled. His black eyes stared at the exquisite face in front of him and said: "Otherwise, just how lonely would I be in the future?"

"From what you've said, it seems that you didn't really want to save me in the beginning?" A hint of smile and gentleness also appeared in Luo Li's eyes.

Mu Chen was completely speechless. After all, it wouldn't have been very beneficial for a person to be soft-hearted within a ruthless place like the Spiritual Road.

"You chased me for more than half a month right after that. You should have calmed down already, right?"

Luo Li smiled faintly. A gentle smile rippled within her calm eyes. Mu Chen was fortunate, but wasn't she also fortunate? Because of his appearance, her gloomy world had seemed to come alive. Even if she had numerous burdens on her shoulders, she still possessed a bit of expectation on meeting him once again.

"Okay. Let's stop with the chitchat and talk about business." Luo Li retracted her smile and looked seriously at Mu Chen. She said: "You are planning to fight against Yang Hong in the freshmen

competition a month later, right?”

“Yes.”

Mu Chen nodded his head. He did not like Yang Hong at all. That guy was an accomplice of Ji Xuan on the Spiritual Road. All the events that were caused by Ji Xuan, this guy had also participated in them. Now that they’ve met in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there was no way that he would let him go so easily.

“It’s not that easy to deal with Yang Hong. Right now, he is also at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. However, he possessed the Earth Level Spiritual Pulse. Once he activates it, there aren’t many individuals that could compete against him at the Heavenly Fusion Stage.” Luo Li responded.

“Moreover, based on what I’ve heard, Yang Hong had once obtained the Soul Essence of the Ancient Tigerdragon. Thus, his combat abilities would have soared even more. If he were to fight with everything he’s got, he would be able to fight against a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase.”

“The Heaven Rank Middle Class Spiritual Beast, Ancient Tigerdragon, that’s ranked 50th on Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking?” Mu Chen was quite surprised, and his expression turned serious. As expected, Yang Hong wasn’t an ordinary individual. With such combat abilities, even Mu Chen felt a bit of pressure.

With Mu Chen’s current strength, he would be able to fight against an Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase opponent if he used the shared power of the Nine Netherbird. However, it would barely be enough against a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase opponent.

If he completely relies on the Nine Netherbird’s power, it would be a simple task for him to defeat a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase opponent. However, that was his last resort. Mu Chen did not want to borrow too much external power. Even if he formed a

Bloodline Bond with the Nine Netherbird, it wasn't beneficial for his cultivation if he borrowed too much external strength.

"Although you have many techniques, your foundation is still weak. After all, you are still only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. The gap between you and Yang Hong is exceptionally great. Therefore, you will have to make a lot of preparations for the battle next month. At the very least, you will have to increase your strength to the Spirit Stage Late Phase within the month," Luo Li said with a solemn expression.

Mu Chen nodded his head. Although his combat abilities were equivalent to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, he was only still at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. This was his major weakness. But at the same time, it wasn't easy for him to advance to the Spirit Stage Late Phase within a month.

"If you want to advance to the Spirit Stage Late Phase in a month, it isn't impossible. You would just have to rely on a bit of help." Luo Li smiled slightly. Then her Spiritual Value Card emerged in her hand. The card then shone with light that displayed an item catalogue. Assorted items reappeared on the screen as Luo Li scrolled down with her slender hand. Finally, she stopped at a certain spot and there were a few characters of light written there.

Mu Chen immediately glanced over towards the text.

Spirit Pill. A Pill that is beneficial to individuals at the Spirit Stage. It can help them advance to the next level. However, the medical energy within the Pill is extremely violent. If it isn't completely ingested, it would harm the Spiritual Energy within one's body. Price : 20,000 Spiritual Value Points.

"If you are able to obtain a Spirit Pill, you should be able to advance to the Spirit Stage Late Phase within a month. As for the violent medical energy, it is simple to deal with it. Instructor Mu Ling had mentioned it earlier, the Lightning Territory has endless amounts of divine lightning. The divine lightning possesses the

effect of strengthening Spiritual Energy. If you were to take the Spirit Pill within that place, you should be able to rely on the power of the divine lightning to completely absorb the energy within the pill." Luo Li smiled. Judging from her detailed explanation, it was evident that she had considered this issue a while ago.

Mu Chen nodded his head. To a person like him who was at the Spirit Stage, the effect of this Spirit Pill was quite decent. It was quite rare to obtain such a precious pill within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

"However, there is only one issue." Luo Li pointed at the end of the light screen and said: "The Spirit Pill costs 20,000 Spiritual Value Points. Right now, I only have 11,000 Spiritual Value Points while you only have roughly 4,000 Spiritual Value Points. Even if we add it up, it wouldn't be enough."

Luo Li frowned. It was evident that she didn't know what to do either. Since they've only just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they naturally did not possess many methods of earning Spiritual Value Points. Therefore, it was indeed an enormous problem to them.

"Spiritual Value Points, huh..."

Mu Chen frowned for a moment before he smiled: "It's not that there isn't a solution to this issue."

"Eh?" Luo Li stared in surprise at Mu Chen. She did not know what methods he could use to solve this issue.

Mu Chen smiled and grabbed onto Luo Li's slender hand: "Follow me."

Seeing that this guy started becoming all touchy again, Luo Li immediately blushed. She struggled gently for a moment before discovering that Mu Chen was holding her hand so tightly that she could only give up on resisting. After all, there was no one else

aside from them here.

Mu Chen pulled Luo Li to the highest part of the house. There, they were able to see the clear blue skies. If they were to look further away, they would be able to see a corner of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

At this moment, Mu Chen stared at the most eye-catching bird-shaped mountain within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Accurately speaking, he was looking at the massive stone tablet that displayed the Spirit Ranking on top of the bird-shaped mountain's left wing.

"Didn't Instructor Mu Ling say it earlier? As long as we are able to enter the top ranks of the Spirit Stage, we would be able to obtain Spiritual Value Points as reward." Mu Chen stared at the stone tablet that was a symbol of glory within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Numerous Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy students would probably always be checking to see if there were any changes on it.

"Are you planning to enter the Spirit Ranking?" Luo Li said in surprise.

Mu Chen nodded slightly.

"This is indeed one method. With your current strength, you should be able to enter the top 10 ranks within the Spirit Ranking. But if you do this, you will offend the senior that had occupied that rank." Luo Li replied. Right now, she had already advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage and had lost the qualifications to enter the Spirit Stage. Moreover, with her current strength, she didn't have the ability to enter the higher ranking, Heavenly Ranking. Thus, she could not benefit from either rankings currently.

"That place was originally a place for new students only. They are already unreasonable by occupying those ranks in the first place. Moreover, it isn't my style to hide."

Mu Chen smiled. The competition within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was quite fierce. It didn't matter whether it was be now or in the future, there would be an endless amount of competitions. If he were to always hide and hold back, just what purpose would it serve?

He did not come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to learn how to hide from troubles.

"You're truly quite a troublemaker. You haven't even entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a day, yet you are planning to do such a thing." Luo Li smiled as she replied helplessly. She could already foresee the commotion that would be caused by this event. This isn't simply an issue about rankings. Instead, it would be a challenge issued to the seniors by the freshmen. This is because during the past few years, there were no freshmen that dared to drag a senior down from the Spirit Ranking when they had just arrived in the academy.

"I was also forced to do this. The two of us would be bankrupt after purchasing the Spirit Pill. Compared to this, who would care about the prestige of a senior?"

Mu Chen smiled and clenched his hand tightly. The Spiritual Value Card emerged in front of him as faint lights emitted.

Mu Chen stared at the Spiritual Value Card and his eyes turned serious. He slowly tightened his hands and a powerful Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. The surrounding air also began to fluctuate.

Within his aura sea, the Spiritual Energy light wheel flashed. The Spirit that was sitting cross-legged on top of the light wheel also emitted dazzling light as it pushed the Spiritual Energy in his body to the limits.

Boom!

Dark-black Spiritual Energy rushed out from Mu Chen's fist and

caused a tremendous pounding sound. It roared as it formed a pillar of light and bombarded the flashing Spiritual Value Card.

Boom!

A deep sound resounded within the freshmen area. A beam of light immediately rushed up into the sky. At this moment, the freshmen within this area all lifted their heads, bewildered as they stared at the beam of light. Then, they discovered that the beam of light rushed through the sky and headed to the giant stone tablet that symbolizes the glory of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Chapter 160 – Rank 3 of the Spirit Ranking

Swish!

Just like a meteorite with a tail of light behind it, the dazzling beam of light flashed across the skies of the enormous Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In the end, it rushed into the stone tablet that had the Spirit Rankings engraved under many people's surprised gazes.

Buzz!

In the instant that the beam of light entered the stone tablet, everybody was able to see a dazzling light emit from the Spirit Ranking. On the ranking, a golden light rose rapidly.

In a few seconds, it rushed into the top ten rankings.

"WAHHH!"

Commotion instantly burst out within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although the Spirit Ranking was the one of the most basic rankings within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it was generally difficult to enter the top ten of the rankings. After all, these people were in the Spirit Ranking, yet they possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage.

"I wonder which person, who is breaking through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, is causing this commotion..."

"Ohoho, those guys are always like that. They really don't give any way to the freshmen."

"Didn't we experience that as well? The freshmen are truly too arrogant. They really needed to learn how to turn it down a notch."

"Pfft, if they truly are capable, then they should enter the Heavenly Ranking. Just what good is it to enter the Spirit Ranking... The top ten people are truly thick-skinned..."

The change in the Spirit Ranking immediately attracted many Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's students' attention. Various voices rang out, however, they did not know which senior it was that was breaking through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

And under numerous gazes, the golden light continued to climb upwards. Rank 9...Rank 7...Rank 5. When the golden light reached Rank 4, people finally began to feel surprised about it. Although the Spirit Ranking was only a basic ranking to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, nobody would believe that the ones that were able to hold that position for a long time would be quite weak.

Especially the ones ranked in the top 3 of the Spirit Ranking. These three individuals were famous even among the Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouses within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. For more than half a year, their rankings within the Spirit Ranking was untouchable.

And now...

Many individuals' gazes concentrated on the golden light. When the golden light finally reached Rank 4, it finally slowed down and hovered for a moment. Then, the golden light jumped up suddenly and occupied the Rank 3 position.

Once that golden light occupied the Rank 3 position, the name that was originally ranked third flashed and slowly faded away. Under normal circumstances, the name wouldn't fade away if they were surpassed in the ranking. It would only drop one rank. However, the person that was originally Rank 3 had already advanced into the Heavenly Fusion Stage. It was considered that he had lost the qualifications to compete again in the Spirit Ranking. Thus, once it was surpassed, it had directly vanished from the rankings...

However, this change would only occur for the Rank 3 position. The other ranks that had been surpassed would still have to drop a

position.

“The one that was removed is Mo Lun, right? Ohoho, that guy is truly unlucky. If he was still on the Spirit Ranking, he would be able to obtain 1000 Spiritual Value Points every day.”

In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, a few people gloated as they laughed at Mo Lun’s unfortunateness. Then, they stared at the golden light that occupied Rank 3. At that location, the lights began to dissipate a little before finally becoming a name formed by golden lights.

Spirit Ranking Rank 3, Mu Chen. Cultivated at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a day.

“Eh…”

The atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy instantly turned silent. Numerous people were startled as they stared at the Spirit Ranking. Cultivated at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a day? Doesn’t that mean it’s a freshman that had just arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy today?

A freshman was actually able to kick out a senior that had occupied the Spirit Ranking?

The silence within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy only lasted for a split second before a bustling commotion rang out. How many years had it been since such a thing had happened?

“Just who is this Mu Chen? It seems that the freshmen this year are quite capable?”

“Could it be that he just so happened to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage today? And so he also used that loophole?”

“Ohoho, this is quite interesting. Mo Lun isn’t a weakling. Since this freshman called Mu Chen dared to kick him out of the Spirit Ranking, with his personality, he wouldn’t just let it go.”

“Yes. Moreover, the people who had been pushed down a rank by him wouldn’t feel great either…”

“This Mu Chen sure is courageous.”

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, countless individuals continued to talk with each other as they stared at the Spirit Ranking. However, it was clear that they felt a bit of sympathy towards Mu Chen’s action.

It was evident that the commotion caused by the Spirit Ranking also attracted the attention of many freshmen within the freshmen areas. They stared in a daze at the dazzling name on the ranking. Although other individuals may be unfamiliar with this name, all of them knew who that name represented.

They never imagined that this person was that powerful. He had only just arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, yet he caused such a commotion already.

In the Freshmen area’s North District, Yang Hong, who was sitting cross-legged within a house, suddenly opened his eyes. He stared at the Spirit Ranking that was emitting a bright light in the distant and looked coldly at the name that made him feel uncomfortable. A hint of coldness flashed through his eyes.

As expected, that bastard truly had the combat ability equivalent to a Heavenly Fusion Stage. No wonder he was able to become one of the most outstanding freshmen within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Although you’re quite capable, shouldn’t you know how to endure and hold back a little? Do you really believe that the seniors, who are ranked in the top 10, are truly weaklings?” Yang Hong sneered. The seniors within the top 10 of the Spirit Ranking all possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. From his view, Mu Chen’s actions were basically searching for trouble.

“I’ll let you be proud of yourself for a while. A month later, in the

freshmen competition, I'll let you understand the enormous distance between you and me." Yang Hong slowly tightened his hands as his eyes turned ruthless.

"Since I, Yang Hong, am in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen, you shouldn't even think of being able to succeed here!"

At this moment, in the other two directions of the freshmen area, Bing Qing and Mu Kui were also aware of the changes within the Spirit Ranking. They stared at the familiar name as their eyes twinkled.

It seemed that there were quite a few powerful individuals within this year's freshmen. The freshmen competition a month later would definitely be lively. However, just who would obtain the title of the strongest freshmen?

"Rank 3..."

Mu Chen smiled faintly as he stared at the Spirit Ranking. This rank was beyond his expectation. He had originally thought that he would only be able to enter the top 5.

"This time, the amount of Spiritual Energy that I activated was within the limits of my control. If I were to use all my hidden measures unreservedly, it's possible for me to become Rank 1."

Mu Chen smiled. However, he did not immediately do this. Becoming Rank 3 had already reached his purpose. If he were to immediately soar to Rank 1, it would be too eye-catching.

"How many Spiritual Value Points do you have now?" Luo Li asked.

Mu Chen opened his hand and the crystal-like Spiritual Value card landed back in his hand. Within the crystal clear Spiritual Value Card, lights converged and finally formed into numbers.

24,100 Spiritual Value Points.

Mu Chen stared at the amount within his Spiritual Value Card and let out a sigh of relief. By becoming Rank 3 on the Spirit Ranking, he had obtained 20,000 Spiritual Value Points as a reward. This was enough for him to purchase a Spirit Pill.

“Tomorrow, I’ll head to the Spiritual Value Hall to purchase the Spirit Pill. Then, I’ll enter the Lightning Territory for a bit. With the remaining time I have left, I will breakthrough to the Spirit Stage Late Phase.” Mu Chen smiled as he looked at Luo Li.

Luo Li nodded gently.

Immediately afterwards, Mu Chen lifted his head once again and stared at the Spirit Ranking. He truly needed to increase his current strength quickly. There were too many powerful individuals within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Since he had caused such a commotion today, it would definitely be troublesome if he did not increase his strength.

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they also follow the rule of respecting the strong. Without sufficient strength, it would only be a disgrace to occupy such a high position...

...

This place is a mist-shrouded area. Within the mist, there were numerous stone platforms suspended in mid-air. Although they weren’t quite big, it was enough for a person’s range of motion.

At this moment, there were many figures sitting with their eyes closed on the floating stone platforms. Spiritual Energy gushed out near their bodies and the faint Spiritual Aura nearby fluctuated before entering their bodies.

This mist was actually formed by an extremely rich Spiritual Aura!

The Spiritual Aura within this place had actually reached such a degree of density.

At this moment, a person who was sitting cross-legged on a stone platform, suddenly opened his eyes. This person was wearing loose clothes with loose long hair. His aura was extremely cold, and powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations rippled near his body.

He opened his eyes and gripped his hand tightly. A crystal-like Spiritual Value Card emerged and lights flashed. Then, his expression suddenly became grim.

“Mu Chen? A freshmen that just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy actually dared to eliminate me from the Spirit Ranking!” The youth’s eyes were quite cold as his face was filled with fury. He did not care about the daily reward of 1,000 Spiritual Value Points from the Spirit Ranking anymore. If it was a senior, he would accept the situation. However, he was kicked out by a freshman who had just arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and was not used to the academy. To him, this was a big disgrace.

He did not know how many individuals would mock him because of this.

This was a challenge to his strength!

“Damn it!”

The youth gritted his teeth. It seemed that he must stop his cultivation for a while. After all, he could not lose his pride. Although he would not be able to return to the Spirit Ranking after finding the freshman, it would at least allow him to regain a bit of pride.

“I’d like to see just how capable a freshman like you is! You actually dare to be this arrogant upon entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!”

The youth grunted and muttered to himself: “Since others won’t teach you, I, Mo Lun, will teach you what we call respecting your seniors!”

As his voice faded away, the youth closed his eyes once again. In his heart, he had already made up his mind. He would temporarily stop his training tomorrow and teach that arrogant freshman a lesson!

Chapter 161 – Spirit Pill

The following day.

Mu Chen and Luo Li both left the freshman area and headed straight towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The students of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy possessed great freedom. There were no constraints in terms of lessons and most instructors would rarely restrict the actions of students. This is because there were many students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that were even more powerful than the instructors. Hence, the instructors would only take a guiding role most of the time and would not always teach them like what Teacher Mo did during the Northern Spiritual Academy.

Of course, it wasn't that there aren't well-known instructors within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The instructors that stood at the pinnacle in strength were first-class powerhouses even within the Northern Heavens Continent. If the students wanted their guidance, they would have to pay a high fee for them to come.

And for the freshmen, it was currently impossible for them to pay such an enormous amount of Spiritual Value Points.

Since the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was quite vast, Mu Chen and Luo Li flew through the sky for nearly half an hour before finally reaching the location of the Spiritual Values Hall.

The Spiritual Values Hall was so majestic that it was simply impossible to describe. This hall seemed to be situated at the top of a mountain within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Moreover, fog would circulate near its surroundings as if it was a fairyland.

Just by standing next to the Spiritual Values Hall, they would seem like tiny ants. If they looked up, they would be able to see massive words formed with light sparkling in midair.

The Spiritual Values Hall was considered a popular location within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Thus, Mu Chen and Luo Li were able to sense how popular this location was when they've arrived outside of the hall.

In the skies nearby, countless figures would rush over and head straight into the giant hall. The flow of people that entered was endless.

Mu Chen and Luo Li stood outside the Spiritual Values Hall and stared at the liveliness of this location. They could not help but exclaim aloud. It seemed that they had only seen a speck of what the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was.

"Let's enter as well."

Mu Chen smiled at Luo Li before the two of them also headed inside the mountain-like Spiritual Values Hall. As they entered, they could feel Spiritual Energy fluctuations that caused them to tremble slightly.

In front of Mu Chen and Luo Li, there was a vast and abnormal hall. The ceiling of this hall seemed to be covered with stars and was extremely mysterious. Moreover, the hall was quite noisy as many individuals would gather here.

At this moment, the two of them stared above and noticed many circular crystals floating in midair. From within the crystals, they could see various scrolls, Spiritual Artifacts and worldly treasures, etc.

Mu Chen glanced at the starry ceiling and frowned. He could sense a mysterious fluctuation within the hall that caused him to tremble. It was a fluctuation that was unique to a Spiritual Array.

It was evident that there was a terrifying Spiritual Array arranged secretly within the Spiritual Values Hall as a precaution to theft.

While Mu Chen and Luo Li glanced around the Spiritual Values

Hall, they suddenly detected numerous gazes being cast over. Accurately speaking, the gazes landed on Luo Li, who was beside Mu Chen.

At this moment, the girl's tall and slim figure coupled with her soft, silver, long hair caught the attention of many individuals. Her glass-like eyes made others feel the calmness within her heart. Furthermore, her exquisite expression was exceptionally attractive.

Since a girl with such temperament and appearance had appeared here, it was impossible for her not to draw attention.

"Huh, when did such a beautiful girl appear within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? This temperament and appearance are absolutely at the highest level!"

"She's quite unfamiliar. I've never heard of her before."

"Ohoho, you could strike up a conversation with her for a bit. Since the boy beside her is only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase, he is weaker than her. They probably aren't a couple..."

When Mu Chen noticed the various gazes coming from his surroundings, his expression immediately darkened. But before he managed to say anything, the girl beside him suddenly stretched out her slender hand and pulled him into the depths of the Spiritual Values Hall.

In the instant that she grabbed Mu Chen's hand, Mu Chen felt the whispers suddenly fading away from their surroundings. Surprise filled many people's faces and each of them felt a sense of pain. Why would such an outstanding girl choose such a weak boy? Is it because he was quite handsome?

Mu Chen noticed the regretful and envious gazes emerge and grinned in response. He felt quite happy deep down inside. This is my woman, you're not qualified to touch her.

Just when he felt a bit proud, Mu Chen also gripped Luo Li's

slender hand tightly. In response, the girl immediately glared at him. The elegance displayed by Luo Li made Mu Chen's heart jump. Unknowingly, the girl had already begun displaying her charm which would cause a disaster.

After Luo Li pulled Mu Chen into the depths of the Spiritual Values Hall, she released her hand and calmly glance around the surroundings.

"Eh."

Mu Chen gripped his hand and reminisce the sense of softness that remained within his hand. However, he immediately sighed: "It seemed that I must quickly increase my strength. Someone's charm is too powerful. If I do not become stronger, I don't know how many times others would bat an eye at me. Those guys are all staring as if I'm only an attractive and pretty man."

When Luo Li heard this, she smiled and tilted her head. Her glass-like eyes stared at Mu Chen as she nodded: "You're quite like that."

Mu Chen was somewhat shaken and depressed.

"It's fine. Not to mention that you aren't one, even if you are, I am still willing to be with you." Luo Li's red lips twitched and her pretty eyes were like curved moons. At this moment, she wasn't like her usual calm self. Instead, she seemed more like a sly fox.

"Alluring woman. Just wait till I surpass you. Just see if I would smack you on your butt." Mu Chen pouted as he stared at the blushing and delicate face of Luo Li. Then, he clapped his hands and moved his attention upwards. He lifted his head up and stared into the air where, there was a gigantic crystal ball. Within the crystal ball, there was a golden liquid that was the size of a human's head. The golden liquid seemed to be alive and would slowly crawl around. A strange feeling was being emitted from it.

"That's..."

Mu Chen's eyes turned serious as he stared at the text of light outside the crystal ball. Then, his eyes narrowed as he muttered: "So this is the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence..."

Violent Spiritual Energy appeared once again within his aura sea. Mu Chen did not have to look to know that it was the Nine Netherbird becoming excited again.

"Calm down. Nobody would dare steal any of the items here. Even if it's you, you probably wouldn't be able steal items from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy when you're in your prime condition." Mu Chen said helplessly within his heart.

When the Nine Netherbird heard his voice, the rampaging Spiritual Energy slowly subsided. It also knew what its circumstances were right now. Since the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy dared to display the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence, they probably weren't afraid of it being stolen.

"Let's go. Let's first buy the Spirit Pill."

Seeing the Nine Netherbird calm down, Mu Chen was quite relieved. He immediately spoke to Luo Li as he headed straight towards a crystal counter nearby where an old man was currently taking a nap.

"Old man. I want to buy a Spirit Pill." Mu Chen knocked on the crystal counter and asked politely.

The old man that was awakened lifted his head up impatiently. He stared at Mu Chen for a moment before flicking his fingers. At this moment, a beam of light headed straight towards Mu Chen, who grabbed onto it. When the lights faded away, a box appeared. Inside the box, there was a round pill, which is the size of a dragon's eye, that exuded a mellow fragrance. It was the Spirit Pill.

After the old man had tossed the box as if it was trash, he waved his hand. The Spiritual Value Card within Mu Chen's hand lit up and numerous lights flew into his hand. Mu Chen immediately

glanced at his Spiritual Value Card and noticed that it had already 20,000 Spiritual Value Points deducted.

Once this was done, the old man closed his eyes again. However, he suddenly opened them and stared at Luo Li, who was beside Mu Chen. A hint of surprise flashed through his eyes.

“Little girl…” The old man stared at Luo Li. His gaze was fixated on her silver hair.

Luo Li also stared at the old man in confusion. Beside her, Mu Chen was slightly surprised as well.

The old man looked for a moment before slowly asking: “Are you a person from the Luo God Clan? Just who is Luo Tianshen to you?”

Luo Li’s eyes immediately narrowed as she stared at the old man. However, she shook her head slightly and replied: “I’m sorry. I can’t tell you that.”

After saying this, she pulled Mu Chen towards the exterior of the Spiritual Values Hall. Seeing this, the old man did not stop her and only frowned. He muttered: “That girl probably trained in the Luoshen Art. That’s why her hair became like that. However, only a person that possesses the bloodline of the royal family could train in that…But why would someone who is in the royal family of the Luo God Clan come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy…”

He pondered for a moment before letting out a sigh. Then, he slowly closed his eyes again.

Luo Li dragged Mu Chen out of the Spiritual Values Hall as the latter stared at her. He had also heard the old man’s words. Luo God Clan. Could it be Luo Li’s clan? But why hadn’t he heard of it before…

When Luo Li exited the Spiritual Values Hall, she released Mu Chen’s hand. At this moment, her glass-like eyes were slightly in a trance and she was absent-minded.

“What is it?” Mu Chen whispered.

“It’s nothing.” Luo Li shook her head gently. Then, she smiled faintly at Mu Chen: “We’ve obtained the Spirit Pill. You should hurry and train within the Lightning Territory. I’ll cultivate within a Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array as I wait for you to come out.”

Mu Chen could tell that she had something hidden within her heart. However, she did not want to tell him about it yet. Since it was like that, he would not ask her and instead wait for her to tell him. Then, under many gazes, he suddenly took a step forward and pulled the girl into his arms. He whispered next to her ear: “Right now, I might not have the strength to share your burden, but believe me, I will definitely become strong. Since you’ve said in the Spiritual Road that you’ll protect me from any sneak attacks from the back, then I should be the one that’s standing in front of you.”

Luo Li bit her lips. Her glass-like eyes were filled with softness as she replied with a gentle “yes”.

“Then, I’ll head to the Lightning Territory. Wait for me to come back out.”

Mu Chen smiled as he released her. He waved his hand and immediately turned into a beam of light as he headed far away. Luo Li stared at his figure as a gentle smile surfaced. As this smile emerged, many people nearby were completely mesmerized. Only after a moment, she turned around and headed in the opposite direction.

Just when Mu Chen separated with Luo Li, a beam of light rushed into the freshman area which they belong to. Then, a boy with long hair emerged in midair. He had a cold aura emitting from his body as he stared down at the freshmen below. A cold shout instantly rang out within the freshmen’s ears.

“Who is Mu Chen? Hurry and get the f*ck out here!”

Chapter 162 – Mo Lun

"Who is Mu Chen? Hurry and get the f*ck out here!"

A cold shout laced with rumbling Spiritual Energy exploded like thunder in the freshmen area. At this instant, countless freshmen lifted their heads in shock at the figure that appeared in midair.

In this vast and desolate freshman area, there were many freshmen beginning to gather. Ye Qingling, Mo Ling and the others were all at this location. When they heard the shout, all of them immediately frowned.

The figure in the sky stood proudly as he gazed coldly at the many freshmen below. He shouted: "Did none of you hear my words? Where is the freshman called Mu Chen?! He actually dares to eliminate me from the Spirit Ranking, yet he doesn't have the guts to reveal himself?"

After he had finished his sentence, the freshmen below finally understood why this figure had appeared. So he had come to cause trouble because Mu Chen had recently seized the third position in the Spirit Rankings...

They exchanged gazes with each other. However, it seemed that Mu Chen wasn't here.

"Senior. Brother Mu left this place earlier. If you want to find him, please come again tomorrow." Mo Ling hesitated for a moment before shouting out loud. The figure in front of him had spoken in a tone where he had looked down upon Mu Chen, which made Mo Ling somewhat unhappy. However, he did not dare express his unhappiness in front of this senior.

In the sky, the figure moved and presented himself directly above the students situated in this empty area. He sneered: "He left? What a gutless person. He probably hid himself deliberately, right? I originally thought that this year's freshmen were quite capable. I

never imagined that you were all so timid and useless."

Hearing this person's remarks, many freshmens' expressions turned grim. In this area, there were a few top-notch freshmen from their respective Northern Heavens World such as Zhou Ling. Their expressions became somewhat dark. However, they still endured as they were fearful of this person's strength.

"What a group of useless trash."

Seeing that many of the freshmen were holding back back their emotions, the figure laughed coldly.

"I won't permit you to badmouth Brother Mu Chen!"

But just when he said such words, a young tender voice rang out with rage. Many people immediately turned their gaze over and noticed Sun'Er, who was beside Ye Qingling, was staring furiously at the figure in the sky. Behind her, a massive light array was being formed quickly.

"A Spiritual Array?"

When the figure noticed the light array behind Sun'Er, he was somewhat shocked. It was evident that he had never expected that this cute-looking girl would possess such extreme firepower.

"Swish!"

The light array condensed and Spiritual Energy gushed out. It formed into a violent wind python as it charged towards the long-haired youth in the sky.

"Hmph."

Seeing this, the long-haired youth's eyes turned cold. He stomped down, and a powerful Spiritual Energy burst out from his body. He smacked down with his palm and directly crushed the wind python into numerous lights.

But after the long-haired youth shattered the wind python in one attack, his eyes turned even colder. He flexed his fingers and a

beam of violent Spiritual Energy rushed out from his fingertips and charged straight towards Sun'Er.

"You!"

Seeing the long-haired youth attack Sun'Er, Ye Qingling's pretty eyes were instantly filled with anger. In a flash, she appeared in front of Sun'Er as her dense Spiritual Energy formed into a Spiritual Energy light shield.

Bang!

When the light beam bombarded against the light shield, it instantly destroyed the shield. Ye Qingling grunted and was knocked back a few steps. Her expression paled slightly.

"You're going overboard!" Seeing this, Mo Ling and the others were enraged. They did not care about the fear they had against this long-haired youth and shouted furiously at him.

"How noisy! This year's freshmen really need a lesson. No wonder Mu Chen dared to do such a thing. Today, I'll make all of you understand that, in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, respecting your seniors is a must!" The long-haired youth frowned and let out a cold laugh. He waved his sleeves and rumbling Spiritual Energy formed into a gigantic Spiritual Energy palm. Then, it bombarded towards the many freshman in the empty area.

Seeing this long-haired youth act this domineering, the freshmen present at the scene were completely grim. Since they were able to become a student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they were all prideful individuals. And now, they were being repeatedly abused by this person. It was impossible for them not to be furious.

"Hmph!"

Zhou Ling and the burly person called Yan Xiao also shouted out angrily. Their bodies rushed out as dense Spiritual Energy surged

out from their bodies. The two of them unleashed a Spiritual Energy attack together and fought against the gigantic Spiritual Energy palm.

Boom!

Violent Spiritual Energy emitted out from the collision and both Zhou Ling and Yan Xiao were knocked backwards. Their expressions also paled. Although the two of them were half a step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage, the difference between them and the senior was too great.

“You’re slightly capable. However, you dare fight against me, Mo Lun, with such strength? You’re too confident of yourself!” The youth known as Mo Lun glanced at Zhou Ling and Yan Xiao as he sneered.

“If you’re really capable, then go and challenge the people on the Heavenly Ranking. You think that you’re capable just because you can come and bully the freshmen? Hmph, if it wasn’t because Mu Chen and Luo Li had left earlier, you wouldn’t even be able to show-off your strength!” Zhou Ling gritted his teeth as he replied.

“The boy, Mu Chen, probably knew that I would came seeking him for trouble. That’s why he hid early on.” Mo Lun sneered: “However, I really dislike all of you freshmen. It seems that I must teach you a lesson as well.”

“You really believe that we’re afraid of you?!”

Mo Lun’s aggressive attitude finally angered the thousands of freshmen present at the scene. All of them shouted together and the imposing manner formed by them were extraordinary.

“Hmph. Although we are freshmen, it only means that we’ve been cultivating for less time compared to you. Just why are you proud of this? If you really want a fight, then all of us will fight against you!” Another three figures rushed over from nearby and landed in front of Zhou Ling and Ye Qingling. The three of them

were quite familiar. They were all top students in the Northern Heavens World and have been assessed as King-Class in the Spiritual Road.

In normal circumstances, these top students had their own pride and would not communicate with each other a lot. They could only be regarded as acquaintances. However, Mo Lun's aggressive attitude made them all group together against a common enemy.

Seeing this scene, Mo Lun frowned for a moment before his eyes turned slightly dark. These five individuals were all half-a-step away from reaching Heavenly Fusion Stage. Coupled with the thousands of freshmen, he wouldn't be able to fight against them if they were to all join forces.

"The freshmen these days are truly getting arrogant!"

Mo Lun's eyes were completely cold as he said: "Joining forces, is it? Fine. I'll let you off the hook today. However, I'll come again tomorrow. When the time comes, I'll let all of you have a bit of fun. All of you freshmen truly need to learn to not be this arrogant. As for that Mu Chen, if he wants to hide, then he better hide well."

Once he said these words, Mo Lun sneered and turned into a figure of light. He flew off in the direction of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and quickly vanished from their sight.

As they watched Mo Lun's fading figure, Zhou Ling and the others all had grim expressions.

"Brother Yan Ling. Thanks." Zhou Ling said gratefully towards the three individuals that came to assist them.

"It's fine. After all, we are all new students. Since a few seniors are looking down on us, we shouldn't let them underestimate us." Yan Ling shook his head and immediately replied: "Judging from his demeanor, it seems that he won't let us off this easily. During this period of time, we should join forces. If we do this, he won't dare to do anything."

“Mu Chen seems to have entered the Lightning Territory to cultivate. Luo Li also followed him over there...” Ye Qingling laughed wryly. They had had a bit of contact with Mu Chen, so they knew his whereabouts.

“It might be good for him to stay low.” Zhou Ling sighed. Compared to An Ran, Mo Lun’s strength was even greater. Even if Mu Chen was here, he probably wouldn’t be able to do anything and would have ended up being humiliated.

It was evident that he also believed that Mu Chen had suddenly headed to the Lightning Territory in order to avoid Mo Lun.

“Brother Mu Chen isn’t afraid of him.” Sun’Er muttered.

Zhou Ling and the others smiled bitterly and immediately shook their heads: “In the coming days, if any of you can head out to cultivate, then please do that. That bastard will probably torment us for a few days, but once he discovers that it is to no avail, he will lose interest and leave.”

Many of the freshmen laughed bitterly. In their hearts, they felt a bit uncomfortable. The seniors really are bullying them...

As for what happened in the freshman area, Mu Chen had no knowledge of what was going on. At this moment, he had just reached the entrance of the Lightning Territory. This place was a super-sized stone platform that was suspended in mid-air. On the stone platform, there were numerous figures rushing in from all directions.

A dark sky covered the platform. The space there was showing signs of distortions as if it was the entrance to a World of Lightning. Lightning occasionally flashed by and deep rumbling sounds would resound from that distorted space.

“So this is the Lightning Territory?”

Mu Chen stared at the distorted space and felt a terrifying fluctuation emanating from within. He secretly smacked his lips.

To be able to open up a unique space, it wasn't something that an ordinary person could imagine.

Mu Chen shook his head while he was surprised. He immediately moved and flew directly into the distorted space. Outside of the distorted space, there seemed to be a faint Spiritual Energy light barrier. When Mu Chen's body was about to enter, he felt a little bit of resistance. However, he quickly overcame it.

This light barrier only prevented students that were beneath the Spirit Stage from entering. It was apparent that Mu Chen wasn't among that group.

After entering the light barrier, the distorted space became clearer. The creeping movements of the space seemed like a heavy-class monster that was entrenched in the void and caused terror within one's heart.

And right now, there were many figures that were rushing to enter the distorted the space.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen smiled. He immediately circulated Spiritual Energy to protect his body as he charged headfirst into the distorted space where the rumbles of thunder resounded.

When Mu Chen made contact with the distorted space, the Spiritual Value Card within his hand lit up faintly. A few hundred Spiritual Value points were instantly deducted from it. In the instant that the Spiritual Value was deducted, Mu Chen's figure also vanished within the Lightning Space.

Chapter 163 – Breakthrough in the Lightning Territory

Boom!

The instant that Mu Chen passed through the distorted space, he could clearly feel the world darken in front of him. Rumbling thunder clapped through the skies.

Surprise emerged in his eyes as he looked in front. A vast expanse of space had appeared in front of him. Within this space, numerous clouds gathered and lightning converged within these clouds. The lightning would descend from the sky continuously like fierce silver pythons.

An extremely violent Spiritual Aura filled the entire space. In this place, the originally gentle Spiritual Aura was influenced by the lightning and had turned violent.

Within this lightning space, there were numerous stone platforms suspended in midair. The stone platforms revealed a dark-golden sheen, and each of these platforms had a figure sitting cross-legged on it. From time to time, lightning would soar through the skies and descend onto a figure that was sitting on a stone platform.

Whenever the lightning descended, the dark golden stone platform would cause the lightning to disperse, causing the stone platform to emit an exceptionally beautiful silvery glow.

From within the distorted space behind Mu Chen, a steady stream of people would rush out. Among them, there would be a few individuals that would search for empty stone platforms to begin their cultivation. As for the rest, they would head further into the depths of this lightning space.

Every single one of the individuals that would head further in were exceptionally powerful.

"The Lightning Territory is divided into ten levels. Right now, this is only the first level. It seems that the divine lightning will become more powerful as one progresses further into the depths." Mu Chen pondered for a moment. From the moment he had arrived in the Lightning Territory, he was provided all the information related to the Lightning Territory. Normally speaking, the first level was for Spirit Stage Initial Phase students to cultivate. As one progressed further, the strength required would increase significantly. It was said that even a Heavenly Transformation Stage powerhouse wouldn't be able to easily enter the tenth floor.

"I should attempt to progress further into the depths as well."

Mu Chen pondered for a moment before rushing into the depths of the lightning space. With his current strength, it was evident that he was not interested in the first level. Divine lightning of that level was practically useless for his cultivation.

Mu Chen's speed was extremely fast, and in a few minutes he had already reached the depths of the first level. Here, another distortion had appeared and people would occasionally fly into the distortion.

Mu Chen did not hesitate and charged directly into the distortion. Once he arrived, he discovered that the scenery of the second level was essentially the same as the first level. However, the clouds that converged here were clearly a lot denser, which caused the divine lightning to become even more violent.

Mu Chen glanced across the second level and continued to move forward. It was apparent that the second level did not satisfy him at all.

In just ten minutes, Mu Chen had reached the third level. In order to enter this level, it required the strength of a Spirit Stage Late Phase. However, this wasn't an obstacle to Mu Chen. Although he was only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase, his true

strength had already reached the same level as a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase.

Within the third level, flashing lightning and rumbling thunder could be seen and heard. Numerous lightnings would soar through the sky before brutally descending. It was evident that this entire space was quite bright.

Mu Chen sensed the degree of power of the divine lightning within the third level before nodding his head slightly. He immediately moved and entered the depths to search for an unoccupied dark golden platform.

When Mu Chen sat cross-legged on the dark gold platform, his palm touched the platform. A cold feeling entered his hand. “So this isn’t made of stone, but rather some sort of metal. Judging from its appearance, this metal powerfully attracts lightning.”

When he sat down, his consciousness focused and started infusing Spiritual Energy into the dark gold platform. All of a sudden, a faint golden light emerged from the platform. This platform which was able to attract divine lightning had been completely activated.

In the instant that the platform was activated, clouds began to converge above Mu Chen. The sound of rolling thunder, like the roar of an ancient beast, rang out and displayed its full might to the world.

"Boom!"

The thundercloud rumbled and a tiny silver divine lightning bolt soared through the clouds and descended at an alarming speed towards Mu Chen, who was sitting on the platform cross-legged.

Seeing the descending lightning, Mu Chen hurriedly used his Spiritual Energy to protect his body.

Boom!

The silver lightning landed overwhelming Mu Chen's body.

Instantly, his body twitched and he could feel stinging pain could from his body. The dazzling lightning covered his body and jumped around before entering his body.

At the same time, Mu Chen also began to circulate the Great Pagoda Art. As dark-black Spiritual Energy surged through his meridians, a part of the lightning followed. It was then absorbed into his Spiritual Energy.

Chi Chi.

As the lightning was absorbed into his Spiritual Energy, his dark black Spiritual Energy began to fluctuate and a subtle crackling sound could be heard. After a while, the lightning began to fade away. However, Mu Chen could feel that a portion of his Spiritual Energy had become slightly more condensed.

"The divine lightning here truly has the ability to strengthen Spiritual Energy." Mu Chen was overjoyed. The Lightning Territory truly deserved its reputation.

After testing the divine lightning for a while, Mu Chen was finally relieved. He clenched his palm and the Spirit Pill appeared. Then, he placed it within his mouth.

Once the Spirit Pill entered his mouth, it quickly melted. Billowing heat began to flow down his throat at an alarming speed.

Boom Boom.

Dense, violent Spiritual Energy surged through his meridians like a flood. However, the Spiritual Energy was considerably violent. It was just like a wild horse, it would not allow itself to be controlled.

Hu.

Mu Chen could feel the rampaging force of the Spirit Pill's medical power. He let out a soft sigh before activating the lightning platform. Dark golden light was emitted and the thunderclouds in the skies immediately began to rumble. Dozens of divine lightning bolts descended towards his body like angry

serpents.

All of the lightning exploded on the surface of Mu Chen's body. The lightning surged endlessly into his body. By manipulating the divine lightning, he quickly forced it to fuse with the violent medical power of the Spirit Pill. This way, he could deal with the rampaging Spiritual Energy from the Spirit Pill swiftly.

Mu Chen concentrated on the changes within his body and quickly discovered that the violent Spiritual Energy from the Spirit Pill had calmed down a little after the power of the divine lightning had entered his body.

"The power of this divine lightning isn't enough yet!"

After Mu Chen felt the changes within his body, he was completely at ease. He concentrated and pushed the lightning platform's ability to attract lightning to its limits. At this moment, a golden light surged out and the thunderclouds rumbled crazily above him. Streaks of lightning began to descend successively.

Mu Chen sat calmly and allowed the dazzling lightning to freely wrap around his body. Although there was a stinging pain whenever he was struck by the lightning, it was evident that the pain was within his ability to endure.

Endless amounts of divine lightning entered Mu Chen's body and cleansed the the Spirit Pill’s rampaging medical power. At the same time, he also quickly refined the calmed Spiritual Energy and allowed it to enter his aura sea.

Rumble!

In this area, endless silver streaks of lightning descended. This crazy act immediately captured the attention of the other students nearby that were cultivating. The stone platform was able to control the frequency of the lightning and these students would have never pushed the frequency of the lightning to the limits. After all, the divine lightning was also quite violent, and if they

weren't strong enough, they could be smitten to the point where they were gravely injured.

Therefore, it was rare to see someone like Mu Chen activate the platform to its limit.

However, Mu Chen did not care about the surprised gazes that gathered on him. His consciousness was completely focused on the changes within his body. By cooperating with the divine lightning, he was able to refine the violent Spiritual Energy within the Spirit Pill.

Moreover, it was done with high efficiency.

In less than an hour, Mu Chen could feel that the violent Spiritual Energy within the Spirit Pill had been completely dealt with by the power of the divine lightning.

"Next up, I just have to refine all of this Spiritual Energy and prepare to breakthrough to the Spirit Stage Late Phase!"

Mu Chen concentrated and began to circulate the Great Pagoda Art at full strength. The enormous amount of Spiritual Energy was being refined endlessly as it was infused into the Spiritual Energy light wheel within his aura sea.

With the steady stream of Spiritual Energy entering the Spiritual Energy light wheel, the light wheel turned increasingly bright. Even the tiny Spirit that was sitting cross-legged on the light wheel had become a lot clearer.

Everything was progressing properly for his breakthrough. Right now, he only had to wait for the opportunity to breakthrough!

As he was waiting for the opportunity, three days had passed.

Within these three days, Mu Chen did not know how many times he had been struck by lightning. The power of the divine lightning would enter his body endlessly and strengthen his Spiritual Energy.

As he was being struck by lightning, he did not dare to move at all.

Suddenly, his hand trembled for a moment. Powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted from the surface of his body. It was evident that the Spiritual Energy had reached the point where it could not be suppressed.

"It's finally time for me to make a breakthrough!"

Mu Chen's black eyes opened up and reflected the endless amount of descending lightning before he closed them once again.

Within his aura sea, the Spiritual Energy light wheel was dazzling to the point that it was like a star. Waves of Spiritual Energy pulsed vividly, and rippling sounds could be heard.

At the same time, the tiny Spirit on the Spiritual Energy light wheel was clear to the point where it could be seen from a distance. It was basically a smaller version of Mu Chen. Moreover, the Spiritual Energy emitting from it was many times more powerful than before.

The Spirit that was sitting cross-legged on the Spiritual Energy light wheel took a deep breath as it fiercely formed hand seals. In a couple of seconds, rumbling sounds resounded.

Boom!

Rampaging light suddenly erupted from the Spiritual Energy light wheel and pure Spiritual Energy rushed towards the tiny Spirit.

As it was being infused with pure Spiritual Energy, the Spirit was like a bottomless hole. It would absorb the endless Spiritual Energy. At the same time, the Spirit's body also expanded by size. The surface of its body shimmered and it was apparent that it had become slightly more real compared to the illusory form it had before.

The influx of Spiritual Energy lasted for approximately 30

minutes before it gradually came to a halt. The dazzling light from the Spiritual Energy light wheel also faded away slowly, and all of the lights within his aura sea also began to dissipate.

As for the glass-like Spirit, it continued to sit calmly on the Spiritual Energy light wheel. After a while, it finally opened its eyes. Those eyes were like a mysterious galaxy.

Boom!

In the instant the Spirit opened its eyes, a powerful fluctuation was emitted. In the end, it spread throughout Mu Chen's body, causing his body to tremble violently.

Hu.

On the stone platform, Mu Chen also let out a breath of white air, which had faint traces of lightning contained in it. He could sense that the dense Spiritual Energy within his body had become even more powerful when compared to a few days ago.

From the dense Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen was able to tell that he had already officially advanced into the Spirit Stage Late Phase!

A smile spread out on Mu Chen's mouth. He finally let out a sigh of relief and prepared to end his cultivation. However, he suddenly felt that a mysterious fluctuation being emitted due to the Great Pagoda Art.

This feeling was extremely mysterious. It even caused Mu Chen's blood circulation to accelerate. At this moment, he was in a daze. Then, a hint of shock emerged in his eyes.

Could it be that he was about to make a breakthrough on the Great Pagoda Art as well?

Chapter 164 – I will Control the Heaven and Earth

A mysterious feeling rippled through Mu Chen's heart. Surprise instantly emerged on his face.

He had once felt this feeling when his Great Pagoda Art broke through to the Shape-Condensation level. Originally, Mu Chen had thought that the next time this feeling appeared would only be after he had at least reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage. He never imagined that it would actually come so early.

"Is it because of the power of the divine lightning?"

Mu Chen pondered thoughtfully. The divine lightning had a miraculous effect, strengthening Spiritual Energy. After training for a few days, Mu Chen could feel the subtle changes in the Spiritual Energy within his body.

It was the feeling of it being more condensed.

Mu Chen suppressed the delight he had within his heart. After all, the mysterious feeling was only a sign before the Great Pagoda Art makes a breakthrough. It wasn't a true breakthrough yet. Next up, he must grasp this mysterious feeling and successfully advance to the next level.

Right now, his Great Pagoda Art had reached the Shape-Condensation level. If he was able to progress further, he would reach the Towerform level. Only by reaching this point, he would be considered to have successfully trained in the Great Pagoda Art.

Towards the mysterious Spiritual Art that his mother left for him, Mu Chen had always been curious about it. According to Mu Feng, the mysterious Spiritual Pulse within his body was sealed by his mother. If he wanted to release the seal, the Great Pagoda Art was the key.

Therefore, in Mu Chen's opinion, the breakthrough in the Great

Pagoda Art was more important than his breakthrough to the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

Mu Chen sat cross-legged on the lightning platform and began activating the Great Pagoda Art once again. In an instant, a dark golden light was emitted and the originally dissipating thunderclouds gathered once again. Endless amounts of lightning being to descend from the thunderclouds and struck Mu Chen's body.

Chi Chi.

The dazzling lightning spread across the surface of Mu Chen's body as he circulated the Great Pagoda Art at full strength. He forced the dark black Spiritual Energy to surge through his meridians rapidly.

When Mu Chen circulated the Great Pagoda Art at full strength, he was able to detect that dark mysterious lights had slowly appeared within the depths of his body...

However, the mysterious lights would fade and reappear. However, once the divine lightning struck Mu Chen's body, these lights would suddenly brighten up a little.

"As expected, it is because of the power of the divine lightning."

Aware of this scene, Mu Chen finally understood the reason behind the breakthrough in the Great Pagoda Art. He immediately opened his eyes and stood up. He stared into the depths as he muttered: "The efficiency of the divine lightning on the third level is still too low. If this continues, I'm afraid that the mysterious feeling would gradually subside and I will lose this opportunity of advancing my Great Pagoda Art."

This sort of breakthrough was mostly due to luck. Once he fails, he could only wait for the next opportunity to come.

Mu Chen's eyes flashed and he decisively took action. His body moved as he rushed swiftly to the depths of the third level of the

Lightning Territory.

In less than ten minutes, Mu Chen had reached the depths of the third level. There, a distortion appeared once again. Outside of the distortion, there was a faint light barrier.

In order to enter the fourth level of the Lightning Territory, one must possess the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. This light barrier was left here to stop students beneath this level from entering.

“Swish!”

Mu Chen completely ignored the light barrier and charged directly into it.

At this moment, numerous figures stared at the light barrier. Almost all of them possess the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. It was evident that they were considered excellent within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At this moment, they were somewhat startled when they noticed Mu Chen’s figure. Just where did this brat come from? Did he not know that only people who had the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage were eligible to enter the fourth level?

A few of them chuckled and grinned. Every one of them was quite interested in this. After all, they knew how powerful the light barrier was. Even if it would not hurt the student that attempted to forcibly pass through, it would at least cause the student to be in an awkward situation.

However, Mu Chen did not care about the nearby gazes. When he was about to make contact with the light barrier, he gripped his hand tightly and blasted out a punch.

Four dark light seals emerged suddenly on Mu Chen’s fist. Then, it formed into a beam of black light as it bombarded fiercely against the light barrier.

Buzz.

Numerous ripples emitted from Mu Chen's fists. Then, it became more and more violent. In the next instant, subtle cracking sounds rang out. The light barrier in front of Mu Chen had actually been forcibly destroyed by Mu Chen.

Swish!

When the cracks appeared, Mu Chen rapidly entered. At this moment, there were many surprised gazes. Just when was it possible for a Spirit Stage Late Phase to enter the fourth level?

"Just where did that guy come from? Just by relying on his Spirit Stage Late Phase strength, he was able to unleash an attack that was comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. That guy is pretty powerful."

The crowd that had been watching Mu Chen was completely shocked. However, they soon recovered and exclaimed loudly. Then, they stormed towards the fourth level of the Lightning Territory.

But when they charged into the fourth level of the Lightning Territory, Mu Chen's figure had already disappeared. After Mu Chen quickly reached the fourth level, he could feel the difference between the third level and the fourth level.

The thunderclouds in the skies had already become pitch-black. Although the lightning strikes were less frequent than on the third level, deep rumbling sounds would resound occasionally. Just by this sound, one could tell how powerful the divine lightning was within this level.

After Mu Chen reached the fourth level, he immediately searched for an empty lightning platform. He quickly descended and sat cross-legged as he activated the lightning platform.

Boom!!

Once Mu Chen activated the lightning platform, the thunderclouds above his head began to gather. Just from their

appearance, the thunderclouds were like a terrifying gigantic face. It revealed a wicked smile before a loud rumbling sound rang out. A lightning strike that was dozens of meters wide descended like a beam of light. In the next instant, it fiercely struck Mu Chen's body.

The powerful impact made Mu Chen's body tremble fiercely. An intense pain emitted from the surface of his body. Mu Chen could feel that the divine lightning on the fourth level was powerful to the extent that it wasn't the same grade as the third level. No wonder the academy would only allow students who had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage to enter this place.

Mu Chen's body flashed as the lightning struck him. Then, he felt a dense amount of divine lightning entering his body. The power of the divine lightning from this one lightning strike was almost the same as ten strikes of lightning from the third level!

"Not bad."

Mu Chen was quite satisfied with the lightning on the fourth level and began to concentrate. As large amounts of divine lightning entered his body, he could feel that the mysterious black lights within his body began to become brighter at a slow pace.

Although the pace was quite slow, it was still many times faster than earlier.

Mu Chen concentrated and gradually adapted to the divine lightning on the fourth level. Afterwards, he began to increase the frequency of the lightning strikes. Later on, the thunderclouds above his head became increasingly violent and numerous divine lightning bolts struck down. These rampaging lightning strikes had shocked the nearby students.

To be able to fearlessly activate the lightning platform to this level of frequency, it was not something that an ordinary Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase student would do. They neither had the courage or the ability to do so.

As the divine lightning continued to bombard downwards, Mu Chen seemed to have completely secluded himself from the outside world and was only concerned about the changes within his body. This sort of selfless training had quickly lasted for ten days.

During these ten days, Mu Chen's body had basically remained motionless. The descent of lightning strikes from the thunderclouds had also never stopped. It had become an extremely eye-catching scene.

Numerous students that were cultivating had felt surprised and cast their gazes to this place. On the dark golden lightning platform, they were able to vaguely see a slender figure sitting cross-legged amongst the raging lightning strikes.

In the fourth level of the Lightning Territory, it was extremely rare to see such a scene. For ten full days, divine lightning had been summoned endlessly. Even a person who had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase wouldn't be able to endure it, right?

Just who exactly is this guy? How is he this powerful...

Not far away, there were numerous figures standing on a lightning platform. Every single one of them was somewhat surprised as they watched this scene.

In front of these individuals, there was a familiar face. It was the face of a cool beauty who was wearing a red dress. It was An Ran, who had lost to Mu Chen within the Northern Heavens World.

"That guy is truly powerful. Even I wouldn't be able to endure this level of divine lightning. I really want to know just who this powerful person is..." Beside An Ran, a youth chuckled. However, he could not conceal the surprise on his face.

"There are a lot of students within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Who knows how many people were hiding their strength and cultivated secretly as they waited for the day to

suddenly shock everyone? Perhaps this person was one of them." Another youth laughed.

When An Ran heard their words, her beautiful eyes also stared at the lightning. The figure gave her a somewhat familiar feeling.

"Just who is that person?" An Ran frowned as she muttered to herself.

"Huh? The lightning seems to be weakening." All of a sudden, the youth beside An Ran spoke out.

An Ran immediately turned her gaze over. As expected, the originally violent lightning had begun to weaken. The commotion caused by that place had been extremely eye-catching for the past few days. Therefore, many people immediately cast their gazes over in surprise and curiosity.

As countless gazes focused on Mu Chen's body, Mu Chen's focus remained within his body. In the depths of his body, the originally looming, mysterious black lights had suddenly become quite bright. A mysterious fluctuation quietly emitted.

Buzz.

All of a sudden, Mu Chen felt the mysterious black lights tremble. Then, he noticed that the black lights extended and formed a beam of light.

These beams of lights would extend out and connect with every single one of the black lights.

As Mu Chen watched this occur, his heart tensed up.

Shortly after, the black light beams finally completely connected with each other. And in the moment when they finished linking up, Mu Chen's heart jumped. This is because, he noticed that lights spread out and the black lights had slowly formed into a mysterious black tower within his body.

In the instant that the mysterious black tower was formed, Mu

Chen felt that he had travelled through time and space. An obscure and mysterious ancient voice echoed slowly within his body.

“By turning the body to a Pagoda, I will control the heavens and the earth."

Chapter 165 – Pagoda

“By turning the body into a Pagoda, I will control the heavens and the earth.”

Within Mu Chen’s heart, an ancient voice seemed to gently resound through time and space. An inexplicable feeling was quietly born and rippled out as well.

His hands silently changed into an extremely mysterious and ancient seal. At the same time, the Spirit within his aura sea that was sitting cross-legged also formed the same exact seal.

A mysterious fluctuation emitted.

At this moment, the mysterious black lights in the depths of Mu Chen’s body also turned increasingly bright. As for the black light tower within his body, it was also turning more and more vivid.

While Mu Chen was on the lightning platform, a mysterious dark-black light emerged from his body. This light surrounded his body and quickly expanded.

In just a few seconds, a black tower that was approximately a few hundred feet tall was formed from the lights. At this moment, Mu Chen’s body also vanished from sight.

It was as if this black tower was formed by his body.

The black light tower exuded a deep black glow. It had nine floors and mysterious engravings were placed throughout the tower’s body, which emitted an ancient fluctuation.

Boom!

Divine lightning constantly descended and bombarded the black pagoda with nine floors. However, the latter remained motionless and, instead, it directly absorbed the divine lightning.

As the pagoda absorbed the divine lightning, the black glow, that was circulating through the pagoda, also became increasingly

deep. It was as if it was being refined by the divine lightning.

This change was also projected into Mu Chen's heart. From this, Mu Chen seemed to understand something and immediately concentrated. Amidst numerous aghast gazes, the pagoda actually formed into a black light as it surged towards the skies and charged into the layers of black thunderclouds.

This scene instantly caused a tremor within this area and countless individuals were horrified. This guy actually rushed into the thunderclouds?

But at that location, the divine lightning were extremely terrifying!

"What is that guy doing?" On the lightning platform where An Ran and the others were located, a group of individuals were completely flabbergasted and speechless. The power of the divine lightning within the thunderclouds was exceptionally terrifying. A Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase or even a Late Phase powerhouse wouldn't dare to enter either.

"Rumble!"

While they were completely shocked, a loud rumbling sounded broke out from the thunderclouds. Surging lightning rumbled and converged at a certain place.

This disturbing scene made the ones watching turn completely numb.

For approximately ten minutes, under many gazes, this raging scene continued within the thunderclouds before it gradually stopped. Then, silence filled the area.

"Was that guy struck to death by the divine lightning?" Everybody exchanged gazes while they had this thought. They could not imagine what sort of brainless fool would rush directly into the thunderclouds.

But within that silence, a black light figure suddenly descended

from the black thunderclouds. Afterwards, the light faded from the figure and it formed into a human silhouette.

The silhouette had a slender body and was exceptionally handsome. His body was completely intact and there weren't even the slightest signs of injury.

"He's still alive?"

As they stared at the person that appeared, the people, who originally let out a sigh, instantly returned their gazes and had expressions of disbelief. Moreover, their expressions turned completely pale once they discovered that the latter's strength was only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

A Spirit Stage Late Phase actually entered the Lightning Territory's fourth level and was completely unharmed after rushing into the thunderclouds? Just what sort of monster is this boy?

"That's..."

An Ran was stunned as she stared at the boy.

"An Ran, do you recognize him?" A boy beside An Ran noticed her expression and could not help but ask in surprise.

"Yes...He's Mu Chen. He was the freshman that defeated me in the Northern Heavens World." An Ran replied with a complex expression.

"So he's Mu Chen?"

The people nearby were all surprised. They had heard that An Ran had suffered a defeat in the Northern Heavens World. However, they never expected that the freshman, who defeated An Ran, would cause such a ruckus in front of them. No wonder he managed to defeat An Ran...

"To be able to defeat a Heavenly Fusion Stage opponent with the strength of a Spirit Stage Late Phase...This boy isn't that simple."

The boy beside her exclaimed. It seems that the freshman this year were quite high in quality.

“When he defeated me, he was only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase.” An Ran said in frustration. After all, she was quite a prideful individual. However, there was nothing that she could say when she lost to Mu Chen. The various means revealed by the latter were indeed quite powerful. It wasn’t something that an ordinary Spirit Stage Middle Phase should possess.

When the others heard this, their eyes were stunned and they immediately let out a bitter laugh. There are truly a few powerful individuals among the freshman this year.

“However, he stirred up quite a bit of trouble the past few days. Mo Lun has been looking for him and he caused a ruckus within the freshman area. So he was cultivating at this place...” An Ran muttered.

“So he was the freshman that Mo Lun was searching for...That should be quite interesting to watch. That guy, Mo Lun, should soon breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, right?” The boy beside An Ran frowned: “However, he’s a senior, why is he picking a fight with the freshmen? Moreover, his actions during the past few days were indeed going overboard.”

They were prideful seniors, and there was no honour in bullying the freshmen that were recently accepted into the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

An Ran nodded slightly as well. She, too, was quite disgusted with Mo Lun’s actions.

As they conversed with each other, Mu Chen, who had appeared in midair in the distance, swept his gaze around. He stared at the numerous gazes nearby that were completely fixed on him and was quite surprised. It was evident that he never expected that his cultivation would have attracted that many people’s attention.

However, he was not particularly fond of this attention. Therefore, he turned around and decided to leave temporarily.

“Mu Chen!”

But just when he was about to leave, a cry came from afar. Then, he noticed a figure rushing over towards him. After the figure had approached, he was somewhat surprised and smiled: “Senior An Ran, so you were here as well.”

“You must be quite relaxed since you’ve hidden yourself in this place.” An Ran stared at Mu Chen as she frowned.

“Huh?” Mu Chen frowned. It wasn’t as if he had offended anyone with his cultivation, right?

“Are you just pretending or do you really not know about that issue?” An Ran stared at Mu Chen’s bewildered expression and said: “Don’t you know what happened within the freshman area?”

“What happened? Is it related to me?” Mu Chen was quite confused and asked in doubt.

“You’ve eliminated Mo Lun from the Spirit Ranking. He is a prideful individual, thus, he was completely enraged by you. During the past few days, he has been looking for you. However, since he wasn’t able to find you, he released his fury on the freshmen located in your freshman area.”

An Ran continued to speak: “And it seemed that your friends had joined forces to resist him when he came over to search for you. This caused him to be completely furious. Therefore, he called over a few friends over the past few days and has obstructed the freshmen within that area from exiting to cultivate. Moreover, he even spread the word about how long you would be able to hide.”

Mu Chen was completely surprised and his expression immediately turned grim. Fury also poured out within his eyes. He never expected that this Mo Lun would be so petty. Not only did he hold a grudge about the Spirit Ranking, he even involved the

freshmen who weren't involved in that issue.

"Right now, this matter has aroused a lot of attention, but since this is a matter between students, the instructors of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy cannot intervene. However, I think that you should appear for a bit, otherwise, it would be detrimental to your reputation." An Ran said.

Currently, news had also spread throughout the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. They had said that Mu Chen was a coward and was afraid of trouble. He took the benefits of the Spirit Ranking and went into hiding. At the same time, he let his companions take care of his own trouble.

An Ran stared at the boy in front of her. At this moment, Mu Chen's expression gradually calmed down and his anger subsided. However, within his black eyes, a daunting chill emerged.

"Senior An Ran. Thank you very much. About this issue, I didn't consider the possibilities of this occurring thoroughly. This caused my friends to suffer." Mu Chen cupped his hands towards An Ran and replied softly.

An Ran nodded. After all, she had fought against Mu Chen and had lost to him. If the latter was truly a coward, she would also feel quite uncomfortable. To lose to such a person, it wasn't worth it. However, judging from the situation now, it was clear that it was different than the rumors outside. Mu Chen did not hide because he was afraid of Mo Lun.

It was evident that Mu Chen had no desire to continue to cultivate once he heard this news. He turned around and intended to leave the Lightning Territory.

"Do you need any help? It isn't easy to deal with Mo Lun. Moreover, he has even found a few friends to help him. If you need some help, I can bring a few friends over. This way, they wouldn't dare to go overboard." Seeing this, An Ran quickly spoke up.

However, Mu Chen only smiled when he heard this and replied: “Thank you for your kindness, Senior An Ran. However, since I was the one that caused this trouble, I will resolve it by myself.”

Seeing Mu Chen’s smile, An Ran felt a tiny chill within her heart. Even when she had badmouthed this gentle and handsome boy within the Northern Heavens World, he had always remained like a sunshine boy. But at this moment, the latter’s expression emitted a powerful chill. This made An Ran understand that Mu Chen was extremely furious this time.

An Ran nodded. She unconsciously felt that Mo Lun seemed to have stirred up a hornet's nest...

Mu Chen no longer spoke and immediately rushed towards the exit of the Lightning Territory. In a dozen minutes or so, he passed through the numerous floors of the Lightning Territory and rushed out of the entrance.

Once Mu Chen returned to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he did not have the mood to watch the fairyland-like sight. Instead, he stared coldly at the distant freshman area. His body quickly turned into a figure of light as he rushed over there.

At this moment, his palms slowly clenched themselves and a piercing chill gathered within his eyes.

Mo Lun, is it? If you believe that I’ve disgraced you utterly since I’ve kicked you out of the Spirit Ranking, then this time, I will disgrace you to the extent that you wouldn’t even have any face left to be disgraced!

You bastard!

Chapter 166 – Blockade

In a certain location within the freshmen area.

In the spacious plaza, numerous freshmen had gathered, talking to each other. However, they could not suppress the anger within their voices. Many of the freshmen stared angrily at the skies above this area. At that location, there were a few figures standing in midair as they chuckled and watched over them. These people all had sloppy expressions, but the Spiritual Energy fluctuations that were emitting from within their bodies revealed that they all possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage individual.

It was evident that it would currently be difficult for the freshmen to compete against this line-up.

At the center of the plaza, Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the others had all gathered. All of them had furious and unwilling expressions. These bastards had already besieged them for a bit over ten days.

Although they could still cultivate within the freshmen area, they felt like prisoners in a prison, since they were stuck in this place and were not allowed to exit.

“These bastards are going too far!” Yan Ling gritted his teeth as he cursed. His face had a few bruises. This was the price that he had paid for not being able to endure this treatment and fighting against these bastards. Although he was considered to be one of the strongest freshmen, there was still quite a bit of difference between him and the seniors, who had already cultivated within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for one or two years.

Zhou Ling and the others also had gloomy expressions. In the past, they were all prideful individuals and had never been this insulted. During these ten or so days, a few freshmen, who were originally together with them in this freshmen area, had applied to leave this freshmen area due to the pressure from Mo Lun and the

others. Only by doing this, they were able to escape from their bullying.

However, there were lot more freshmen who had decided to huddle together and form a group. After all, the students that were able to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were all considered to be at the pinnacle of their own respective academies before. Although their sense of superiority had dimmed after they entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they still had pride deep down inside. Therefore, if they were to leave this freshmen area due to the current circumstances, won't it be same as they telling others that they were afraid of these bastards and were forced to choose a humiliating method to escape their bullying?

Their prideful selves would not accept such thing to happen.

Thus, even though many of the freshmen were filled with fury, there weren't many individuals that decided to leave this freshmen area. Instead, they grouped together as if they wanted to see just how far these bastards would go.

"Let's continue to cultivate. After all, we're within a Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array, the Spiritual Aura within this place is quite abundant. Let's see who will be able to outlast the other." Zhou Ling said.

Everybody nodded in response. Because of Mo Lun's actions, they had become quite familiar within each other during the past few days. They would gather together and it was apparent that they had formed a deeper relationship.

"Right now, we can only wait until Mu Chen or Luo Li return." Ye Qingling smiled bitterly. Those two...Once they departed, they left for more than 10 days and had not reappeared since then.

"Even if they came back, it probably wouldn't be easy to deal with the current situation." Yan Ling said helplessly. Although both Mu Chen and Luo Li's strength were considered to be at the

pinnacle of the freshmen group, these seniors were in no way inferior to them. Moreover, they had an advantage in numbers.

“Eh, let’s just wait and watch.” Zhou Ling waved his hand and was about to begin his cultivation. However, his expression suddenly changed and he lifted his head as he stared into the distant skies. At that location, a figure of light was rushing over to this location rapidly. A familiar fluctuation emitted out from that figure.

“It’s Mu Chen! He’s back!” Zhou Ling stood up in surprise and exclaimed.

“Mu Chen returned?”

In this plaza, the thousands of freshmen were also surprised. They hurriedly lifted their heads as they stared at the distant figure of light.

“Mu Chen?”

The commotion below was also heard by the numerous individuals in the sky. They were all startled and immediately turned towards the figure of light. Then, a youth sneered: “That guy, he finally couldn’t endure it any longer and appeared, huh? Prepare to notify Brother Mo, I’ll intercept that boy.”

Immediately after he spoke, dense Spiritual Energy surged out from the youth’s body and charged over as he shouted: “Boy, I’ve waited for you for a long time. Stop right now!”

From a distance, Mu Chen was able to see the numerous figures forming a blockade within the sky. The cold chill within his eyes suddenly increased. These bastards, they really had formed a blockade here!

Just when his eyes turned increasingly relentless, he stared at the figure that was rushing towards him and the latter’s sneer resounded out from afar.

Seeing that this bastard dared to act this arrogant in front of him,

his expression turned completely cold. He clenched his fingers tightly and blasted out a punch. Dark-black Spiritual Energy converged and four Limitless Death Seals were formed and fired out at the same time.

As the four Limitless Death Seals exploded out, it left behind a trail of light. Everywhere that the trail of light passed through, it forcibly caused the air to blow up and sounds of explosion rang out.

The youth that had charged towards Mu Chen also detected how powerful the attack released by Mu Chen was and his eyes immediately focused. This boy, he truly had some skill as he was able to eliminate Mo Lun from the Spirit Ranking.

“A mere freshman dares to act this insolent in front of me?” Although this youth was somewhat surprised, he was not afraid of Mu Chen. As he sneered, he also clenched his fists tightly and Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body. Rumbling Spiritual Energy converged on the surface of his fists as he fired out a punch. Then, this punch connected directly at the four Limitless Death Seals that approached him.

“Scram!”

Mu Chen’s black eyes were completely merciless. The four Limitless Death Seals suddenly exploded and powerful Spiritual Energy shockwaves overlapped with each other like rippling waves. With the force of thousands of shockwaves, they bombarded fiercely against the youth’s attack.

Visible Spiritual Energy shockwaves rang out with a gigantic sound. At this moment, the youth’s expression was slightly pale and filled with horror. His body trembled and he was forcibly blown away. He felt something sweet within his throat and traces of blood leaked out from the corner of his mouth.

In this direct confrontation, he was actually blown away by Mu Chen!

“How is this possible?!” The youth’s eyes were completely dismayed. How could this Spirit Stage Late Phase freshman possess such extraordinary combat ability?

When the numerous seniors witnessed this scene, they were also quite shocked.

In the instant that they were completely shocked, Mu Chen had rushed past their blockade and landed directly on the plaza where the freshmen gathered.

“Mu Chen!” Seeing this, Ye Qingling and the others hurriedly and surrounded him.

“Brother Mu, you’ve finally returned!” Mo Ling and the others’ expressions were filled with excitement.

“Everyone, are you alright?” Mu Chen glanced around the surroundings at everyone. All of them had eyes filled with surprise and not even the slightest grievance could be seen within them. This made him somewhat touched and somewhat ashamed. After all, they had suffered because of him.

“We’re alright. Although these bastards were quite arrogant, they didn’t dare to do anything to us.” Zhou Ling smiled at Mu Chen and was quite curious. Just earlier, he had seen Mu Chen blow away a senior, who was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, with one punch. Compared to ten days ago, it was apparent that the latter’s strength had increased again.

“This time, it was all because of me not considering such possibilities. I’ve troubled everyone.” Mu Chen said seriously as he cupped his hands towards the freshmen.

“Ohoho, Brother Mu, what are you saying? The Spirit Ranking originally belongs to us freshmen. It’s completely reasonable for you to enter the Spirit Ranking. Instead, these bastards are quite narrow-minded, we all support you!” A freshman smiled and responded.

“That’s right. Brother Mu, you’ve brought glory to us freshmen when you entered the Spirit Ranking. These seniors are truly shameless. We’re not afraid of them. Didn’t they just enter the academy one or two years earlier than us? What is so amazing about them?”

Numerous freshmen spoke out in rage. They spoke out everything that they had hidden deep inside previously. It was evident that they were quite unhappy towards Mo Lun and the others.

As Zhou Ling watched this scene, he also smiled and said to Mu Chen: “It seems that everybody supports you. However, that bastard, Mo Lun, isn’t here. They would take turns in blocking us, but I think that guy will soon appear.

Mu Chen nodded his head slightly and responded slowly: “Everybody, relax. I won’t fight unless I am attacked. However, since they’ve already appeared, I may be underestimated if I were to endure this.”

As he spoke, he lifted his head and stared at the numerous pale youths. His voice was completely heartless as he spoke: “Hurry and notify that Mo Lun. Didn’t he want to see me? I’ll wait for him right here!”

In the sky, the numerous youths snorted in response. They exchanged gazes with each other and then a person gripped his hand tightly. A light flashed in the center of his palm before it quickly flew away and disappeared.

“A freshman actually dared to act this arrogant. We’ll see if you’ll have such confidence when Brother Mo appears.” A youth sneered.

Mu Chen’s eyes possessed a calm glow. He glanced at the youth, but was too lazy to care about him.

As the commotion caused at this location was quite large, it had attracted quite a bit of attention. Numerous freshmen from other

areas had approached from afar as they stared in this direction. The rumors of Mo Lun and the others forming a blockade in this area had already spread. Although the other freshmen from other areas felt displeased, they didn't dare say anything as they didn't want to get involved.

And currently, it seemed the cause of this trouble, Mu Chen, had finally reappeared.

When this area attracted numerous people's attention, three individuals, Yang Hong, Bing Qing and Mu Kui, stared towards this place in the sky from three different locations. They wanted to see how Mu Chen would deal with the current situation. After all, they had seen Mo Lun before as well. The latter wasn't weak and was about to break through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase.

Towards the numerous gazes from all directions, Mu Chen remained completely indifferent. He only stared into the distant skies. After a while, his expression finally changed. From that direction, a rainbow light was surging over and appeared in the sky after a few seconds.

When the light faded away, it revealed a stern-looking youth with long hair. His sharp eyes swept through the place beneath him and finally stopped on Mu Chen's body. His smile turned cold and he finally spoke.

"So you're Mu Chen, right? I've waited for you for quite a few days."

Chapter 167 – Mo Lun

The long-haired boy stood in midair and stared at Mu Chen, who was in the plaza below, and revealed a mocking smile. He thought that Mu Chen had appeared because he'd been forced to the point where he couldn't hide any longer.

"So you're Mo Lun..."

At that moment, Mu Chen lifted his head and smiled towards the long-haired boy in the sky. He said, "You're quite narrow-minded. It's truly beyond my expectations. No wonder you dared to occupy the Spirit Ranking, which is for freshmen, and didn't have the courage to challenge a higher level ranking. From what I've seen, you truly are pitiful."

When Mo Lun heard Mu Chen's words, his eyes suddenly changed, and his face turned grim. He immediately responded, "What a sharp tongue you possess. You dare speak such words, even when you're in front of me. You really are heedless of the consequences!"

"You're quite talkative."

Mu Chen shook his head and a cold chill poured out from his black eyes. He stared at Mo Lun and said slowly: "Relax, even if you wish to resolve this matter silently, I wouldn't give you the chance to do so. The humiliation that you've gave to my friends the past few days, I'll make sure that you pay it back right now."

Mo Lun was stunned. Then, he burst out laughing as if he had heard a joke. He tilted his head towards his friends and laughed: "Did you hear that? He said that he wouldn't give me the chance to resolve this matter silently? He actually believed that I was planning to let him go?"

A few youths beside him immediately stared mockingly at Mu Chen. Didn't this guy know the situation he was in?

“Boy, just because of these words, you’ll never have a peaceful life in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.” Mo Lun smiled. His eyes also turned increasingly cold as he replied faintly:

“I’m afraid you’re not qualified to say such words.”

Mu Chen smiled and his body slowly rose into the sky. In the end, he was exchanging gazes with Mo Lun at the same eye level. Then, he stretched out his hand and gently bent it: “Come. If you want to get your revenge, then bring out your abilities. Otherwise, you probably won’t be able to regain the pride that you’ve lost.

Mo Lun’s gaze was like a blade stabbing into Mu Chen’s body. His expression had turned exceptionally grim. Mu Chen’s attitude had indeed infuriated him. This scene wasn’t something that he’d wanted to see.

He wanted to see this freshman, who was clueless of the world, reveal a pitiful appearance after he understood who he had provoked...

However, this boy was impervious to such an obvious situation. Thus, he could only use his fists to make him understand that a freshman, who had been recently accepted into the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, should learn what is called modesty!

“All of you should step backwards.” Mo Lun spoke slowly in a dark tone.

Seeing Mo Lun’s expression, the nearby youths understood that Mo Lun was completely furious. They immediately stared pitifully at Mu Chen before retreating backwards.

“Perhaps you might feel proud of eliminating my name from the Spirit Ranking, but I must tell you this in sympathy. That was something that I left behind a year ago. In other words, the current you can only contend with the me from one year ago...”

Mo Lun slowly gripped his hands and golden Spiritual Energy formed into a dense golden light. A Spiritual Energy spread out

from his body and caused the expressions of numerous freshmen below to change.

The degree of Spiritual Energy was only half-a-step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase!

Mo Lun's strength was even greater than An Ran, who they'd met in the Northern Heavens World!

A few gazes immediately turned towards Mu Chen. However, the latter's face remained completely calm. Not even the slightest disturbance could be seen within his eyes. Moreover, he wasn't surprised by the Spiritual Energy pressure emitting from Mo Lun.

"Boy, it's too late for you to regret this!"

Mo Lun's eyes turned cold as he grinned. Then, he rushed forward and clenched his hands together as he fired a punch. At this instant, a golden light erupted. With an extraordinary fluctuation, it soared rapidly like lightning towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's black eyes reflected the approaching golden light. In response, he straightened two of his fingers and let out a furious stab in the next instant. A golden light also erupted from his fingers and formed into a peerless golden divine spear.

The two golden lights fiercely collided with each other and deep sounds rang out from the Spiritual Energy impact. In a few seconds, both lights were annihilated by each other and faded away.

As he witnessed this scene, Mo Lun's eyes narrowed.

All of a sudden, a blurry figure rushed past the fading golden lights like a phantom and appeared above Mo Lun. Just then, a punch was fired out. Four Limitless Death Seals roared out and an extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation enveloped Mo Lun.

As the four Limitless Death Seals roared out, the fluctuations emitting from it instantly changed Mo Lun's expression. It seemed this boy had trained in numerous high-level Attack Spiritual Arts.

Otherwise, he wouldn't have such combat abilities.

But if this is the reason behind your confidence, then I'll let you know the difference between us through absolute strength!

"Goldfire Spirit Finger!"

Mo Lun's body remained motionless as he pointed with a single finger, while golden light gushed out. Within the golden light, a golden flame seemed to have appeared. Then, accompanying the winds unleashed by Mo Lun's finger, it formed into a light with golden flames. It tore through the air and heavily bombarded the approaching Limitless Death Seals.

When the two powerful attacks collided with each other, Spiritual Energy shock waves that were visible to the naked eye surged out. The golden and black Spiritual Energy confronted each other as it constantly surged and attempted to destroy the other.

"Shatter!"

Seeing the two Spiritual Energies having a stalemate, Mo Lun's eyes darkened. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy within his body was completely unleashed. He smacked down with his palm and the golden light finally suppressed the Spiritual Energy impact formed from the Limitless Death Seals. With a bang, the Limitless Death Seals finally shattered and disappeared.

Just when the Spiritual Energy impact from the Limitless Death Seals was completely resolved, a figure rushed forward furiously and the shadow of a palm descended down mercilessly and enshrouded Mo Lun's surroundings.

Bang!

However, Mo Lun only sneered in response to Mu Chen's ferocious attack. He activated his Spiritual Energy and a sharp and powerful wind was formed by his finger. This wind completely stopped Mu Chen's offense.

In the sky, the two figures were entangled with each other. Black

and golden lights would erupt in the sky, making it a dazzling scene.

In this area, numerous gazes stared at the two figures. Even a person who had entered the Heavenly Fusion Stage would turn completely serious in the face of the violent Spiritual Energy that was emitting from this location.

Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the others watched with a serious expression as Mu Chen fought against Mo Lun. It was evident that, compared to ten days ago, Mu Chen's strength had increased significantly. Therefore, he was able to fight evenly even against Mo Lun's terrifying offensive.

But no matter what, Mu Chen was still only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. If they were to compare the density of Spiritual Energy within their bodies, it was natural for Mu Chen to have significantly less than Mo Lun. Therefore, it wouldn't be to Mu Chen's advantage if this stalemate continued on.

"Boom!"

Just when these thoughts flashed through their minds, a devastating rumbling resounded from the sky. At the same time, the two intertwining figures were blasted backwards.

Mu Chen's sleeves had been slightly torn while Mo Lun's loose long hair had turned completely messy. It was evident that the two of them did not hold back during their confrontation.

"This boy is surprisingly resilient. No wonder he was able to eliminate the ranking that I'd left behind a year ago." Mo Lun let out a cold laugh. The strength displayed by Mu Chen was indeed comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. This was extremely rare.

"However, you shouldn't be too proud of yourself. After all, this is only the beginning!"

Mo Lun's eyes turned sharp and he took a step forward. His long

hair danced in the skies once again and dazzling golden lights were emitting from his body. These lights would extend and retract, making it look like there were millions of lights surging forth.

“Goldfire Sword Art, Myriad Sword Slash!”

Mo Lun’s hand seals changed as he let out a deep cry. The golden lights that he was emitting immediately condensed in front of him. In the end, it formed into an overwhelming number of golden swords. Every single one of these swords was trembling and making a buzzing sounds A sharp fluctuation would emit from each sword.

With the appearance of these countless golden swords, the Spiritual Aura within the world near Mo Lun’s body started to turn violently. Everybody was able to detect this powerful assault of his.

It was evident that Mo Lun was about to use his trump card!

“He actually forced Brother Mo to use his Goldfire Sword Art. This boy is indeed quite capable.” A few seniors were surprised as they watched this scene.

Swish!

As they spoke, Mo Lun’s cold eyes locked onto Mu Chen’s body. Then, he let out a cold sneer and changed his hand seal. At this moment, the countless golden swords rushed up into the skies. Then, with numerous whistling sounds, they descended down like a golden torrent. It tore through the air and, with extraordinary speed, it blocked all paths of retreat for Mu Chen.

Numerous individuals’ expressions changed when they witnessed this scene. Even an ordinary Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase powerhouse wouldn’t be able to receive Mo Lun’s attack. It seemed that this guy was planning to end this fight early.

Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the others all stared nervously at the sky. At that location, Mu Chen’s body seemed so insignificant and weak in the face of the mighty golden torrent.

From afar, Yang Hong, Bing Qing and Mu Kui also had their sights fixed at this place. Even they felt a hint of danger from the golden torrent. If Mu Chen didn't have any other techniques, he would definitely be defeated.

Amidst the countless tense gazes, Mu Chen remained calm. He stared at the mighty golden torrent and could feel the extraordinary sharpness from the swords within.

At this moment, he suddenly closed his eyes. Dark-black light emitted from his body and completely enveloped him.

"Turn the body into a Pagoda!"

Mu Chen gently murmured within his heart. At the same time, dark black lights suddenly rocketed up into the sky. As the black light surged out, Mu Chen's body completely vanished. Instead, it was replaced by a nine floored pagoda!

The pagoda remained suspended in midair and black lights continued to spill out. It remained motionless and quietly allowed the golden torrent of swords to bombard its body.

Ding Ding!

Crisp metal sounds resounded out. The golden torrent of swords had surrounded the pagoda and circled around it furiously. The fluctuations emitting from it had even caused the air to show signs of distortion and many people watching had turned numb.

However, Mo Lun and, from a distance, Yang Hong, Bing Qing and Mu Kui's eyes narrowed at this instant. This is because they could see that the black pagoda was quietly standing within the violent golden torrent. Even against such an extraordinary offensive, it had remained completely motionless.

Moreover, Mo Lun's all-out attack did not even leave the slightest traces on the black pagoda.

"How is this possible?!"

In this instant, even for Mo Lun, he was completely shocked. A hint of unease sprouted in the depths of his heart and quietly entangled itself like vines.

Only now did he finally understand that the freshman, who he believed had been hiding cowardly, was very strange and extremely dangerous.

Chapter 168 – The Might of the Pagoda

The golden torrent swept through the skies, and the countless golden swords were making whistling sounds. From afar, the tempest formed by these swords seemed like an extraordinary attack.

At this moment, countless gazes witnessed the scene occur in the sky. The attack from Mo Lun had shocked them tremendously. Even Ye Qingling and the others looked worried.

But just when the worry could be seen in their faces, buzzing sounds rang from the golden torrent in the sky. Suddenly, the sharp golden torrent froze for a moment and the speed of the storm was forcibly slowed down. Afterwards, it stopped completely.

Swish!

When the golden torrent was blocked, a black glow shone from the golden torrent. As the black glow passed through, the golden torrent seemed to have melted like lava touching snow, causing the golden swords to instantly fall apart and disintegrate at an alarming speed.

Within a few seconds, the mighty golden torrent completely vanished from sight.

And in the center of the golden torrent was a few hundred feet black pagoda. It was suspended quietly in the air as a mysterious fluctuation was emitting from it.

The black tower had obscure light engravings on the surface and not even the slightest trace of damage was on the body of the pagoda. It was evident that the devastating golden torrent had no effect on it.

“What the hell is that? Could it be a Spiritual Artifact? However, it doesn’t look like one…”

Everybody's gaze was fixed on the black tower and people looked surprised. Even Ye Qingling and the others were completely shocked. It was clear that it was their first time witnessing Mu Chen use such a technique as well.

At this moment, the black pagoda trembled for a moment and black lights suddenly gushed. The tower suddenly rushed up into the skies and then it directly suppressed Mo Lun, who was beneath it.

As the black tower rushed up, an indescribable pressure started to emit from it. In that instant, even the Spiritual Aura within the world had fled from this location. It was as if it had met something terrifying.

As the huge shadow from the pagoda enveloped him, Mo Lun's expression turned extremely serious. He felt a dangerous fluctuation coming from the black tower.

Right now, he did not dare to underestimate Mu Chen at all.

After all, Mu Chen's various techniques had finally made him feel somewhat uneasy.

"It won't be that easy for you to defeat me!"

However, Mo Lun was, after all, an experienced senior. Moreover, he wasn't weak at all. Even at a time like this, he was able to quickly suppress the unease within his heart and let out a battle cry. Golden Spiritual Energy surged out like a flood and surrounded his body. In the end, a deafening roar rang out as he turned into a golden beast that could walk in the air.

The entire body of this beast was gold in color, as if it was crafted from actual gold. Its enormous body had a golden flame drifting around. Moreover, a golden horn with spiral engravings was on the golden beast's forehead. The golden beast's body started emitting a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation.

"Is that the Goldfire Beast that's ranked 91 on the Myriad Beast

Record's Earth Ranking?"

When Ye Qingling and the others noticed that Mo Lun had changed into a golden beast, they were surprised. Mo Lun actually had to use this technique as well. It seemed that he was pressured by Mu Chen quite a bit.

"Roar!"

As the Goldfire Beast roared towards the sky, thousands of golden lights erupted from its body. A pair of golden eyes stared at the black pagoda, while attempting to suppress it. Then, it lowered its head and a brilliant glow flashed from the golden horn on its head. The glow was exceptionally bright and stung countless eyes.

"Goldfire Horn!"

Mo Lun's deep cry resounded out from the Goldfire Beast's hideous mouth. Immediately after, a gigantic golden light erupted furiously from the golden horn of the Goldfire Beast.

The golden light ripped through the sky like a pillar of light. It carried a powerful Spiritual Energy and under countless gazes, it fiercely smashed against the pagoda that was approaching.

"Scram!"

The Goldfire Beast formed by Mo Lun roared out loudly. Gold energy collided against the pagoda in a pillar of light. At the same time, violent Spiritual Energy shockwaves spread out in waves. It was an spectacular sight.

"Scram? You're being suppressed instead!"

The black pagoda remained motionless and allowed the golden light to do whatever it wanted. Mu Chen's voice also rang out from within the pagoda loudly. After his voice appeared, black lights swept out from the surface of the black pagoda.

Buzz.

The black pagoda vibrated as a black halo was emitted from the

base of the pagoda. As the black halo rippled out in waves, the originally bright golden beam dimmed at an extraordinary speed.

The change in brightness was exceptionally swift. Before Mo Lun could recover from his shock, the black pagoda had already descended. It shattered the golden lights as it passed through.

Bang Bang Bang!

Watching the pagoda descending while suppressing the golden light, the Goldfire Beast's eyes filled with terror. It hurriedly activated the Spiritual Energy within its body and numerous golden beams shot out. However, whenever these powerful golden beams touched the black halo beneath the pagoda, they turned dim and vanished at an amazing speed.

From its appearance, it was as if the darkness had met the sunlight.

While it continued descending with overbearing might, the terror within the Goldfire Beast's eyes increased, because it had no way of stopping the pagoda.

"Boom!"

Finally, under countless horrified gazes, the black pagoda fiercely smashed down onto the enormous body of the Goldfire Beast.

The instant it made contact with the Goldfire Beast, even the skies seemed to tremble.

Overwhelming black light rushed out from the base of the pagoda. Due to the enveloping black light, the Goldfire Beast that was formed by Mo Lun started to make sounds of wailing. The golden light quickly dimmed and shrunk. In the end, it turned back into a human figure

At this moment, the human figure shot back awkwardly and mouthfuls of blood were spat out. The originally powerful aura seemed to have shriveled up and the Spiritual Energy fluctuations that rippled out from his body had become weak and disorderly.

Mo Lun's figure shot straight down to the ground. This powerful force directly caused a deep crater to form on the ground. Cracks immediately spread out from the crater.

Puchi.

Mo Lun's clothes were completely torn to pieces. His hair was completely disheveled as he stared palely at the sky. Fear was pouring from his eyes. While the black pagoda suppressed him, it also shattered his courage.

This power had completely suppressed him!

The numerous individuals that were concerned about this battle also quietly inhaled mouthfuls of cold air. Their eyes were filled with disbelief. Even the seniors in the sky were completely stunned. They stared in a daze at Mo Lun, who had a pale expression, and could not recover from their shock.

Mo Lun, whose strength was comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, had actually lost? Moreover, he had lost to a freshman, who was only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase?

They turned their necks stiffly and exchanged gazes with each other. All of them were completely silent. This time, their opponent was too strong and they had completely underestimated him.

"That guy..."

In a distant location, Yang Hong had a calm expression as he witnessed this scene. But when he stared at the black tower, his eyes focused and turned cold. Mu Chen's true strength was beyond his expectations. As expected, that guy wasn't someone who could be dealt with easily. It seemed that he had to make preparations for the Freshmen Competition that would be hosted ten days later.

"He's quite powerful."

On the other side, Mu Kui nodded his head and gave a fair assessment. Although he was not afraid of Mo Lun, it would be

burdensome if he wanted to suppress the latter to this extent. Since Mu Chen had managed to do so with his strength at the Spirit Stage Late Phase, it impressed him.

As for Bing Qing, she had remained icy cold. Her icy-blue eyes did not reveal much shock.

In the plaza, Ye Qingling and the others also recovered from their shock and surprise filled their eyes. This time, even Zhou Ling and the other students at the pinnacle of the freshmen were impressed. With the identity of a freshman, he was able to defeat a senior such as Mo Lun. This ability of his was enough to tame them.

Not to mention Mo Ling and the others, these individuals all had eyes filled with worship. At the same time, the other freshmen all had dazzling smiles on their faces. They stared at the seniors, who had ugly expressions, and felt satisfied. They were finally able to express their fury from the past few days.

In the sky, the black tower quickly shrank. As the light faded away, it turned into a slender figure. At this moment, Mu Chen stared coldly at Mo Lun, who was completely pale, and appeared directly in front of him.

Seeing Mu Chen's cold expression, Mo Lun's heart jumped. He gritted his teeth and said, "Boy, it's your win. Everyone, let's leave!"

Although he was in an awkward position, he wouldn't submit to him verbally. He could lose the battle, but could not lose the war.

"Leave?"

Mu Chen stared at him and frowned. This made Mo Lun felt a bit of unease. However, he continued to sneer and said, "Otherwise, what do you plan to do?"

"Since you've blocked this many people from leaving for ten days, don't you think that you should hand over a bit of compensation?" Mu Chen said faintly, "Hand over all your

Spiritual Values."

"What did you say?!" Mo Lun's expression instantly turned cold and he snapped. He never imagined that Mu Chen would be this vicious. He actually wanted him to hand over his Spiritual Values.

Mu Chen remained indifferent and flicked his finger. A powerful wind erupted and passed by Mo Lun's ear. Then, it landed on the ground and formed a hole in the tough boulder.

"Although I cannot kill you, I don't mind hanging you on a tree within the freshman area. This way, you wouldn't have any face left within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Mu Chen seemed to smile. However, this smile sent chills throughout Mo Lun's body.

"Sometimes, you have to pay the price when you do the wrong thing. Otherwise, you wouldn't remember it at all."

"Bastard!" Mo Lun's face reddened and he growled: "You dare do this to me? Don't you know that I'm a member from the "Azure Red Community"? If you dare do such a thing, then don't even think being able to survive within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

Mu Chen glanced at him calmly before he took a step forward. He grabbed directly onto Mo Lun's collar and fired out a palm. He directly dislocated all four of Mo Lun's limbs and dragged him towards a tree. It was evident that he planned on hanging him there.

"You!"

Mo Lun endured the pain from his limbs and had a pale expression. If he were to be hung up at this place, he definitely wouldn't have any face left!

"Wait!"

As he thought about the humiliation that he would face, Mo Lun finally couldn't act arrogant anymore. His entire body turned limp

and he clenched his hand tightly. A crystal-like Spiritual Values Card appeared and he gritted his teeth as he stared at Mu Chen. “Just you wait, I won’t let you go this easily!”

Mu Chen smiled and completely ignored him. He picked up the Spiritual Values Card and looked at the amount it contained. At this moment, he could not help but lift his eyebrow in surprise.

Chapter 169 – Association

200,000 Spiritual Value points.

Mu Chen stared at the number on the Spiritual Value Card and was slightly startled. Mo Lun actually possessed so many of Spiritual Value points? Just how long had he been saving them? No wonder he had such a terrible expression just now.

Mu Chen directed a smile at the gloomy Mo Lun and tossed the Spiritual Value Card in his hand towards Zhou Ling as he said: “Brother Zhou. Please distribute these Spiritual Values among everyone. Consider it my apology to everyone here.”

“This…” Zhou Ling was stunned. Even the other freshmen in the plaza scratched their head and had felt slightly embarrassed.

“Just do as he says.” Ye Qingling smiled. After all, this entire matter was indeed caused by Mu Chen. Although the freshmen did not place the blame on him, Mu Chen didn’t treat it as if they should naturally do this. Instead, his actions revealed how big-hearted he was.

Zhou Ling hesitated for a moment and exchanged gazes with Yan Ling and the others beside him. Then, he nodded his head and extracted 170,000 Spiritual Value points from the Spiritual Value Card before tossing the remaining 30,000 Spiritual Value points back to Mu Chen. He smiled: “In the end, this is the loot from your victory. The rest of it should still belong to you. This amount is enough to split between us.

Seeing this, Mu Chen did not refute him and extracted the remaining 30,000 Spiritual Value points from the Spiritual Value Card. Then, he threw the Spiritual Value Card back to the pale-looking Mo Lun as he smiled: “On behalf of everyone here, I’ll thank Senior Mo Lun for his generosity.”

Mo Lun stared at the empty Spiritual Value Card and his face

alternated between blue and red. He felt enormous suffering within his heart. After all, he had saved up for half a year to accumulate such amount of Spiritual Value points. Just now, he had lost everything he had.

In the sky, the few youths that followed Mo Lun over hurriedly descended. When they witnessed this scene, their expressions were completely pale and they glared furiously at Mu Chen.

“Boy. You’re going too far! You actually dare steal his Spiritual Value points!”

Mu Chen gave a faint smile and said: “I’ve said it before. This isn’t stealing, but compensation. Judging from your appearances, it seems that you would like to compensate us as well? It seems that all of you were involved in this matter during these past few days as well.”

When these youths heard these words, they were slightly shocked and gritted their teeth. The scene of Mu Chen completely suppressing Mo Lun was still vivid in their minds. Therefore, they didn’t dare to face Mu Chen who was completely filled with spirit and confidence.

“We, the Azure Red Community, will never let this matter go easily!” One of the youths said coldly.

“No matter what sort of background you have, you should find me directly next time you’re going to cause trouble. Don’t act so lowly.” A hint of coldness flashed through Mu Chen’s eyes. Although he did not know what the “Azure Red Community” was, it did not mean that he would just allow anyone to intimidate him. Perhaps he might be a freshman right now, but if someone truly wanted to deal with him, he did not mind letting them know that he wasn’t a weakling.

“Just you wait!”

The youths had dark and furious expressions. Under the

numerous mocking gazes from nearby students, they did not have the face to remain in this place. Their actions for the past few days had made countless seniors feel that they were indeed despicable. Moreover, even Mo Lun had lost. If they were to group together since they weren't able to accept this outcome, not only would they lose their faces completely, even their "Azure Red Community" would be scoffed at.

It was evident that they couldn't afford such a consequence to occur.

Hence, they could only respond relentlessly as they picked up Mo Lun, who was in a completely awkward position, before leaving quickly.

When the freshmen in the plaza noticed that they were leaving in panic, cheers resounded out through the place. The fury within their hearts had finally been released.

"Brother Mu, you're so manly!"

Mo Ling shouted out loudly in excitement. The other freshmen also quickly shouted and their voices rang out like an avalanche as it spread far away. Even the other freshmen within the other areas were able to hear these cries clearly.

"Amazing..."

The freshmen within the other areas had faces filled with admiration as well. Although they did not suffer from Mo Lun's blockade, they were still freshmen as well. Towards Mo Lun's actions, they were also quite furious. Since Mu Chen had defeated Mo Lun, he had definitely increased the freshmen's reputation as well.

As for the freshmen that had applied leave towards the other areas prior to Mu Chen's appearance, they were completely embarrassed. After all, they had tried to avoid trouble once it occurred. They would definitely be dishonored if word spread

about them.

In the distant sky, Yang Hong stared emotionlessly at the freshmen area where the cheers resounded out. He grunted as he waved his sleeves and descended.

“He’s a good opponent.” Mu Kui’s eyes were burning with fighting spirit as he smiled. Then, he also descended from the sky.

As for Bing Qing, she stared at the slender figure who was completely submerged by the countless freshmen with her icy-blue eyes and nodded her head. The so-called Spiritual Road’s Blood Calamity was indeed quite skilled. No wonder he had made so many people from the Spiritual Road fear him.

As the battle ended, the gazes that were projected over to this place were slowly retracted. Although the battle was concluded, many people were still shocked deep down inside. The scene of the mysterious black tower suppressing everything was too insane and outrageous. It made it difficult for them to recover from their state of shock. They never could’ve imagined that Mu Chen, with his Spirit Stage Late Phase strength, could possess such a powerful and terrifying technique...

“The Freshmen Competition ten days later will definitely be a sight to watch. I really wonder if Mu Chen will be the strongest or if Yang Hong, Mu Kui or Bing Qing will be even stronger than him...”

A few individuals were looking forward towards the competition. The mentioned individuals were at the peak of this year’s freshmen. Moreover, they wanted to know just who is the true number one individual amongst the freshmen.

In the plaza, Zhou Ling and the others watched the emotional freshmen and could not help but smile. Then, they distributed the 170,000 Spiritual Values that they had obtained earlier. Although 170,000 Spiritual Values might seem like a lot, they were still hundreds of freshmen in this place. Every single one of them did

not even obtain 1,000 Spiritual Values, but this was still enough for them to feel grateful towards Mu Chen.

“It seems that your strength has improved once again.” Ye Qingling approached Mu Chen and chuckled.

“I’ve made a breakthrough recently.” Mu Chen smiled. In fact, if it wasn’t for the sudden breakthrough in his Great Pagoda Art, he probably would’ve had to spend a lot of effort to defeat Mo Lun. After all, Mo Lun wasn’t weak at all.

“However, you’ve completely offended that person this time.” Ye Qingling frowned slightly. Mo Lun was truly narrow-minded and petty. Since Mu Chen had directly stolen all his Spiritual Values this time, that guy probably wouldn’t accept it this easily.

Mu Chen smiled. Perhaps there might be trouble, but he wasn’t the type of person who would stop his actions just because it might be troublesome to him in the future. For people with personalities similar to Mo Lun’s, they would only become more arrogant and presumptuous, the more he gave in.

Mu Chen wasn’t someone who didn’t know how to endure. However, it was apparent that Mo Lun wasn’t someone qualified to force him to such an extent.

“Mo Lun probably isn’t a big trouble for you. However, the “Azure Red Community” is something that one should fear.” After Zhou Ling had finished distributing the Spiritual Values, he had walked over as well and said with a serious expression.

“You know what the “Azure Red Community” is?” Mu Chen turned around and asked Zhou Ling.

“The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is too enormous. There are nearly 100,000 students. I don’t know how many are hiding their strength, but with such a large number of students, they would naturally form associations or communities. This forces are tricky and extremely troublesome. Moreover, the “Azure

Red Community" is one of the most famous forces."

Zhou Ling spoke: "Based on what I know, there are many powerful individuals within the Azure Red Community. Moreover, their boss is within the top 100 individuals in the Heavenly Ranking. I'm afraid that his strength has to be at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase, at least."

"Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase..."

Mu Chen's eyes turned serious for a moment. A student with such strength is considered to be outstanding within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. No wonder the people from the Azure Red Community were this arrogant. With such a powerful person backing them up, there was no need for them to look at the freshmen evenly.

Beside him, Ye Qingling, Yan Ling and the others had serious expressions. For them right now, it was difficult for them to compete with such a senior.

"We'll deal with the situation when it occurs. If that Mo Lun really tries to use the Azure Red Community to deal with me, I will naturally fight back." Mu Chen smiled: "I hope that they won't do it. After all, I don't want to cause too much trouble."

Zhou Ling and the others nodded. Right now, they could only hope that the Azure Red Community wouldn't take action because of Mo Lun. Otherwise, it would be quite troublesome for them.

"Also..." Zhou Ling and the others exchanged gazes with each other and spoke hesitantly.

"Just say whatever's in your mind. If I can help, I won't refuse." Mu Chen smiled. Right now, he had a favorable impression on Zhou Ling and the others. These people were truly worth knowing as friends. At the very least, they did not choose to blame him when they suffered because of an overwhelming force.

"Due to of the recent affair with Mo Lun, there are many

freshmen that left our area. However, the ones that remained are all decent individuals...We get together quite well."

Zhou Ling said embarrassedly: "Thus, we've talked for a bit and decided to form an association as well. After all, if we were to group together, we would have more power when others bully us in the future. Moreover, we would be able to help each other when we're in trouble. A group is definitely stronger than one person."

When Mu Chen heard this, he was quite surprised. He never thought that Zhou Ling and the others intended to do such a thing.

"Actually, within this year's freshmen, there are already associations that have begun to emerge. For example, the one with the strongest momentum currently is the Wyvern Association that was formed by Yang Hong. Also, there is the Ironwood Group formed by Mu Kui. In addition, there are many other freshmen forces..." Zhou Ling continued to speak.

Mu Chen was quite shocked. These guys truly acted quickly. They were just admitted to the academy, yet they've already started building up their own cliques...

"If we were to form an association, naturally, we would need someone extremely powerful. Otherwise, we wouldn't be able to maintain the group so..." Zhou Ling directed a smile at Mu Chen.

Seeing this, Mu Chen also smiled. He stared at the anticipating gazes and nodded: "I'm not interested in forming an association, but if you wish to make one, I'm all in for it."

Hearing these words, Zhou Ling and the others were completely overjoyed. However, they immediately twitched and asked: "Also, is it possible for Luo Li to join us as well? Cough, with her in our group, we believe that our popularity would soar..."

With this, Mu Chen completely understood and scolded playfully: "So your objective is Luo Li. It feels that I was just an afterthought for you!"

“How could this be? It’s just that Luo Li’s image is just too strong. She’s beautiful and powerful. Moreover, she has great temperament. Not to mention the freshmen, even among the Seniors at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there are only a handful that could compete with her.” Zhou Ling said embarrassedly.

Mu Chen glanced at them snappily. However, he wasn’t actually unhappy. After all, it wasn’t that he hadn’t seen Luo Li’s charm before. Compared to him, it was indeed easier for her to attract popularity.

“I’ll tell her about it. However, whether or not she’ll join, that will depend on her.” Mu Chen waved and replied.

“I’m counting on you.”

Zhou Ling and the others were delighted. After all, Luo Li was basically disinterested in everything aside from cultivation. If they were to find Luo Li, they would definitely be rejected. However, it was a different story if Mu Chen was the one asking.

Moreover, if their association had both Mu Chen and Luo Li joining, it was evident that their reputation would increase...

Chapter 170 – Cheating

The trouble caused by Mo Lun was finally resolved with the appearance of Mu Chen. This freshman area had once again become free of hindrance. However, news of the sensational fight that broke out were still being spread by word of mouth from so many freshmen that a few seniors have vaguely heard about this fight.

Regarding the outcome, those seniors were obviously surprised. Mo Lun's strength may not be counted as outstanding among the seniors, but no matter what, he was on the verge of breaking through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. Compared to those freshmen who just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, this kind of strength should clearly be somewhat difficult to contend against.

But at present, Mo Lun was actually defeated.

Moreover, he was defeated by a freshman named Mu Chen, who didn't even have to exert himself. This irresistible strength where one has no choice but to yield caused some seniors to be inwardly shocked. Apparently, these newly arrived freshmen seemed to be quite a bit more capable compared with the past freshmen.

Concerning Mo Lun's humiliating defeat, quite a few seniors actually snorted disdainfully. After all, the ones that understood him knew his personality. If he only went to seek trouble for Mu Chen, perhaps no one would say anything. But his actions of obstructing the freshmen had earned people's contempt. Since the students of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had all been freshman once, they were particularly disapproving of Mo Lun's actions.

And so, regarding Mo Lun's defeat and his eventual loss of half a year's worth of accumulated Spiritual Value points, the same thought, that he got what he deserved, was going through many

people's head. Since this time, this guy had been utterly disgraced, let's see if he dares to be so cocky in the future.

Mu Chen couldn't be bothered regarding Mo Lun's humiliation. You reap what you sow. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy didn't have strict rules, the matter this time would not have been simply resolved with just 200,000 Spiritual Value points.

After this matter with Mo Lun had been settled, peace and quiet once again returned to the freshman area. But since Mu Chen was worried that a similar incident may happen again, he decided to stay in the freshman area for a few days to avoid any trouble from emerging.

Fortunately, no trouble appeared. Mo Lun had lost no small amount of face, and so, had disappeared without a trace, not daring to show himself. In these past few days, preparations were already in full swing for the association proposed by Zhou Ling and the others. The people in the freshman area were unanimously in favor of the proposal. After being in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for more than half a month, it became clear to them that the competition at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is extremely intense. In such a competitive environment, the strength of an individual clearly cannot compare to that of a group. As a group, everyone can pull together as one to the benefit of everyone.

Therefore, a resolution on the matter of an association was successfully passed by everyone. Zhou Ling and the others couldn't help but feel a little excited. Even though they had established their strength in the Northern Heavens World, that was only temporary. But now things were different. They will be spending quite a long period of time at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, so it would be worthwhile to put a lot of energy and hard work into this association.

Mu Chen didn't have a lot of interest towards the hustle and

bustle of Zhou Ling's group. While he supported Zhou Ling and the others, that didn't mean that he intended to participate in such complicated business.

On the other hand, Zhou Ling and the others strongly supported Mu Chen's dedication towards cultivation. For their proposal to work, an overbearing power is needed. And as far as they can tell, Mu Chen and Luo Li were their most powerful deterrent.

That was why, during this time that they were in turmoil, nobody went to disturb Mu Chen. Instead, they allowed the latter to enjoy a moment of peace.

Mu Chen sat cross-legged on the top floor of a small house as he was circulating the Great Pagoda Art and absorbed the abundant Spiritual Aura of the world. After all, the freshman area is enveloped by a Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array. The density of the Spiritual Aura was multiple times stronger than the Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array at the Northern Spiritual Academy. By cultivating in this place, his cultivation speed would at least double when compared to the Northern Spiritual Academy.

"A Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array is already this amazing, I really can't imagine how much more frightening a Rank 5 or Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array can be." Curiosity arose in Mu Chen's mind. He had never seen a Spirit Convergence Array at that rank before. Not to mention the Northern Spiritual Realm, even within the Hundred Spirit Continent, there probably aren't many Rank 5 or Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array.

"Luo Li should've entered a Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array to cultivate. It's been so long and she still haven't returned."

Mu Chen shook his head helplessly. He knew Luo Li's personality. For unknown reasons, this quiet and refined girl had such an obsessive fixation regarding cultivation that it even moved Mu Chen. During the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen had rescued her from the hands of other participants. Perhaps the young girl

became slightly touched by him during the moments they spent together that time. In a sense, this caused the kind of feelings between a girl and a boy to sprout.

For ordinary girls, a majority would want to preserve this budding attraction. But instead, Luo Li decided to do the opposite and attempted to kill Mu Chen in order to completely wipe that feeling from her heart.

At that time, she felt that letting this sentiment grow would have hindered her cultivation.

That is why she forcibly suppressed her feelings even though she was unwilling in her heart. But her obsession with cultivation prevailed in the end, and so, the almost half-year long chase to kill him, began.

Luo Li had a very calm personality and it seemed that she was always aloof and disinterested. She would use an observer mentality to quietly watch over the world. But no matter how emotionless she may become, she is still a girl after all.

She didn't know that when she first started developing feelings for this boy, there were certain things that had already escaped her control. As a result, when she finally managed to defeat Mu Chen after half a year and pressed her long sword against Mu Chen's throat, she looked at the youth's helpless expression and suddenly realized that the feelings she had kept suppressed in her heart had already sprouted during the half-year chase. Her insipid feelings had spread throughout her entire heart, unconsciously breaking through her restrictions.

In this dangerous hunt, who is the hunter and who is the prey, who won and who lost, no one could give a clear answer.

And all this was caused by Luo Li's obsessive fixation with cultivation. There were times that Mu Chen developed a sense of pity for that level of obsession, but he never stopped her. Instead, whenever she was spending great effort cultivating, he would

invest an even greater effort than her.

“This girl.”

Mu Chen softly let out a sigh. He was able to tell that Luo Li’s background is definitely not simple. He had been aware of this for long time. The expression of the old man from the Spiritual Value Hall also proved this point. Therefore, this left him feeling puzzled. For Luo Li to have this kind of background, why is she working with such dedication on her cultivation?

From Mu Chen’s understanding of Luo Li, she is not someone who is crazy about cultivation. In fact, Mu Chen could vaguely feel that she had a hint of disgust and resistance towards cultivating, but…

Mu Chen smiled bitterly and shook his head. For the time being, he threw away these thoughts. He knew there would be a day that Luo Li will tell him herself. Since she doesn’t want to talk about it now, Mu Chen naturally will not force her.

Thinking up to this point, Mu Chen decided not to worry any longer. A crystal Spiritual Value Card suddenly appeared on his palm. On the surface, it showed more than 30,000 Spiritual Value.

“Only 30,000.”

Mu Chen twitched his mouth. To obtain the Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence, it was still short 6,970,000 Spiritual Values. It was said that Mo Lun had used up almost six months in order to accumulate 200,000 Spiritual Value. If this is the case, wouldn’t it take more than ten years to collect 7 million Spiritual Value?

“Mu Chen.”

While Mu Chen was feeling helpless about this, Nine Netherbird’s thoughts suddenly sounded out in his heart.

“Hmm?” Mu Chen answered half-heartedly.

“You could go sell Divine Lightning Beads considering they are worth quite a few Spiritual Value.” Nine Netherbird radiated with joy at coming up with this idea. Shortly after, Mu Chen saw a dark black beam of light rush out from within his body.

Rumble.

Along with the appearance of the black beam, rumbling sounds of thunder suddenly roared out. With a stunned gaze, Mu Chen stared at the densely packed silver colored beads that have unexpectedly appeared in the middle of the black beam. These beads were barely thumb-sized and a lightning pattern came into view on the surface of the beads. A power of pure essence radiated forth from within, emitting a deep sound of thunder rolls.

“These are the Divine Lightning Beads? So much?” Mu Chen stared blankly. Immediately, his brows cannot help raise. “How did they come in your possession?”

According to his rough estimate, there are perhaps five hundred Divine Lightning Beads. With 200 Spiritual Value per bead, these beads should be worth 100,000 Spiritual Value in total. It’s no small number.

“When you were cultivating in the Lightning Territory, I was secretly absorbing the power of the divine lightning and then condensed them into these.” Nine Netherbird’s voice was somewhat excited. “Didn’t they say that these could be sold for Spiritual Value? How much are they worth?”

Mu Chen’s face looked a bit strange. At this moment, the Nine Netherbird’s appearance resembled a little peddler who had suddenly stuck a fortune. This is completely different than his former arrogant and prideful attitude.

“100,000 Spiritual Value.” Mu Chen answered.

That’s still quite far from 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points. Well, it doesn’t matter, we can just go to the Lightning Territory several

times. As long as I use my full strength, the speed when condensing Divine Lightning Beads should increase significantly." The Nine Netherbird was slightly depressed and replied in resignation.

"If you go all out, then it would create too much of a disturbance and that sort of disturbance will inevitably be detected by Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's high level experts. Although they might not do anything to you, this is suppose to be a kind of a test for students after all. If you were to do such an act, they might recognize it as cheating. If by any chance they take measures towards this, wouldn't we have wasted all our effort?" Mu Chen smiled bitterly. Regarding this matter, it would be best if they did it in secret. If they were to condense a huge amount of Divine Lightning Beads, it would instead be quite unnatural.

"Then just when would I obtain the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence..." The Nine Netherbird also felt that this was logical, however, it was still somewhat unwilling. In front of him, there was a chance of evolution, but in the end, the so-called Spiritual Value had stopped it.

"Be patient, we have plenty of time." Mu Chen comforted.

"Fine then, you can deal with these Divine Lightning Beads. The next time we go to the Lightning Territory, I'll work discreetly as much as possible to not get caught and condense more Divine Lightning Beads." Nine Netherbird said grudgingly.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded his head. He proceeded to collect the Divine Lightning Beads when suddenly his expression changed. Lifting up his head, he stared into the distance to see a figure of light flying over before finally landing on top of a small house. This figure revealed the graceful and beautiful silhouette of a girl.

When Mu Chen saw this familiar silhouette, he smiled. So she finally finished with her cultivation...

Chapter 171 – Goddess Luo Association

Luo Li gazed at Mu Chen with a faint smile as she appeared on top of the house. After her beautiful eyes examined him, she lit up in pleasant surprise. “You broke through to Spirit Stage Late Phase?”

Mu Chen nodded with a smile and teased. “I really can’t compare to you when it comes to being lost in cultivation.”

Luo Li’s delicate cheeks flushed red as she replied. “I achieved decent results this time cultivating in the Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array.”

Furrowing her delicate eyebrows slightly, she continued. “But I heard some rumors while I was there that Mo Lun tried to find you and cause trouble in retaliation for getting kicked off the Spirit Ranking. That’s why I hurried back just now.”

Mu Chen shook his head helplessly and then recounted the incident with Mo Lun.

After listening to Mu Chen, a trace of chilliness bubbled up on Luo Li’s beautiful face. Biting her red lips, she looked at Mu Chen and said, “I should’ve anticipated this. If I had just stayed here then this kind of incident wouldn’t have happened.”

“It was nothing. He was just a clown.” Mu Chen casually smiled. He had never taken Mo Lun seriously as an opponent.

“Oh right.”

Mu Chen chuckled after he recalled the conversation with Zhou Ling and the others, and then proceeded to explain the proposal to establish an association with Luo Li.

“An association? This would indeed be a lot of power in Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and its power will only continue to grow. If you support their plans then I’ll just act accordingly.” Luo Li’s slim jade finger gently swiped away a strand of hair on her

forehead and did not give this matter further thought. It was just as Mu Chen had anticipated. She had almost no interest in these kinds of things and only agreed because he had been the one to tell her.

Mu Chen couldn't help but smile. Just as he was about to speak, he heard the sound of rushing wind coming from close by. Turning to look, he saw Zhou Ling, Ye Qingling, and the others coming directly towards them.

Zhou Ling glanced over and saw a beautiful silhouette on top of the house. His eyes lit up with sudden joy as he made his way to the top of the house together with Ye Qingling.

"Luo Li, you've finally returned!" Zhou Ling happily said to Luo Li.

Luo Li gave a slight smile in acknowledgement but didn't say anything.

"How's everything? Are you finished with your association business?" Mu Chen interjected laughingly.

"Haha. This actually isn't what we came to talk to you about but the groundwork has already been completed. More than 700 students from our freshman area have already expressed an interest in becoming a member. All that's left is to carefully screen and evaluate the talent of these prospects." Zhou Ling said with a smile.

Mu Chen slightly nod and said. "You can do that on your own. I will most likely not get involved since I'll probably just mess things up."

"Just leave the association business to us. You two are our signboard and only need to maintain your reputation at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. That will be the biggest help." Zhou Ling continued enthusiastically, "When you two occupy the first two spots on the Heavenly Ranking, then our association will

become the most formidable student power at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!”

“You are really reaching for the sky.” Mu Chen was speechless. These people really are quite daring to set their sights on the first two spots of the Heavenly Ranking.

“By the way, what is the name of the association?” Mu Chen suddenly asked.

When Zhou Ling heard this question, he started to chuckle and glanced sideways at Luo Li. “After some discussion, we decided to name the association as the Goddess Luo Association!”

“Goddess Luo Association?”

Not just Mu Chen, Luo Li was also startled after hearing the name. The name made it look as if she personally established the association just to name it after herself.

“Haha. Luo Li is visually stunning. Joining the association would be the same as following a goddess in the eyes of many of the freshmen. Quiet but not cold. Beautiful but not provocative. I dare to say that it won’t take too long before she will become the most popular girl at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.” Zhou Ling said in high spirits.

“We even have the badges ready.”

Zhou Long fished out an exquisite badge from his bosom. The badge was the color of dark azure and had traces of watermarks. In the center, there was a figure dressed in a black dress, a slender and elegant young girl with long hair as resplendent as the Milky Way. Her glass-like eyes were so clear and penetrating that it caused people to become intoxicated.

The corner of Mu Chen’s mouth was slightly drawn. That looks exactly like Luo Li.

“Senseless.” Li Luo’s evaluation caused Zhou Ling’s smile to suddenly turn stiff and awkward.

Mu Chen gave a slight cough and chided with a serious face, "Luo Li is already charming enough to begin with. Accentuating that further like so will only turn all the students wild and lascivious. Won’t this create a headache for me?”

"Well." Zhou Ling scratched his head in contemplation and said. "We could also add your image so that people will know that she is already taken. With this, they won’t dare have other thoughts.”

Mu Chen's eyebrows immediately perked up. His hand forcefully patted Zhou Ling’s shoulders and said in a stern voice. "It is rare to see you come up with a good idea. I’m proud of you.”

Pfff.

On the side, Ye Qingling could not help but laugh out loud. A touch of crimson blush appeared on Luo Li’s delicate cheeks while she stared at Mu Chen in anger and embarrassment.

"Good, then let’s do it like so. Luo Li won't have any objections?" Zhou Ling smiled as he looked to Luo Li for her consent.

Luo Li snappishly looked at Mu Chen before answering. "Do as you wish.”

Zhou Ling became happier after hearing her answer. As expected, getting Mu Chen on their side was key, otherwise, how would Luo Li agree so readily?

“Then it’s settled.” Zhou Ling looked at Mu Chen and said. “Recently, the Wyvern Association and other communities are stepping up their recruitment of members. After all, Yang Hong’s reputation is not low. Not only that, but according to our sources, he has secretly been spreading a rumor that he’s sure to obtain first place at the freshman competition to become the number one student among this year’s freshman.

After hearing this, Mu Chen smiled and said. “He wants to be first but it won’t be that easy.”

“Yes if Yang Hong obtains first place, I’m afraid that we will have

dark days ahead. Therefore, we will be relying on you to snatch first place away from him." Zhou Ling said with a heavy voice. Yang Hong was aware of the recent establishment of the Goddess Luo Association. Perhaps in his eyes, they had long been recognized as Mu Chen's people. With his temperament, he probably would not treat them favorably if he did gain power.

"Our fight is unavoidable." Mu Chen nodded and said with a weak smile, merely the smile was a little bit cold. He had already wanted to fight with this person for a long time. He understood that Yang Hong was thinking likewise.

These two had been restraining themselves for the freshman competition. All of their past grievances and resentment would finally be settled then.

"Since only the two of you can deal with that person, we will leave him to both of you."

Zhou Ling laughed. Afterwards, Mu Chen and the others once again talked about the Goddess Luo Association before taking their leave.

Mu Chen looked at two silhouette fading away into the distance and then turned to look towards the north with ice-cold expression in his eyes.

The guidelines for the freshman competition were unclear at the moment, but Yang Hong was not somebody who was easy to deal with and must not be underestimated." Luo Li whispered. Yang Hong was a peak existence in the Spiritual Road which was enough to show that he's outstanding. With astonishing talent, his methods will not be weak and is someone who Mu Chen regards as worthy opponent.

"Although I can't stand the sight of him, I have to admit that his ability is indeed substantial. To underestimate him is to lack good judgement. I won't do it and he probably won't either. Even though he's outwardly contemptuous and scornful of me, I'm

certain that he remains vigilant and possibly fearful of me in his heart. This person is similar to a viper; I cannot give him any opportunities that he can take advantage of." Mu Chen said while stretching his body.

"Besides Yang Hong, that Mu Kui and Bing Qing are also equally difficult to deal with. Mu Kui's reputation in the Spiritual Road was not inferior to Yang Hong. And that Bing Qing hails from the Ice Spirit Clan of the Great Thousand World, an extremely powerful clan that has existed for a long time. Although Bing Qing did not participate in the Spiritual Road, she is still not the slightest bit weaker than us. They will all be considered favored candidates for the number one spot." Luo Li said softly.

Mu Chen nodded his head. That Mu Kui and Bing Qing really would not be easy to deal with.

"Other than those two, there is still one more person capable enough to become the number one freshman." Mu Chen suddenly laughed while looking at Luo Li. Her strength on the surface is at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, but Mu Chen could vaguely sense that Luo Li has concealed a portion of her strength. Of course, she's not the only one. Even Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing all possess hidden strength that they have not revealed yet.

How can it be simple to be at the level of peak existences from the Spiritual Road or people from the Ice Spirit Clan?

"Who?"

Luo Li was stumped at first, but immediately understood after seeing the playfulness in Mu Chen's eyes. Biting her rosy lips, she inhaled deeply and issued a light humph. "In the event that your luck really is so bad that you meet me, I will forfeit."

Mu Chen started laughing. He waved his sleeves and a ball of black light flew out towards Luo Li. Inside the black light were numerous flickering lightning beads releasing a deep thunder

sound.

“These are Divine Lightning Beads. They are very good for refining Spiritual Energy.

If you had used these Divine Lightning Beads while you were cultivating earlier in the Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array, you would have been able to maximize your cultivation efficiency.”

Luo Li curiously reached out to grab the ball of black light and saw approximately one hundred Divine Lightning Beads inside. She looked up at Mu Chen in surprise and said. “I heard condensing the Divine Lightning Beads is not easy, but you were able to condense this much in just a few days?”

Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders and did not reveal that Nine Netherbird was the one that condensed these Divine Lightning Beads.

“Hum.”

And this time, a low hum reverberated in his mind. This was naturally the Nine Netherbird’s voice, expressing its dissatisfaction with Mu Chen for giving away the fruits of its labor.

“Don’t be cheap. I’ll make it up to you later.”

Mu Chen laughed before he comforted the Nine Netherbird inside his mind. He clenched his hand and the Spiritual Value Card immediately appeared and a screen of light flickered on. On the screen of light was an impressive list of items that could cause people to enter a daze.

Mu Chen’s slender fingers swiped across the screen as his eyes constantly scanned the items that appeared. He also needed to make preparations with the freshman competition near at hand. After all, the opponents this time were not simple.

Mu Chen continued to scroll through the list for half the day before he finally came to a stop. Focusing his eyes on the screen and smiling in satisfaction. “That’s it.”

A dark red, almost indiscernible writing glowed on the screen.

Array of the Great Ifrit. Rank 3 Diagram Array. Selling price: 30,000 Spiritual Value.

Chapter 172 – Spar

The benchmark for entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wasn't low. All of the students that managed to enter this top academy were all outstanding existences from their respective homes. However, this excellence of theirs had dimmed by comparison after they reached the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This is because there were too many brilliant people in this place. In order to shine inside a place where geniuses gathered, it required much more than talent. Perseverance, determination, and effort were all required as well.

Therefore, if anyone managed to stand out within this competitive location, then that person truly possessed the qualifications to become a true powerhouse. Perhaps in the future, his name would resound throughout the vast and endless Great Thousand World and would be remembered for generations.

However, this step was too far away for Mu Chen and the others, who had just recently arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Right now, their primary goal after entering Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, was to face their first competition since arriving.

It was the so-called Freshmen Competition.

The Freshmen Competition was considered to be the first true competition for countless freshmen. In this competition, the outstanding boys and girls from all over the world would begin to emerge and expose their brilliance. Moreover, the tiny brilliance they emitted would eventually become dazzling within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Even those already established within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would value the Freshmen Competition greatly. Seniors within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would also appear, as they wanted to see how strong the freshmen were

this year. Also, they wanted to know if any of them would be able to pose a threat to them.

Because of this, it had even happened in the past that some of the freshmen who stood out within the Freshmen Competition would significantly increase their strength after cultivating for a while. They would even surpass the seniors and become one of the elites within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At the same time, they would earn a place of their own.

Aside from a few exceptions, the big-shots within the Heavenly Ranking were almost all exceptionally brilliant existences within their Freshmen Competition.

Thus, everyone would want to see just which freshmen would become such a force to be reckoned with in the nearby future of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

It was for these reasons that information about the freshmen had spread throughout the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy prior to the Freshmen Competition. Many of the seniors had started paying attention to this year's freshmen.

Due to the seniors being concerned about the freshmen, the information related to the particularly outstanding freshmen had also been known by many seniors. It was evident that Yang Hong, Mu Kui, Bing Qing, Luo Li and the other outstanding students had caught the most attention.

Of course, the most notable individuals were Luo Li and Bing Qing. After all, no matter where you are, beautiful girls would always easily attract attention.

For Luo Li, her appearance and temperament were undoubtedly top-class. Even at such an age, her delicate and exquisite face had already started to show signs of being able to easily attract trouble. It was truly hard to imagine just how attractive she would be when this girl finally blossoms and emitted her charm. In this case, it may perhaps be true that beauty was the root of all trouble.

Although Bing Qing's appearance might not be as exceptional compared to Luo Li's, she had a unique temperament as well. Her icy-blue long hair and slender body were outstanding as well.

It was apparent that these four individuals were highly valued by the seniors. This is because the freshmen that managed to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at the Heavenly Fusion Stage were definitely powerful individuals.

It was destined for these individuals to become powerful people within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Aside from these four individuals, Mu Chen's name had also emerged from a few seniors. This is all related to the battle that Mu Chen had that day with Mo Lun.

Although Mo Lun wasn't particularly outstanding among the seniors of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he still possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. Since Mu Chen managed to defeat him with his Spirit Stage strength; such news had surprised many people.

It was clear that many people had seen him as a dark horse within the Freshmen Competition. However, whether this dark horse would manage to shock the freshmen that stood on the pinnacle such as Yang Hong as the others, it would all depend on the Freshmen Competition...

This year's Freshmen Competition was truly quite interesting.

As the Freshmen Competition approached, the freshmen were doing everything they could to increase their strength. They used all possible means to become slightly stronger before the Freshmen Competition started.

This tense atmosphere enveloped all the freshmen areas. Even within the freshmen area that Mu Chen and the others reside, the cultivating atmosphere was quite rich. People could be seen everywhere sitting cross-legged to cultivate or having spars with

others.

At the center of this freshman area, there was a clear lake. However, the lake's surroundings were filled with many figures. Every one of them had widened their eyes as they stared curiously at the lake.

On this sparkling lake, two figures were standing on top of the water. One of them was a boy with a slender figure and under the faint sunlight, his handsome face was filled with gentleness.

Opposite to him, there was a girl in a black dress. Her supple hair flowed down like a waterfall. As for her glass-like eyes, it seemed even clearer than this lake and was quite attractive to others.

These two individuals were naturally Mu Chen and Luo Li. Judging from their appearances, it was evident that they were going to spar. With the upcoming Freshmen Competition, even these two had to urgently increase their strength. Therefore, sparring became a decent method of doing so.

Near the lake, there were many freshmen staring curiously and all of them had the same badge on their chest. On this badge, there was an image of a girl in black dress. Beside this girl, there was a slender boy smiling slightly. His appearance was quite sunny and handsome.

This was the badge of the Goddess Luo Association. It was evident that the people here were all members of the Goddess Luo Association.

"I'll bet that Sister Luo Li will be the victor..."

"Brother Mu isn't someone simple either. It wouldn't be easy for her to win."

"You've never seen Sister Luo Li's true abilities before. I believe that in this year's Freshmen Competition, Sister Luo Li will become the number one freshmen."

Many whispers resounded out near the lake. A few people had

eyes filled with expectations. After all, the two individuals in front of them were considered the most outstanding students within the freshmen. Their spar would definitely be quite a sight.

While the countless individuals murmured, and stared at the lake, Mu Chen suddenly narrowed his eyes. A ripple slowly spread out from his feet. At the same time, his body turned into a figure of light as he rushed over towards Luo Li at an extraordinary speed.

“Swish!”

Before he arrived, a sharp golden light of dozens of meters had extended out from two of Mu Chen’s fingers. In a split second, it had already appeared in front of Luo Li.

“Bang!”

However, just as this sharp golden light was about to hit Luo Li, the latter smiled slightly and the water in front of her suddenly exploded. A torrent of water rose into the sky. Under her surging Spiritual Energy, this rapid torrent reformed into a shield and protected her.

Puchi.

When the golden light penetrated into the veil of water, it had extended furiously. But just when it was about to break through the veil of water, it froze and dispersed into the air. The Spiritual Energy within the golden light had been forcibly destroyed by the veil of water.

While this sharp golden light was blocked by the veil of water, a figure had approached over like a phantom. This figure’s hand had clenched into a fist as it blasted out a punch without hesitation. Four Limitless Death Seals instantly emerged.

With overbearing power, the Four Limitless Death Seals rushed into the veil of water. The violent and domineering power within it immediately shattered the veil of water and water sprayed everywhere. The overbearing waves of Spiritual Energy impacted

and overlapped as they broke through the veil of water and surged over towards Luo Li.

Luo Li watched as the veil of water was destroyed. However, against the violent black Spiritual Energy impact, she merely stretched out her slender hand and rotated slightly. At this moment, an azure Spiritual Energy poured out like a flood from her and quickly formed into a vortex of Spiritual Energy.

Once this high-speed circulating vortex appeared, the nearby Spiritual Aura of the world had rushed in and caused the azure vortex to become clearer. At the same time, a mysterious fluctuation emitted out.

The attack formed by the four overbearing Limitless Death Seals bombarded fiercely against this azure vortex. However, the Spiritual Energy vortex had circulated rapidly and completely diffused the impact from the Limitless Death Seal.

If the Limitless Death Seal was overbearing and domineering, then this azure Spiritual Energy vortex was quite a soft technique. Although it seemed quite fragile, by circulating endlessly, it had completely dispersed the powerful impact formed by the Limitless Death Seals.

It was an extremely brilliant method of using softness to conquer strength.

When Mu Chen saw the diminishing black Spiritual Energy within the azure vortex, his eyes were filled with surprise. Luo Li's techniques were quite peculiar.

And just when Mu Chen was surprised by this technique, the azure Spiritual Energy vortex suddenly paused for a moment, and an abnormally dense Spiritual Energy surged out. The seemingly gentle vortex seemed to expose its true fangs at this moment. Accompanied by a roar of a Sea Beast, this Spiritual Energy had surged over towards Mu Chen's chest.

Mu Chen's eyes instantly flashed. At this moment, dark glow appeared on the surface of his body and a black light tower slowly emerged.

When the Spiritual Energy impact smashed onto the black light tower, a crisp sound rang out. Shockwaves also rippled out from the surface of the illusory light tower.

Explosions erupted out from the lake that the two individuals were fighting. Columns of water rose up into the sky before it poured down like a massive rain. This caused everyone's line of sight to become blurry.

When the raindrops appeared in front of their eyes, Luo Li's body suddenly moved. She gripped her hand tightly and the black longsword appeared in her hand. As she rushed forward, the black longsword seemed to have penetrated through the rain and stopped in front of a person's throat.

The water droplets that filled the sky eventually faded away and everyone had regained their sight.

At this moment, Luo Li chuckled as she stared at Mu Chen, who was in front of her. Her longsword had stopped in front of Mu Chen's chest.

"It seems that it was my victory." Luo Li smiled as she waved the sword in her hand.

Mu Chen also smiled and lifted his hand up. Then, he slowly opened it. Under Luo Li's stunned gaze, he revealed a lock of silver-colored hair.

At this moment, bursts of applause broke out near the lake. The two individuals' battle was extremely quick, yet it was quite dangerous. If it was a true battle, Luo Li's longsword wouldn't have stopped. As for Mu Chen, he wouldn't have just taken out a wisp of long hair from her.

In the audience's eyes, these two individuals were outstanding to

the extent that they ought to worship them. They really wanted to know, when these two finally let go of everything and thoroughly revealed their abilities, just how amazing it would be when they fought?

Fortunately for their curiosity, that day seems to be fast approaching.

Chapter 173 – Heavenly Rankings Rank 2, Li Xuantong

This place was like a fairyland. Within the clear blue skies, white clouds would float around, causing the entire world to seem like it was amidst a faint mist. This mist was extremely strange; it would float downwards, yet it would never disperse. Instead, it would occasionally be swayed by the breeze, and mysterious yet familiar fluctuations emitted outwards from it every so often.

The floating mist was entirely formed from the Spiritual Aura within the world!

In the depths of this fairyland, a gigantic waterfall surged through to the peak of a mountain — like a dragon before it descended straight down. Loud rumbling sounds echoed throughout the skies.

The waterfall was covered with magnificent colors, and a terrifying fluctuation was emitted from it. If one were to sense it carefully, they would discover that this waterfall was actually made of Spiritual Energy!

If this scene was seen by the freshmen within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they would probably be completely dumbfounded. Just the Spiritual Aura emitted out from this place alone, wasn't something that an ordinary person could endure while cultivating.

Sometimes, it wasn't better to be surrounded by dense Spiritual Aura. In a place like this, ordinary students probably wouldn't be able to stay for long, before their meridians would swell up due to the Spiritual Aura. If they were to continue cultivating, it was highly likely that their bodies would explode from the Spiritual Aura...

This place was naturally one of the deepest parts of one of the ten

Rank 7 Spirit Convergence Arrays that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy possessed.

Beneath the waterfall was a blue boulder that protruded outwards. On top of this blue boulder, skinny figure sat cross-legged quietly. A powerful attraction force emanated outwards from him, as he absorbed the floating mist formed by Spiritual Aura into his body endlessly.

Faint lights enveloped the surface of his body, causing it to glow faintly like a rainbow. As he sat at this location, he emitted a peculiar feeling. Even though he could be seen with the naked eye, he seemed to have fused with the world, and was completely untouchable.

Only if someone approached him, would they then discover that the skinny figure was dressed in blue clothes, and had long loose hair. The breeze blew his hair, giving him a mysterious feeling of being completely free. His face was particularly handsome, and had decent proportions. This caused him to exude a unique manly charm.

After cultivating for a long period of time, did he suddenly opened his eyes. Within his eyes, a brilliant luster surged. Then, he slowly exhaled out a clump of white air, and immediately blew on it.

All of a sudden, the white air entered into a rampage — as if extraordinary Spiritual Energy had been injected into it. White light erupted out from within, and formed into a blade of light. It flew towards the waterfall and actually cut it apart.

The boy in blue clothes stared calmly at the gradually recovering waterfall, before lifting his head up to face the distant sky. In that location, a beam of light was rapidly approaching. In a few seconds, it formed into a figure that stopped above the blue boulder on which he was located.

“Is there any news about that guy, Shen Cangsheng?” The boy in

blue clothes stretched for a moment as he asked.

“He accepted a Heaven Rank mission and ran off again. As far as I know, he’s probably tracking down the Jiuyin Sect. Those sneaky bastards killed a dozen students that were gaining experience in the Northern Heavens Continent.” The boy that came was a boy in black clothes. He shrugged his shoulders as he responded.

“Jiuyin Sect?”

The boy in blue clothes smiled, “Although it’s only a run-down force, it’s said that their Sect Leader has the strength of a Heavenly Transform Stage, right? Moreover, they’re specialized in hiding and sneak attacks. That should be a group mission; since Shen Cangsheng decided to hunt them down by himself, he truly is courageous.”

“Are you afraid that he won’t be able to resolve it?” The boy in black clothes smiled.

“That guy is a monster. He even managed to suppress me. For this mere Jiuyin Sect, it’s impossible for them to turn the tables on him.” The boy in blue clothes shook his head and replied.

“During the Freshmen Competition back then, you were only one move away from victory.” The boy in black clothes said.

“Sometimes, a tiny difference may mean that there’s a wide gap between us.”

The boy in blue clothes smiled faintly, “However, I haven’t faced him for nearly a year. I’ve been itching to fight him again. I really want to test how powerful his Divine Judgment Art has become.”

“It seems that you’ve made a breakthrough in your Tianxuan Divine Art.” The boy in black clothes replied in surprise.

“It’s only a little progress.” The boy in blue clothes smiled and asked, “Is there anything interesting that’s occurred recently in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? I’ve secluded myself for nearly three months… Nothing restless occurred right?

“The Judgment Brotherhood is still as overbearing as ever. It can’t be helped. Who told Shen Cangsheng to be within their group? Otherwise, everything has been temporarily peaceful. It seems that everyone has been cultivating in preparation for the Hunting Battle six months from now.” The boy in black clothes pursed his lips and replied.

“Although the Judgment Brotherhood is overbearing, they wouldn’t dare do anything to our “Xuan Clan”. The boy in blue clothes waved his hand and said, “Instead, it’s the others that are quite troublesome. That guy, He Yao, has always been attempting to fight against me. Although he’s only Rank 4 on the Heavenly Ranking, if he were to take action, Su Xuan wouldn’t be able to stop him. However, it’s because he likes her, that he didn’t steal her position.”

“So that’s why he’s been targeting you?”

The boy in blue clothes smiled as he nodded his head. He had an exhausted expression as he spoke, “However, that doesn’t matter. The people ranked in at the top ten of the Heavenly Ranking aren’t weaklings. Every single one of them possesses hidden techniques. However, since I’ve managed to suppress him for so many years, it won't be easy for him to replace me...”

The boy in black clothes nodded his head as well. Although the other might seem to be exhausted, there was no doubt that he had spoken with confidence and arrogance. After all, the boy in front of him was currently Rank 2 on the current Heavenly Ranking, Li Xuantong.

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there was only that monster that could suppress him.

“Ah, right. This year’s freshmen has also arrived in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The Freshmen Competition is tomorrow as well. It’s said that there are a few formidable individuals among this year’s freshmen.”

“Who are they?” Li Xuantong waved his sleeves and asked casually.

“To be precise, there are five individuals that are rather powerful. Yang Hong, Mu Kui and Mu Chen. The last one is rather peculiar. He managed to defeat Mo Lun, who was close to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, with the strength of a Spirit Stage Late Phase. Right now, he’s considered a black horse.”

“As for the remaining two, they are both girls, and are quite outstanding. One is Bing Qing from the Ice Spirit Clan, while the other one is a girl called Luo Li.”

When these words exited the boy’s mouth, he instantly detected that something was wrong. It was apparent that Li Xuantong, who had looked exhausted, immediately stiffened in front of him. Then, the latter slowly turned his head around and asked hesitantly, “Who?”

The boy in black clothes froze for a moment. Then, he repeated the last two names again. However, when he mentioned Luo Li’s name, he noticed that the boy in front of him opened his mouth slightly.

“Luo Li?” Li Xuantong turned his head: “Ah...How is this possible? Why would she come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? What does she look like?”

The boy in black clothes glanced at him strangely, before describing Luo Li’s appearance to him.

“It really is her... I never imagined this.” Li Xuantong smiled and the exhaustion in his face instantly vanished.

“Do you know this Luo Li?” The boy in black clothes asked in surprise. It was the first time that he’d seen the boy in front of him react like this just because he’d heard a girl’s name.

“Ohoho.” Li Xuantong smiled and nodded his head.

The boy in black clothes shrugged helplessly as he spoke, “If

you're interested in her, then I have bad news for you. It seems that she already has someone that she likes. It's that freshman called Mu Chen. If I remember correctly, they're currently living together."

Li Xuantong frowned as he murmured, "How can this be...Ah, no wonder...So the things that I've heard before were really true."

When the boy in black clothes noticed this, he thought for a moment and asked, "Do you need me to teach the freshmen a lesson?"

"If you were to do this, she'd probably get angry."

Li Xuantong shook his head, and slowly stood up. He soon spoke, "She has a stubborn personality. I don't want her to get angry at me."

"This..." The boy in black clothes hesitated for a moment.

"You don't have to bother with this." He smiled and his long hair fell down. He looked towards the exit, and fell silent for a moment before speaking, "Forget it, I'll meet up with her first. I haven't seen her for a few years now. I'll go and see what this is all about... I really dislike hearing this news."

"A love rival? Could it be that she doesn't like you, even with your outstanding qualities?" The boy in black clothes couldn't help but ask.

"Oh... I've always treated her as if she was my younger sister."

Li Xuantong smiled, but once he noticed that the boy in black clothes had curled his lips, he could only reply helplessly, "Although I do like her a bit, she probably dislikes me. However, her situation is rather complicated, eh, but... that Mu Chen really shouldn't stay beside her."

After he had spoken, he took a step forward and lights seemed to fluctuate around him. In an instant, he had appeared a kilometer away. Then, another light fluctuation appeared and he'd

completely vanished.

When the boy in black clothes witnessed this scene, he could only shrug his shoulders in response. It seemed that he truly cared about this girl called Luo Li. He actually stopped his cultivation temporarily, just to meet her.

Freshmen Area.

Within the plaza, numerous freshmen were gathered. Mu Chen and Luo Li were situated at the center of the plaza, and smiled as they watched the members of the Goddess Luo Association cultivate.

At this moment, Luo Li lifted her hand to sweep away the hair that had fallen in front of her face. However, just when she was about to speak, her eyes suddenly focused, and she lifted her head. She stared outside of the plaza. At that location, there was a figure in blue clothes that slowly approached.

This figure was quite strange. Although she could see him clearly, the other individuals seemed to have completely ignored him. They allowed him to walk through the crowded plaza towards them.

Mu Chen was also aware of this scene. His eyes stared firmly at the figure that approached, and his expression turned serious. From this person, he felt a dangerous fluctuation.

The boy in blue clothes soon appeared in front of Mu Chen and Luo Li. Then, he smiled faintly at Luo Li and said, “Long time no see, Luo Li.”

After he appeared, the freshmen within the plaza finally noticed the uninvited guest and immediately gathered together. They stared in alarm at the boy in blue clothes.

Luo Li’s glass-like eyes stared at the boy in front of her, and she frowned for a moment. Then she gave a slight nod.

“Li Xuantong, long time no see.”

Chapter 174 – Face-off

Li Xuantong.

When the name came out of Luo Li's rosy little mouth, the originally noisy public square instantly became deathly silent. The expression of the surrounding Goddess Luo Association members became stiff before their eyes bulged out in fear and disbelief.

Li Xuantong? Heavenly Ranking's Rank 2 Li Xuantong?

Gasp.

Everyone looked at each other in dismay before fiercely inhaling a mouthful of cold air. He truly is an influential figure among the students of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, very different from these freshmen who recently arrived. He had stood at the top of countless students for a long time. Many even look at Li Xuantong with reverence and admiration.

This mysterious and elusive personage had unexpectedly appeared before their eyes?

Mu Chen stared attentively at this handsome, long-haired youth in front of him. Although he was startled by his counterpart's identity, his eyes contained no reverence or fear but remained undisturbed.

"You really came to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Li Xuantong smiled faintly before his gaze flit across Mu Chen who was by Luo Li's side, an unfathomable expression in his eyes.

Luo Li's head gently nodded and then turned silent, having no intention of carrying on a conversation.

"You still have that temper or yours." Li Xuantong was a little helpless as he smiled. His expression gradually became solemn as he watched Luo Li attentively and chided. "You should not have come here."

“This is my business.” Luo Li replied as her fine eyebrows slightly knitted.

When the surrounding people heard their conversation, a look of suspicion appeared on their faces. There seem to be some history between Luo Li and Li Xuantong.

“Is that news true?” Li Xuantong pursed his lips and slowly continued. “I really didn’t expect that you would also have impulsive moments.”

Luo Li remained silent and slightly lowered her eyes, but her sparkling, glass-like eyes were still shining brightly. She had never regretted the things she had done.

“Is it because of him?” Li Xuantong said indifferently as his gaze finally rested on Mu Chen.

Luo Li’s eyes narrowed as she walked forward half a step to stand in front of Mu Chen, but a hand abruptly extended out to hold her tender, lily-white hands. She was slightly dazed when she saw Mu Chen shaking his head and smiling at her.

He is clearly not going to stand behind her in this situation and have her deal with this line of questioning. That’s not something a man can do.

Mu Chen held Luo Li’s lily-white hands and then looked toward Li Xuantong and said. “This Mu Chen greets Senior Li Xuantong.”

Li Xuantong acknowledged Mu Chen but did not speak; however, the students in the public square nevertheless could detect an oppressive aura slowly spread out from Li Xuantong’s body, causing the air flow in the public square to slow down.

Some of the students nearby could not help but step back before the stifling sensation in their heart slightly eased.

Mu Chen’s expression remained calm and his figure remained unmoving. Although Li Xuantong is giving him an oppressive sensation similar to a devastating tornado, he did not retreat back

an inch.

That suffocating atmosphere emerged quickly and disappeared just as quick. But when that oppression dissipated, even Zhou Ling and the others felt a cold sweat running down their back and their hearts begin to tremble soon after. Just how strong is Li Xuantong? He did not even move and yet he had already exhausted their strength and their fighting spirit.

Li Xuantong's eyes suffused with a faint light as he looked at Mu Chen and said. "If you didn't take action just now, I would have lost any interest in talking to you."

"It was my pleasure." Mu Chen gave a noncommittal smile. This Li Xuantong seems like a mischievous person but actually have a penetrating-to-the-bones sense of pride. His abilities also possesses this unyielding quality.

"However," Li Xuantong slowly withdrawn his gaze and continued, "For your own good and also her own good, you had better leave her."

A chill suddenly flit across Luo Li's clear glass-like eyes. She wanted to speak but Mu Chen dissuaded her. He gazed at Li Xuantong, smiled, and said. "This request, I'm afraid that you will have to forgive me for not obliging. You treat me as if I'm chasing something too great for me. I know that it will be very difficult and maybe I will be beaten black and blue, but…"

He held Luo Li's penetratingly ice-cold but exceedingly tender and lovely hands before smiling. "Some things are worth pursuing. Even if this road will be difficult, I will still continue walking."

Li Xuantong creased his brows and slowly said in a cold voice. "You don't have the slightest idea what burden she has to bear. This world has never been fair and that is why she can never be like ordinary girls."

"Her coming to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should

be because of you. Did you know that time is extremely precious to her? So much precious time was squandered because of you. You indulge in the time you spend together with her, but did you even know what kind of price she had to pay in return?”

“Your conduct is what one would consider as selfish and nothing more.”

Li Xuantong sneered. “So you do not deserve her.”

Mu Chen wrinkled his brows at this time. He could feel the delicate hand in his grasp gradually becoming colder as he asked. "What do you mean?”

“In order to gain her freedom these past two years, she had to pay a heavy price.” Anger and heartache flashed in the depths of Li Xuantong’s eyes as he solemnly answered.

Zing!

Before his voice died out, the sharp and clear sound of a sword unsheathing suddenly echoed out. All of the Spiritual Aura in the area seems to frantically fluctuate at this time

An indescribable sword light soared up toward the sky and blossomed into a flower before everyone’s eyes. Soon after, Luo Li already appeared in front of Li Xuantong unsheathing a black colored long sword. Right when the sword left the scabbard, the sword point that is reflecting an incandescent sword light halted in front of Li Xuantong. The sword point was still trembling and appeared to even cut apart the empty air.

“Li Xuantong, although we can be considered friends, you are interfering too much in my business. I don’t want to fight you so don’t force me.” An icy aura rushed forth from Luo Li’s clear glass-like eyes, her voice penetratingly cold.

Li Xuantong looked at the trembling sword point in front of him but did not move as he stared at the young girl’s delicate complexion. This is the first time in all the years he had known her

that he had seen her get this angry, and to defend a man no less.

But that man was not him.

An imperceptible darkness swept past Li Xuantong's eyes before he slowly said. "For him, is it worth it? Your situation, you understand what will happen if this continues."

Luo Li looked at Li Xuantong wordlessly as she lightly nodded her charming and delicate chin. A soft look appeared in the depths of her clear glass-like eyes. She did not care if it was worth it or not. She only knows that since he appeared, her previously colorless world had become full of life. What she had once thought was just dull and dry cultivation had now become a source of hope and anticipation.

She knows that when they are together, she was able to gently laugh.

Mu Chen pursed his lips and walked forward unhurriedly. Placing his fingers upon the sword, he pressed it down while looking over at Li Xuantong. "Senior Li Xuantong, I do not know what kind of compromise she had to make to come here, but when she told me in the Spiritual Road that she wants to stand by my side and even blocked a cold arrow for me, I knew that I will stand by her side in the same way that she will stand by mine, no matter what may come."

Li Xuantong stared indifferently at Mu Chen, shaking his head and said. "I can't agree with you right now. What qualifications do you have to stand in front of her and take on her burden? Those things are still too far from you."

"So I'll become strong." An unwavering and persistent smile appeared on the young and handsome face. He may not be strong enough right now, but he believes there will be a day that he will possess the qualification.

"Confidence is a good thing, but the reality is crueler than you

think.”

Li Xuantong frowned as he stared at Mu Chen and said. “I won’t change my mind because of your words. In my eyes, you do not deserve her so I will stop you.”

“In that case.” Mu Chen smiled, his black eyes gradually becoming chilly. “Then I will have to defeat you senior, so that you will not casually interfere again. ”

“You are too arrogant.”

Li Xuantong faintly smiled and said. “But like I said, you currently do not have the qualification. If you want to challenge me, at the minimum wait until you are able to become the number one freshman. If you can’t even accomplish this much, you don’t need to challenge me. I can’t afford to lose this person.”

Luo Li’s icy cold eyes stared at Li Xuantong.

“Luo Li, this is a problem between men. At the very least, I have to commend his courage to challenge me. If he didn’t even have courage, I would have directly kick him out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy even if that will make you angry at me. So this kind of challenge, you don’t have to get involved. If I can’t at least do this much, then how can I protect you?” Li Xuantong said as he looked at Luo Li’s eyes.

Mu Chen pulled Luo Li’s small hands as he stared at Li Xuantong and softly said. “Then I’ll have to ask senior for your patience, I’ll take your position on the Heavenly Ranking.”

Li Xuantong smiled indifferently and wordlessly waved at Luo Li before turning around and slowly walks away.

“I’ll attend the Freshman Competition tomorrow. I hope that your performance will be able to impress me. Luo Li's insight should not disappoint me. Otherwise, I’m afraid that you will face extremely difficult situations from now on at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

Chapter 175 – Freshman Competition

As the following day approached, the freshman area positively boiled over with anticipation. All of the freshmen were eager to get into action as their eyes burned red-hot with passion.

To them, the Northern Heavens World was just a test, however, the Freshmen Competition was where they could truly prove themselves. Only those who distinguished themselves on this stage would be qualified to establish their own legacy at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

And the Freshman Competition will be especially fierce since it will be the first tournament for the freshmen after arriving at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!

The mood was no different in the freshmen area where Mu Chen resided. Approximately one thousand freshmen had converged at the public square wearing a “Goddess Luo Association” badge. Clearly, they were members of the association.

As they stood in the middle of the public square, both Mu Chen and Luo Li could sense a palpable feeling of excitement pervading the world. Embers glowed in the eyes of the former as if it was on the verge of burning.

“Mu Chen. We will be aiming for first place as well, so you better not lose to us! We don’t care if you can’t keep up with us!” Zhou Ling and company laughed loudly and jested. They had also prepared for a long time for today.

Mu Chen smiled and said. “Bring it on.”

“Big Sister Luo Li. Brother Mu is too arrogant. You have to crush his ego and take first place away from him!” Several freshmen jeered mischievously, attracting others who echoed their sentiment. Clearly, Luo Li’s opinion is paramount in the Goddess Luo Association.

Luo Li looked at the scene in front of her as a very faint smile appeared on her delicate and charming face. Her beautiful eyes glanced at Mu Chen and she quipped. “You have to be careful.”

Mu Chen couldn’t help but smile upon seeing this and replied. “In that case, don’t blame me for being impolite.”

Gales of laughter erupted in the public square. The people present knew the relationship between Mu Chen and Luo Li. The usually quiet and demure Luo Li will only show that beautiful smile that would cause one’s heartbeat to quicken in front of Mu Chen.

“Good. If all of you are ready then let's set off, follow me.” A beam of light came towards them, Teacher Mu Ling appeared in mid-air, looking down at the many students with a charming smile.

“Let’s go!”

Mu Chen took the initiative to charge out as he waved his hands signaling the others to follow. Figures in all direction immediately rushed forward under Mu Ling’s lead, blotting out the sky and covering the earth as they rushed forth, through the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, to the northwest.

A similar scene was being played out at the same time in the other freshmen areas as multitudes of students moved out like a locust swarm, casting a huge shadow across the land.

This was a sight to behold.

Many seniors were also on the move elsewhere in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The academy attached considerable importance to the Freshman Competition since the individuals who stand out in this tournament will inevitably become important figures within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, these seniors wanted to use this opportunity to identify freshmen that could threaten them in the future.

Mu Chen and the rest continued to follow Mu Ling westward for more than ten minutes before slowing down. Then, they stopped under a large shadow.

Mu Chen and the others were currently staring ahead at an enormous mountain range. One mountain in particular stood at ten thousand zhang in height and towered above the rest. At a glance, this colossal mountain had even obscured the sky.

The air looked slightly hazy in the skies above this mountain, vaguely forming into a thunderstorm as waves of astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations propagated out.

Located inside these mountains was a vast open field that is currently filling up with figures. All of the freshmen had been gathered here, leading to their chatter clamoring until it resounded into the skies.

Swish!

A beam of light slowly approached from the distant sky when the last of the freshmen had arrived, but the slow looking beam appeared in the sky overhead only a moment later, as if it had teleported.

The light dissipated to reveal three figures; the two to the sides were elderly men dressed in green gowns, with white beards, solemn expressions, and mysterious eyes that seem to flicker with lightning.

A figure in a white gown was standing between these two elders. His appearance was peculiar; he had a head full of white hair yet he had a handsome and youthful face. His skin was fair, his bearing did not befit that of the elderly, and his beaming smile gave people an exceedingly good-natured impression.

Mu Chen and the others simultaneously turned to look at the three imposing figures suspended in midair. They were able to sense that the appearance of the three men had caused all the

Spiritual Aura in the world to continuously rush toward them as if they had control of all the Spiritual Aura in the area.

“These three are elders of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The one standing in the middle is particularly distinguished; he is ranked as one of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Heaven Class Elders.” Mu Ling explained to Mu Chen and company as she gazed respectfully at the three in the sky.

“Heaven Class Elder.” Mu Chen and the others were stunned when they heard this. They have now gained a better understanding of the academy. For example, the Elders’ positions are divided into Heaven Class Elders and Earth Class Elders. Heaven Class Elders are rarely seen at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy so the students did not expect that the youthful-looking, white-gowned man to be one.

“Haha, it seems that this Freshman Competition is livelier than ever.”

In the sky, the youthful-faced man in the white gown beamed at the endless sea of students on the field below. When he waved his sleeves, the deafening clamor around the field immediately quieted down.

“New kids. This old man is Zhu Tian. I’m here to welcome you all as new members of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. I will be in charge of this year’s Freshman Competition.” The white gowned man said smilingly. His appearance did not change as he stared at the freshmen above and below. However, this old man, whose head was filled with white hair, felt particularly strange to the them.

But they did not dare to laugh when faced with this strange feeling. This is because even a fool can tell that the person before their eyes held frightening ability and status.

"Oh yes. This Freshman Competition will be slightly different; it

will no longer be simple arena matches."

Zhu Tian pointed his finger toward the towering mountain in the stood out in the center of the mountain range behind him and laughed. "The Freshman Competition this time around is very straightforward. There is a Spiritual Flag at the peak of the Northern Spirit Mountain. Whoever gets to the summit the mountain first and captures the Spiritual Flag will become the champion of the Freshman Competition."

Sounds of shock and astonishment immediately were heard around the field; was it really that simple?

"Of course, there are a lot of Spiritual Beasts in the mountains and even Heaven Ranked Spiritual Beasts on the Northern Spirit Mountain." Zhu Tian continued smilingly.

"Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts?" Many freshmen stared blankly before bitterly sighing. This Freshman Competition really is not that simple.

For the first five students to reach the summit of the mountain: first place will be rewarded 500,000 Spiritual Value points, second place will be rewarded 400,000 points, and so on." Zhu Tian beamed and said. "Of course, the most important point is that the top five will gain permission to enter into the Spiritual Arts Temple, where you may even be able to obtain the Deity Tier Spiritual Arts, if you are lucky."

"Deity Tier Spiritual Arts?"

The countless freshmen inadvertently inhaled in a breath of cold air before a fire ignited in their eyes. A Deity Tier Spiritual Art is worth countless incredibly strong treasures and possessed a fatal attraction to many of the students.

"That's quite generous of them."

Mu Chen involuntarily smacked his lips. Deity Tier Spiritual Art. His heartbeat quickened as he turned his gaze toward the peak that

towered over the layers and layers of mountains. But he suddenly wrinkled his brows. He didn't know why but he had a feeling that the situation was not as simple as it seemed.

“Oh. I think this is obvious so I won’t elaborate. There will not be many rules—everything will be fair game.” Zhu Tian smiled before waving his sleeves; a sharp and crisp ring resonated throughout the heavens and earth.

“I announce the start of this year’s Freshmen Competition!”

Rumble!

When Zhu Tian’s jocular voice reverberated through the world, the field instantly began to quake as countless pillars of Spiritual Energy soared up into the sky. Many students moved out like a plague of locusts and directly surged towards the endless mountains.

At this moment, the entire world seemed to tremble.

Standing up in the sky, Zhu Tian couldn’t help but smile when he witnessed this tumultuous scene; but the corners of his mouth lifted in a somewhat playful smirk.

“What about that powerful guy at the peak of the Northern Spiritual Mountain? You did not warn them about him.” The two old men behind Zhu Tian informed.

Eh?” Zhu Tian appeared to be stumped for words before he hit his head in annoyance and replied. “How could I forget? It’s regrettable but youngsters always need a little motivation to arouse their potential.

The two white-haired elders glanced at each other and shook their heads helplessly. This person is intentionally making things difficult for the freshmen this time.

As the masses of freshmen surged into the mountain range, a figure flashed in the distance as he swept out in the northern sky. Li Xuantong held his hands behind his back as his expressionless

eyes were looking in that direction.

If that person called Mu Chen can’t even compete with these freshmen, then Luo Li will need to break up with him. He will have no choice but to show himself out.

Chapter 176 – Northern Spirit Mountain

At this moment, the originally peaceful mountain seemed as if it had been attacked by an earthquake. Both the mountain and the earth were trembling. Moreover, the roars of countless Spiritual Beasts resounded from within the mountain.

At the border of the mountains, a dense mass of humans was entering like a pack of ants as they rushed overwhelmingly into the vast mountain range that is covered in towering trees.

But when the mass of humans entered the mountain range, angry roars burst out from within the mountains as the ground split open and numerous Spiritual Beasts lunged out to begin their assault on the humans. From the distance, packs of vicious Spiritual Beasts flapped their wings in the skies as they attempted to banish the sudden intruders.

However, their attempts were futile as the sea of people collided with the approaching Spiritual Beasts. Violent Spiritual Energy surged out and lit up the sky in bright colors.

Sounds of angry roars and fighting resounded together as a steady stream of Spiritual Beasts descended from the mountains. The freshmen had gradually slowed down and was split into numerous groups as they advanced toward the deepest mountain which symbolized glory for them.

The group with Mu Chen and the others had quickly split apart as well. However, a dozen members of the Goddess Luo Association and Luo Li had managed to remain together with Mu Chen. With Mu Chen and Luo Li leading the group, their pace of advance was quite fast and the dozen Goddess Luo Association's members closely followed as they fought off the Spiritual Beasts approaching from the sides.

At this moment, Mu Chen had two fingers straighten up and a golden glow emitted from them. It formed a golden spear and

would pierce through the approaching Spiritual Beasts whenever it was fired off.

Mu Chen's gaze swept out in all directions as he quickly cleared away the fearless Spiritual Beasts. At that moment, there were a few groups which had also advanced at an extraordinary speed. It was evident that the ones leading these groups were considerably powerful.

"Let's speed up."

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the towering mountain in the depths of the mountain range. That mountain extended into the clouds and the peak could not be seen from below. Anyone who managed to reach that place would be able to come out on top.

Mu Chen exhaled gently as he looked towards Luo Li. He let out a quiet battle cry before allowing the Spiritual Energy within his body to explode outwards. The golden light emitting from his two fingers seemed to have turned into two divine spears as they forcibly tore apart the stream of Spiritual Beasts

In response, Luo Li also nodded her head. Her slender hand tightly gripped her black longsword. However, the longsword did not exit its scabbard; instead, a black sword beam swept out. This beam was simply unstoppable. Each time the sword beam flashed by, a Spiritual Beast would be cut into two pieces. Moreover, the wounds were cut so sharply that they were as smooth as a mirror. This sharpness had even slightly shocked Mu Chen.

With their accelerated pace, they had quickly reached the depths of the mountain range. However, the Spiritual Beasts that appeared had also become more and more powerful. Every single Spiritual Beast that appeared would have at least reached the Spirit Stage.

Against these Spiritual Beasts, Mu Chen and Luo Li still managed to remain the same pace. However, the members of the Goddess Luo Association, who were behind them, were gradually unable to

keep up and had slowed down.

“Brother Mu, Sister Luo Li. You two should go ahead and attempt to take the Spirit Flag. This will make our Goddess Luo Association become a bit more famous!” Seeing that they could not keep up with Mu Chen and Luo Li, the members of the Goddess Luo Association shouted out and slowed down their pace.

“Okay!”

Mu Chen smiled and waved towards them. Then, he exchanged gazes with Luo Li before the two of them turned into figures of light as they surged forward. At this moment, both of them had pushed their Spiritual Energy to their limits. Dense Spiritual Energy swept out and forcibly blasted away the Spiritual Beasts that lunged towards them. Using this gap, they had passed through the pack of Spiritual Beasts at lightning speed.

Swish!

Just when Mu Chen and Luo Li began to reveal their true power, dense Spiritual Energy fluctuations suddenly erupted from the other directions. Several figures separated from their forces and rushed forth by themselves towards the towering mountain.

At this moment, the ones that dared to leave their groups were all powerful. Among the freshmen, they were considered to be the best of the best. Therefore, they were the main force that would rush towards the towering mountain in the depths of the mountain range.

Seeing this, Mu Chen and Luo Li no longer held back their strength. They began to reveal their powerful techniques and forcibly cut a path through the Spiritual Beasts. Although the Spiritual Beasts had pressured them slightly, they did not manage to slow down their pace.

Thus, ten minutes later, Mu Chen and Luo Li had eventually reached the bottom of the Northern Spirit Mountain. As they

approached, they were able to feel how majestic this mountain was. They felt that they were like ants standing at the base of the mountain. Even if they raised their heads and looked up, they weren't able to see the peak of this mountain. Furthermore, they detected an extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation from within this massive mountain.

It was evident that these Spiritual Beasts were the true obstacles for them.

As Mu Chen punched out, surging Spiritual Energy had erupted out and blown away a massive Spiritual Beast. Just when Mu Chen and Luo Li entered the mountain, Mu Chen's expression changed and he stared to their right. At that location, a dozen individuals rushed over. It was evident that these individuals weren't friendly.

On these people's chests, there was a badge with a wyvern entrenched in it.

Apparently, these individuals were members of the Wyvern Association.

"They were sent by Yang Hong to stop us."

Luo Li's gentle voice rang out. It was clear that she also detected these individuals as well.

"Stay right here!"

When these individuals from the Wyvern Association noticed that Mu Chen and Luo Li had already discovered them, the one leading this group had shouted. He rushed out as dense Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body. From the surging Spiritual Energy, it was clear that he had already reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. However, his Spiritual Energy was quite unstable, and it was evident that he had only recently advanced due to external forces.

At the same time, the people behind him had also activated their Spiritual Energy. Every single one of these individuals possessed

the strength of a Quasi-Heavenly Fusion Stage.

This formation was quite powerful. It seemed that Yang Hong had used the elites of his Wyvern Association to delay the two of them.

In this area, there were still other individuals. However, they did not take any actions once they noticed this scene. After all, this was a battle between the Wyvern Association and the Goddess Luo Association. There was no need for them to intervene. Instead, they could take advantage of the interference to speed up their pace.

“Leave that guy to me. Let’s end this quickly.”

A hint of coldness flashed through Mu Chen’s eyes. He pushed off from the ground and turned into a beam of light as he lunged straight towards the approaching figure.

Just when Mu Chen rushed over, Luo Li had also slowly clenched her black longsword as she made her way towards the dozen Wyvern Association’s elite.

“Mu Chen. It’s not your turn to obtain the title of the Number One Freshmen!”

The one facing Mu Chen sneered. This boy was also someone who was at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. He, too, was assessed as King-Class. Regarding the level of excellence he showed, he had even surpassed Zhou Ling and the others. Since he was quite close with Yang Hong, he naturally did not like Mu Chen.

“Destructive Spirit Fist!”

This person had a prideful tone as he spoke. However, he could back it up as he wasn’t weak at all. As he stood in midair, he unleashed a punch and dense Spiritual Energy surged out. A powerful wind was formed with killing intent from this punch as it bombarded towards Mu Chen.

Against this powerful offensive, Mu Chen's eyes remained calm. He clenched his hands tightly and blasted out a punch as well. Four Limitless Death Seals were quickly condensed and formed into a beam of black light as it collided against the opposing attack.

At the same time, the Four Limitless Death Seals exploded and the Spiritual Energy shockwave released from each seal overlapped with each other as they released a powerful destructive energy.

Just when these two attacks collided with each other, the Spiritual Energy formed by the Limitless Death Seal had tore apart the opposing attack in an instant. Then, under this boy's pale expression, it had smashed fiercely against his body.

Puchi.

The boy spat out a mouthful of fresh blood when he was hit and was sent back awkwardly. His face was completely pale and had eyes of disbelief. Although he knew that Mu Chen was powerful, he never imagined that he would be instantly defeated with just one attack.

"Even Yang Hong isn't qualified to stop me. Just who do you think you are?"

Mu Chen's eyes were cold as he stared at the boy in the yellow robe and let out a cold laugh. Then, without wasting any time, he rushed towards the towering mountain.

On the other side, Luo Li had also stopped her attack. The Wyvern Association's elites were all lying down on the ground awkwardly beneath her. At this moment, blood leaked out from their mouth as they stared at Luo Li's beauty with fear.

These dozen individuals were all half-a-step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage. However, even if they had such strength, they did not even manage to delay Luo Li a single bit. The latter's strength was far beyond them.

When the other individuals nearby witnessed this vicious two-

man group's abilities, they were secretly shocked. In order to stop these two individuals, it would require Yang Hong, Mu Kui and Bing Qing to join forces.

However, Mu Chen did not care about the individuals that attempted to stop them. Instead, he charged directly towards the towering Northern Spirit Mountain. As he stared at the mountain, a cold chill flashed through his eyes.

Yang Hong, do you truly believe that you would be able to stop me like this?

I still remember clearly what you've done during the Spiritual Road. Since I can't find Ji Xuan right now, I'll start my revenge on you first...

As Mu Chen and Luo Li entered the Northern Spirit Mountain, a dozen figures of light had also rushed in from various directions. From the North, Yang Hong had an indifferent expression as he stared in another direction with a cold expression.

Mu Chen, I, Yang Hong, am taking the title of the Number One Freshmen. I will make you understand that you're not qualified to even struggle in front of me!

Chapter 177 – Reaching the Summit

At this moment, two figures were dashing through the towering Northern Spirit Mountain one after another. Powerful Spiritual Energy was emitted out towards their surroundings as if they were prepared to deal with any unexpected events.

Behind the two of them, there were a few individuals following them from a distance. However, they were still separated from each other by quite a bit. After all, everybody was regarded as competitors right now. Unless they had a relationship like Mu Chen and Luo Li, they would remain vigilant and alert against the other individuals.

Although the numbers of Spiritual Beasts hiding in ambush had decreased since they'd entered the Northern Spirit Mountain, every single one of these Spiritual Beasts was incredibly powerful. Even the weakest Spiritual Beast was able to contend against a Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouse. Since they would come at them in swarms, it would take some time for Mu Chen and the others to deal with them.

All of a sudden, a sharp sound resounded from above them. At this moment, the vast forest seemed to have been split open, and numerous large bird-type Spiritual Beasts descended from above. Their metal-like claws tore through the air as they rushed down fiercely towards Mu Chen and Luo Li.

In response, Luo Li gently jumped off a tree branch, and her slender figure charged forth towards the Spiritual Beasts. Her slender hand grasped onto the black longsword and swept it through the air. A black sword beam was unleashed and it passed through three bird-type Spiritual Beasts that could each individually deal with a Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouse.

As the black sword beam passed through the three bird-type Spiritual Beasts, the three Spiritual Beasts issued out a strange cry,

before they were cut in half. Fresh blood rained down onto the ground, accompanied by their organs.

Luo Li's attack was straightforward and powerful. She wasn't delayed at all, even when she had to deal with this obstacle. In an instant, she'd managed to catch up with Mu Chen, who was in front of her.

"We've approached the middle of the mountain. If we continue further on, it'll be within the range of the peak of the mountain." Mu Chen lifted his head and stared above. His eyes had turned slightly serious. After all, it would be truly troublesome once they'd reached the peak of the mountain. There would be Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts at that location. Moreover, they didn't know the quantity and rank of the Spiritual Beasts. If a powerful one appeared, it'd be difficult for even a person with Heavenly Fusion Stage strength to pass through.

"Be careful." Luo Li spoke softly. She had also detected that there were dangerous fluctuations being emitted from the top of the mountain.

Mu Chen nodded his head. All of a sudden, a roar resounded out directly in front of them. This roar contained a violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation. Moreover, this fluctuation had forcibly shattered a few of the trees once it emerged.

Mu Chen and Luo Li's eyes focused instantly at this moment. To be able to have such an imposing manner, it must be a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast.

"Ah!"

Once this extraordinary roar rang out, a few screams also resounded out. Mu Chen and Luo Li hurriedly rushed over. Then, they noticed that a deep-yellow giant python was occupying this area. Numerous stone engravings covered the giant python's body, causing it to seem to be made out of boulders. Its hideous mouth revealed numerous jagged teeth, as saliva slowly dripped down.

Once the saliva touched the ground, it encroached upon and formed a hole on the ground.

At this moment, there were a dozen individuals retreating from the surroundings of this giant python. All of them had pale expressions. It was evident that they were gravely injured.

When Mu Chen and Luo Li noticed this giant python, their eyes turned serious as they quickly identified it.

Mountain Devouring Python —a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast which was ranked 86th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking.

An adult Mountain Devouring Python wasn't something that a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase powerhouse could deal with. However, Mu Chen and Luo Li were slightly relieved once they've noticed that this Mountain Devouring Python was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. However, even if it was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, its power couldn't compare with the Wyvern Association's men from earlier.

"Hiss!"

The ravaging Mountain Devouring Python suddenly stopped moving with the emergence of Mu Chen and Luo Li. Its savage triangular pupil stared at these two individuals as it hissed. It was evident that it could detect a dangerous fluctuation being emitted from both Mu Chen and Luo Li.

This Mountain Devouring Python had sealed off the path towards the summit of the mountain. If they didn't take care of it, it was clearly impossible for them to pass through.

"I'll do it." Mu Chen chuckled. Then, his body rushed forward as dark-black Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. A powerful imposing manner was emitted out from him.

"Boom!"

When the Mountain Devouring Python noticed Mu Chen

approaching, it swept its hugged tail fiercely and shattered the ground. Then, it pulled out a massive boulder and threw it towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's eyes remained calm as he blasted out a punch. Rumbling Spiritual Energy rushed out from his fist and smashed the giant boulder into powder. Right now, time was quite precious, so he didn't want to be delayed here by the Mountain Devouring Python.

"Vajra Pagoda!"

Mu Chen smacked out with his palm. Dark-black Spiritual Energy rushed out as if it was smoke, and a gigantic golden palm was formed. Within this palm, a dark towering engraving loomed, and a mysterious fluctuation was emitted.

Once this gigantic golden palm was formed, it rushed through the sky and attempted to suppress the Mountain Devouring Python. At this instant, the latter had also cried out fiercely. The scales on its body stood up, and a deep-yellow beam gathered in its mouth. The deep-yellow beam was quickly unleashed as it charged aggressively towards the approaching gigantic golden palm.

The two attacks collided fiercely in mid-air, and the Spiritual Energy impact from it completely razed the forest to the ground, and countless trees were uprooted. These attacks were quite amazing.

However, the Mountain Devouring Python's attack didn't manage to gain results. On the gigantic golden palm, the black tower engraving slowly crawled forward and completely suppressed the deep-yellow beam. Therefore, the yellow beam was quickly dispersed.

Bang Bang Bang!

Once the gigantic golden palm shattered the powerful Spiritual Energy beam, it descended and slammed down fiercely on the

Mountain Devouring Python's body.

In this instant, the earth seemed to tremble violently. At the same time, the Mountain Devouring Python cried out painfully. The scales on its massive body had shattered, and fresh blood flowed out. However, A Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's life force was quite tenacious — even if had suffered a severe blow from Mu Chen, it remained quite brutal and vicious. In retaliation, its massive tail swept through the air as it attempted to whack Mu Chen with it.

Mu Chen's body flickered for a moment and after images emerged. His body was like a phantom as he appeared behind the Mountain Devouring Python. A golden glow was emitted from two of his fingers, as a spear was shot through the sky. This spear had landed at the location where the Mountain Devouring Python's scales were shattered.

Chi Chi!

Under the sharp golden light, the Mountain Devouring Python suddenly wailed out. Fresh blood sprayed out from his body as it struggled in pain. It attempted to bite and swallow Mu Chen, yet it was avoided by the latter swiftly.

At this moment, the dozen individuals stared at Mu Chen who was dealing with the Mountain Devouring Python. They were all shocked. Just earlier, they had joined forces, yet they had failed to defeat the Mountain Devouring Python. They could never have imagined that Mu Chen would be able to defeat it this easily.

Finally, the Mountain Devouring Python's struggle had slowed down. This was the moment that Mu Chen was waiting for. A golden light was unleashed from two of his fingers, as it pierced through the Mountain Devouring Python's head.

In that instant, the Mountain Devouring Python's struggling stopped completely. Its massive body crashed down to the ground. Seeing this, Mu Chen charged forward and extracted a deep-yellow

light from the head of the Mountain Devouring Python. Within this light, a mini-sized Mountain Devouring Python was struggling fiercely. It was the Soul Essence of the Mountain Devouring Python.

Mu Chen reflexively placed the Mountain Devouring Python within his Mustard Seed Bracelet and was about to leave. However, he suddenly felt a chill, and his eyes moved quickly. He noticed that a black light had swept out quickly from the shadows. It was a black claw that could easily tear through metal, and it was charging towards Mu Chen's back at an alarming speed.

This sudden attack caused Mu Chen's heart to jump. However, just when he was about to put up a Spiritual Energy defence, a black sword beam tore through the air and hacked fiercely against the black light.

A metal sound rang out, and the sword beam dissipated away. However, the black light was also blown away. As it landed on the ground, a dark-black Spirit Leopard was revealed. This black leopard's body didn't have any hair, and looked like it was made of black metal. Compared to a regular leopard, a pair of black wings was also upon its back. From its appearance, it seemed like a spectre within the darkness.

A slender figure quickly approached from Mu Chen's rear, as she charged straight towards the black leopard. Her speed was extremely quick and, in an instant, she had appeared in front of the leopard. Then, everybody was able to see that her slender hand was holding onto a black sword hilt.

As this slender figure passed by the black leopard, a crisp sound resounded out once a black light emerged.

When Luo Li appeared behind the black leopard, her slender fingers gently moved and quickly sheathed her sword. As for the black leopard, it shook for a moment, before it fell onto the ground. Its body had been divided cleanly into two halves.

From afar, the dozen individuals that had witnessed this scene all inhaled a mouthful of cold air. The black spirit leopard wasn't an ordinary Spiritual Beast. It was a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, known as the Spectre Leopard, and was in no way inferior to the Mountain Devouring Python. It was a Spiritual Beast known for its speed, and it specialized in sneak attacks. Even a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse would die in its claws if they weren't careful. However, they couldn't imagine that it was instantly killed by Luo Li.

At this moment, Luo Li also extracted out the Soul Essence of the Spectre Leopard. Then, her beautiful eyes smiled as she looked towards Mu Chen.

"Not bad."

Mu Chen raised his thumb up as he smiled. He was indeed careless just now. Since this place was already approaching the peak of the mountain, there were countless Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. These Spiritual Beasts were all quite cunning. It would be a fatal mistake if he was careless.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen beckoned Luo Li with his hand, and didn't intend to stay in this place. However, an outbreak of furious roars resounded throughout the Northern Spirit Mountain. Violent Spiritual Energy was contained within these roars. Based on this, it was clear that the roars were all from Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

Others were also beginning to meet with Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

Once they heard these roars, Mu Chen and Luo Li's eyes gradually turned serious. The amount of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts within this place was far beyond their expectations.

"Be careful."

Mu Chen exchanged gazes with Luo Li and reminded her. Then,

they didn’t remain at this location any longer. Under many envious and awestruck gazes, the two of them turned into figures of light as they rushed straight towards the peak of the towering mountain.

Just when Mu Chen and Luo Li rushed towards the peak of the mountain, Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing had also started going up quickly as well. As they rushed up, a trail of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast carcasses was formed...

Chapter 178 – Stone Platform

Roar! Roar!

The angry roars of countless Spiritual Beasts echoed throughout the vast mountain range, causing the forests to tremble. Numerous individuals clashed together with Spiritual Beasts within this vast wilderness, and astonishing battles occurred.

And on the peak of the nearby mountains, a few figures observed the many skirmishes that had broken out down below. After a while, some of the gazes shifted toward the majestic mountain at the center of the mountain range.

Exceptionally powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations swept out at this time from the mountain. It appeared that several of the more talented new students had already reached the Northern Spirit Mountain, and were charging up towards its peak, which was hidden in the clouds.

It was clear that the one who could take the lead and charge up to the summit, which represented glory to them, might possibly seize first place, and become the number one student in the freshmen class.

At this moment, Zhu Tian and the other two elders stood high up in the sky. Zhu Tian was beaming as he observed the lofty mountain; his eyes imperceptibly cast a glance at the summit before the corner of his mouth curled up slightly more.

“These kids were a lot faster than what I’d imagined, but things will become interesting once they approach the finale. It’s troublesome even for this old man to put that big guy in check.”

Swish! Swish!

Down below, Mu Chen and Luo Li swiftly made their way through the forest. Dense Spiritual Energy enveloped their bodies, and vigilance and seriousness filled their eyes. They are already

very near the summit; almost all of the Spiritual Beasts in this area are Heaven Rank, but fortunately they merely possess the strength of the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. Otherwise, it would be extremely troubling for them…

"Hmmm?"

Mu Chen suddenly narrowed his eyes as they were dashing through the forest and suddenly fired out a punch suffused with Spiritual Energy, directly attacking the ground beneath his feet.

Boom!

A massive crack propagated from where Mu Chen's explosive fist had landed, causing a sharp cry to echo out where the earth had ruptured. A giant beast with savage light in his eyes and covered in sharp scale armor quickly crawled out.

"Earthly Demon Beast?" Mu Chen creased his brows when he saw this giant, grotesque beast covered in black scales; yet another Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast of the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase.

Just as Mu Chen was planning to quickly dispose of this Earthly Demon Beast, Luo Li suddenly pulled on his sleeve, her delicate little face somewhat solemn as she pointed at a spot not too far away.

Mu Chen's gaze followed where she pointed just as the ground split apart and five more Earthly Demon Beasts climbed out, their berserk Spiritual Energy flooding the forest.

Six Earthly Demon Beasts?

Even Mu Chen's felt numb when he saw this scene; he promptly gave Luo Li a knowing glance before the two simultaneously ran away as fast as they could. Even though the six Earthly Demon Beasts only have the strength of Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, Mu Chen and Luo Li would have to pay a price if they had engaged in a fight. Also, stalling here would've wasted quite a bit

of time.

Therefore, escaping was the most sensible option in this situation.

Roar!

The six Earthly Demon Beasts saw the two humans attempt to escape and issued out ferocious roars before chasing after them with startling speed. Each step caused the earth to quake and the mountains to tremble.

Mu Chen and Luo Li saw the beasts' relentless pursuit and did not dare to dally, increasing their speed to the utmost and made a beeline toward the summit.

Pressing on at such high speed, it did not even take ten minutes before the thick, lush forest gave way to an open clearing where an incomparably massive platform was seen farther ahead. A trail leading up to the summit was seen just past this platform.

But just when the two of them rushed out of the forest, they heard angry roars coming from another direction. As they turned to look, their expressions became frozen stiff.

In that direction, no small number of massive Spiritual Beasts with astonishing Spiritual Energy had simultaneously burst onto the clearing. In front of them, several figures were fleeing in disarray.

They were headed the same direction as Mu Chen and Luo Li—straight towards the massive stone platform that led to the summit.

When Mu Chen caught sight of the more than thirty Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, the corner of his mouth cannot help but pull into a wry smile. This Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is too vicious; to unleash so many Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts here, how could you defeat all of them?

"Hurry!"

Mu Chen cried out as he accelerated, dashing towards the massive stone platform. If he was caught by the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts at this moment, he feared that the outcome would be disastrous.

Luo Li gently nodded. Unless one has entered the Heavenly Transformation Stage, no one can escape after being surrounded by more than thirty Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

The Freshman Competition organized by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was obviously not fun and games, but a true test of these top freshmen's capabilities.

Mu Chen and Luo Li swiftly dashed towards the distant platform. At the same time, the other party being chased was also charging towards the same direction, and they were finally able to see each other clearly.

With a glance, Mu Chen recognized the others as Yang Hong, Mu Kui, Bing Qing, and a few other students. They had also decided to take evasive action when they encountered the many Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

But it seemed that everyone adopting the same strategy had inadvertently led so many Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts to come together.

At the same time that Mu Chen and the other party saw each other, countless spectators were watching them attentively on the surrounding mountain peaks. Their eyes lit up when they finally saw action at the massive stone platform, but their expressions slightly changed when they saw the trail of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

"Why are there so many Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts?"

"These freshmen are really unlucky. This Freshman Competition is much more difficult compared to the past. It's impossible to force their way through so many Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts."

“Yes. Not only do they have to guard against the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, they still need to be vigilant of other freshmen.”

“Haha, this year’s competition is such quality entertainment, isn’t it more amusing like this?”

“…”

The gallery of people observing the situation on the summit suddenly broke out into whispers. A growing interest can be seen on their faces at this time.

The action at the summit obviously caught more of their attention compared with the struggles of the average freshmen below.

Li Xuantong stood with his hands behind his back at the side of a cliff, coldly watching the summit; his sharp gaze concentrated on Mu Chen and Luo Li. He knew that ir was almost time for the real trial of this Freshmen Competition.

Under the attentive gaze of countless eyes, ten figures were seen barely keeping their distance from the horde of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts as they neared the platform.

“Hey, Mu Chen!” A gasping voice was heard not far from Mu Chen. He looked only to see Zhou Ling had unexpectedly also arrived here. His face was a little pale, evidence that he hadn’t had it easy evading his pursuers.

Mu Chen nodded at him and felt a little surprised in his heart. The Spiritual Energy propagating out from Zhou Ling’s body indicate that he had reached Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, but the unstable aura revealed that he had only recently broken through.

But Zhou Ling had been half-a-step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage for a long time and had been bitterly cultivating for more than a month at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy; it came as no real surprise for him to have this kind of breakthrough.

“Let’s reach the stone platform first.”

Mu Chen made a hand gesture before pulling Luo Li quickly toward the enormous stone platform with the Spiritual Beasts almost upon them.

But when Mu Chen was about to make his move, a silhouette rushed forth in an attempt to gain the lead. He furiously struck out with the back of his hand as a surge of Spiritual Energy coalesced into a giant illusory palm directly at Mu Chen.

“Mu Chen, watch out! Zhou Ling hastily blurted.

When Mu Chen noticed this sneak attack, his expression immediately became ice-cold. Stepping to the side, dark black Spiritual Energy swept out from his body and transform into the indistinct shape of a light pagoda.

Bang!

The giant palm of Spiritual Energy smashed into the light pagoda, causing Mu Chen’s body to tremble as the light pagoda rippled from the shockwave before slightly dimming. His ice-cold gaze flitted across the familiar figure.

Mu Chen’s expression was extremely cold; this person was vicious. He wanted to strike Mu Chen earlier so that the latter would fall behind into the depths of the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast horde. If that happened, Mu Chen would have suffered grievous injuries even if he manages to escape and subsequently not be in the condition to fight for the position of the number one freshman.

“Yang Hong, you want to fight now? Then let’s fight!”

A cold light flashed across Mu Chen’s eyes as he suddenly rushed forward, bent all but two fingers, and shot a golden light toward Yang Hong with lightning speed.

Yang Hong glanced behind him and sneered. He flicked his finger to fire off a Spiritual Energy beam at the approaching golden light

and completely neutralized the attack, all that while maintaining his speed.

“Want to fight? Come and get me!”

Yang Hong’s figure flashed forward, taking the lead and directly stepping on the large stone platform. He turned around to face Mu Chen as exceptionally vigorous Spiritual Energy erupted out from his body.

Mu Chen clenched both hands. The dark black Spiritual Energy surged within his body as the Great Pagoda Art circulating at full strength. A chilling murderous intent condensed in his black pupils.

Swish!

Mu Chen had also reached the stone platform with Luo Li following closely behind, her glass-like eyes locked onto Yang Hong.

Behind them, Mu Kui, Bing Qing, Zhou Ling, and the other top freshmen also jumped on the platform.

“Be careful Mu Chen, the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts have caught up!” Zhou Ling hastily warned. It is not a good time to fight it out seeing that there is a more pressing problem behind the group.

Mu Chen’s gaze flashed across the Spiritual Beasts before returning to watch Yang Hong with a chilly expression.

During the confrontation between the two, the tens of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts completely encircled the platform, casting an enormous shadow on everyone.

Roar!

The beasts faced the sky and gave a long roar and their Spiritual Energy billowed out as they launched a frenzied assault at Mu Chen and the others on the stone platform.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen can only fall back with Luo Li and temporarily shift his attention to these Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. But right when he was about to fight, Nine Netherbird urgently cried out.

“Mu Chen. Get out of here now! There’s something strange!”

Nine Netherbird’s abrupt warning caused Mu Chen to be alarmed as he acted almost reflexively to pull Luo Li away with him.

Boom!

Just as Mu Chen made his hasty retreat, the ground where he was originally standing on collapsed as a scorching pillar of magma soared into the sky. A giant hand of surging magma extended out from the midst of the pillar, slamming down on a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast and immediately obliterating the body.

Bang! Bang!

Under the shocked gazes of Mu Chen and the other freshmen, as well as the many spectators on the nearby mountain peaks, the stone platform shook violently as more large pillars of magma were sent violently into the sky. Enormous hands made of magma stretched out from each of these pillars. This scene was an extraordinary sight to behold.

“Why is the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy letting this big guy out?”

Li Xuantong was also slightly surprised at this scene; a grim look immediately flashed through his eyes.

Chapter 179 – Summit

At this moment, the massive stone platform was crumbling away as numerous pillars of lava soared up into the sky. Giant hands formed from lava extended out from these pillars and indiscriminately slammed down on the Heaven Ranked Spiritual Beasts and humans on the platform.

This scene had not only shocked Mu Chen and the others on the mountain, but even the people observing outside of the Northern Spirit Mountain were completely astonished. It was evident that this sudden development was beyond everyone's expectations.

Due to the Nine Netherbird's warning, Mu Chen had reacted quicker than the others and had pulled Luo Li away. In the instant that he had fallen back, the lava hand had crushed a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast with the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. The attack brought forth an intense heat as it struck down furiously at where Mu Chen and Luo Li were previously.

The lava hand smashed into the stone platform, causing the massive stone platform to quake as scalding lava began to flow outwards. The attack had completely melted away the stone platform.

Since the lava hand had missed, the lava trembled slightly before it quickly gathered together again and swung towards Mu Chen and Luo Li.

Mu Chen's eyes were completely serious after witnessing the terrifying might of the lava hand. He was able to sense that the strength of violent Spiritual Energy emitted from the lava hand far exceeded the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

He didn't dare to come into contact with it.

"Run!"

Mu Chen instantly made up his mind. The situation had changed.

If they were to remain here any longer, it was highly likely that they would turn to ashes once the lava hand hit them. The have to leave this instant.

Luo Li gently nodded her head in agreement. Her slender hand firmly grasped onto the black longsword. As a black glow circulated the length of the blade, an extremely sharp aura could be felt emitting from it.

Mu Chen’s eyes quickly swept around his surroundings as he withdrew. At this moment, there were almost a dozen lava hands in the sky slamming down relentlessly one after the other. Even the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts that had surrounded them before began to issue out fearful cries as they fell back. The Spiritual Beasts that had been too slow in their retreat were forcibly disintegrated by the lava hands, filling the sky with ashes.

Elsewhere on the mountain, Yang Hong, Mu Kui and Bing Qing were continuously performing evasive actions with serious expressions. They clearly understood just how powerful these lava hands were. If they take the attack head on, it was likely that they would've had to pay a great price.

"What should we do?" Luo Li whispered. The situation was too chaotic right now. She simply didn't know in which direction she should escape.

Mu Chen's eyes suddenly flashed. He detected that the lava hands had stopped chasing after the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts once the latter had escaped the range of the Stone Platform.

"There must be a range to these attacks."

Mu Chen thought for a moment. Then, his gaze turned towards the place above the Stone Platform, the summit of the mountain. It didn't seem that the lava hands had extended out towards that location.

"Head to the summit!"

Mu Chen cried out and immediately accelerated towards the peak of the mountain. Seeing this, Luo Li quickly followed behind.

From nearby, Yang Hong and the others also noticed Mu Chen's actions. Their eyes also flashed as they immediately circulated their Spiritual Energy and pushed their speed to their limits. They, too, were heading towards the summit.

Based on the current situation, there were only two paths that they could take to leave the Stone Platform. One option was to rush straight towards the peak of the mountain, and the other was to head back down the mountain. However, choosing the second option would also mean giving up the opportunity to compete for the title of the number 1 freshman. It was apparent that Yang Hong and the others, who were incredibly prideful, would not make such a selection.

Zhou Ling and the others in the rear had also noticed Mu Chen's actions and wanted to follow, but were forced back by the violent attacks of the lava hands. He cut a sorry figure as his skin turned fiery red. Thus, he could only sigh helplessly as he hastily backed away.

As expected, not everybody was qualified to head to the summit of the mountain.

Outside of the mountain range, countless gazes were gathered at the summit of the mountain. Even the freshmen who had begun to descend stared in the direction of the summit, observing the battle between the most outstanding students within the freshmen.

Under numerous gazes, Mu Chen, Luo Li, Yang Hong, Mu Kui and Bing Qing rushed forward and gradually revealed their movement techniques. They skillfully avoided the lava hands that contained an extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation and continued forward.

These five individuals all possess a strength that far surpassed ordinary freshmen. As they completely focused their attention on

evasion, they managed to see through the lava hands' movements and managed to break through, following which they quickly headed towards the summit.

Sensing the five individuals breaking through, the massive body within the Northern Spirit Mountain had slowly closed its fiery eyes. All of a sudden, it issued out a deep roar.

This roar echoed throughout the mountain and even caused the other mountains to quake. A large crack suddenly extended out from the peak of the mountain and fiery red lava covered the sky, forming into a curtain of magma that completely sealed off Mu Chen and the other's path.

As the lava rained down from the sky, the entire world suddenly turned exceptionally hot. This boiling atmosphere had even caused the Spiritual Aura of the world to tremble slightly.

Witnessing the sudden change in the situation from outside the mountain, these people’s mouths started to twitch. Such a terrifying existence was hidden within the Northern Spirit Mountain. Not only was it impossible for the freshmen to pass through this obstacle, but even the seniors within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would also be helpless against it.

Rumble.

At this moment, the lava erupted and spread throughout the sky before it descended like a waterfall. Below the lava, Mu Chen and the others were helpless like ants.

All five of them had serious expressions. If they weren’t careful, this attack would definitely be a disaster for them.

However, if they were to retreat right now, it would mean that they would give up on seizing first place. Therefore, they had no choice but to move forward!

Mu Chen bit his lips gently as an unswerving determination appeared on his handsome face. As he took a deep breath, dark

black Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body. Then, under the bustling commotion, he charged straight into the lava.

An uproar immediately erupted in the surrounding mountains as the countless individuals witnessed this scene. In their opinion, this action was the same as committing suicide.

Li Xuantong's gaze turned serious for a moment as he narrowed his eyes. Mu Chen's actions were slightly beyond his imagination.

Just when Mu Chen charged straight into the waterfall-like lava, Yang Hong and the others' expressions changed. They immediately gritted their teeth as they charged forth as well. Extraordinary Spiritual Energy erupted out from their bodies one after another.

"Putong!"

Mu Chen was the fastest out of them all. His entire body was surrounded by dark black Spiritual Energy and was like a trail of thick black smoke. He had directly rushed into the lava and disappeared from sight.

Following Mu Chen was Yang Hong. His gaze was cold as dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from his body. A giant python had vaguely formed from his Spiritual Energy as he charged straight into the lava.

On the other hand, Mu Kui blasted out a punch as the rumbling Spiritual Energy formed into a gigantic golden fist. This fist smashed into the curtain of lava directly in front of him.

At the same time, Bing Qing's icy-blue hair had turned deep blue. An extraordinary chill emanated out from her as layers of ice covered her slender body. In the end, she rushed into the lava as well.

And last of all was Luo Li. She glanced at the place where Mu Chen had disappeared and gripped onto her black longsword with her slender hand. In an instant, the sword had twitched and a crisp sound echoed out. A peerless black sword beam tore through the

sky as it was unleashed.

It was apparent that all five of these individuals had shown their true abilities at this moment!

Countless individuals watched this scene seriously. Their attention was completely focused on the other side of the curtain of lava. From there on out, they would be able to reach the summit of the mountain. Thus, as long as they were able to pass through this dangerous curtain of lava, they would be qualified to reach the summit.

However, the true question was; just how many out of these five individuals would be able to pass through?

The bustling and noisy surroundings had become completely silent at this moment. Their gazes gathered at the opposite side of the curtain of lava.

As everybody's gazes gathered at that location, changes soon appeared as well. With an oppressive power, a black light burst out of the curtain of lava.

This black light seemed to be in a shape of a black tower. However, before everybody could clearly recognize it, the black light had faded away and revealed a slender figure. This slender figure had reached the summit of the mountain.

"Someone reached the summit!"

When this cry resounded out, numerous gazes stared at the slender figure. Their eyes were filled with curiosity and astonishment.

"It's the freshmen that defeated Mo Lun!"

The audience had quickly identified the person that reached the summit. A commotion rang out; who would have thought the one that first reached the summit would be a freshman at the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

However, just where their astonished cries faded away, cracks suddenly appeared in the curtain of lava and another figure rushed out and entered the summit.

At this moment, Luo Li held onto the slightly hot black longsword as she smiled at Mu Chen.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

Just when Luo Li landed outside of the curtain of lava, extraordinary Spiritual Energy erupted out from behind her again. Three holes subsequently burst open within the lava and three other figures rushed out. However, their bodies, too, had smoke emitting out from it. Even the armor of ice on Bing Qing's body had completely melted and evaporated away.

Bursts of commotion resounded out in the nearby mountains. Many of the seniors had serious expressions on their face. They never thought that there would be so many powerful individuals within this year's freshman class. These five individuals had actually passed through such a terrifying obstacle.

As the five individuals reaching the summit, the lava behind them had suddenly flowed down and ignited the entire mountain. The crimson lava spread out and dyed the mountain with a beautiful shade of red.

However, nobody had paid attention to this scene. Their eyes were all focused on the five individuals that had reached the summit. Even the freshmen below had cast their sights over due to their curiosity.

They all knew that the competition between the strongest freshmen this year had only just begun!

One after another, their gazes gathered at the center of the summit. At that location, a stone tablet was erected there. And on that stone tablet, was an enormous golden Spirit Flag that swayed due to the wind.

That Spirit Flag represented the honour of the Number One Freshmen.

The one that managed to obtain it would undisputedly become the Number One freshmen!

Chapter 180 – Yang Hongs Hidden Strength

Numerous gazes gathered at the peak of the towering mountain where five figures stood motionless. However, everyone could sense that there was a storm surging underneath this momentary calm.

These people were among the best of the new students and had to overcome many challenges to finally stand here. They were all outstanding, but only one person can become foremost among the freshmen. Therefore, it would not be easy to capture the spiritual flag that embodied this honor and glory.

The true battle had just begun.

The figures from the surrounding peaks were all watching with bated breath; they were aware that this lull in the fighting wouldn't last long.

Once this momentary peace was broken, what follows would undoubtedly be an electrifying fight!

Under the attentive gaze of the onlookers, the atmosphere on the summit became quite strange. Luo Li and Mu Chen were standing to one side while Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing were standing in another; a look of vigilance appeared in their eyes.

In any case, this isn’t a tournament where it was a duel between two individuals and all that you need to do was to defeat your opponent. Just a moment of inattentiveness would be all it takes for the other competitors to launch their vicious attacks. To be caught in that kind of situation would be an intractable headache for anyone among these five.

In this tense silence, the five figures remained on tenterhooks; vigorous Spiritual Energy surged within their bodies like a tidal wave, surly and unreasoning, spreading to all of their limbs.

Yang Hong’s eyes slightly narrowed as he coldly stared at Mu

Chen. His body leaned forward as a glow suddenly radiated in his eyes.

Swish!

His body suddenly transformed into a figure of light as he went straight for the Spirit Flag at breakneck speed.

The tense atmosphere was instantly broken with Yang Hong's sudden movement.

A chill flashed across Luo Li's glass-like eyes; a black longsword appeared in her lily-white hands as she slashed out without any hesitation. A enormous black sword beam viciously swept out and directly slashed down on Yang Hong's body.

The black sword beam whistled forward and carved out a hundred-zhang-deep gorge before the attack landed. The sharpness of this Qi made people inwardly apprehensive.

Even Yang Hong could not afford to be careless when facing Luo Li's attack. Just when everyone thought that he would be forced to defend himself, his body unexpectedly flashed forward to evade the sword beam and changed direction before he turned around to send out an explosive punch towards Mu Chen.

"Rumble!"

Spiritual Energy swirled around Yang Hong's fist like a raging storm, bringing forth an overbearing gale that relentlessly stormed toward Mu Chen.

Yang Hong's sudden attack obviously surprised a lot of people, but it became readily apparent that this had been prepared beforehand. His target wasn't the Spirit Flag at all. Instead, it had always been Mu Chen!

Mu Chen's eyes remained cold in the face of this sudden attack. He had long known about his enemy's deceptive tendencies and would naturally never let his guard down in Yang Hong's presence.

“I didn’t expect you to be so fond of such underhand tactics.”

Mu Chen laughed grimly and circulated the Great Pagoda Art at full strength; dark-black Spiritual Energy waves surged out from his body as he punched out. Four Limitless Death Seals condensed and immediately exploded like overlapping waves, directly colliding with Yang Hong’s fist.

Bang!

Shock waves, visible to the naked eye, swept out from the point of impact, sending out vibrations through the air and producing deep and low sounds similar to the rolls of thunder.

The shock waves gradually dissipated to reveal two figures under the gaze of countless onlookers. Not surprisingly, Mu Chen and Yang Hong were the first to make their moves.

“Mu Chen, didn’t you want to fight against me? Well, here’s your chance. But your strength at the Spirit Stage Late Phase is truly too pathetic; why don’t you team up with Luo Li?!” Yang Hong taunted while attentively watching Mu Chen with sharp, cold eyes.

Mu Chen heard what he said and smiled. “Yang Hong, why are you resorting to such trickery? Just admit that you’re afraid of us teaming up against you. Why is there a need for you to act like this?”

“Don’t worry.” Mu Chen’s eyes slightly lowered as a cold light flickered within his black pupils. “I won’t need Luo Li’s help against someone like you.”

Yang Hong sneered and said. “You sure talk big.”

After these words, Yang Hong swiftly looked toward Mu Kui and said. “Brother Mu Kui, I have to fight against Mu Chen now. Since no one will be able to block you, it is the best opportunity to capture the Spirit Flag.”

Mu Kui grinned as a glint of light appearing in his seemingly dull and steadfast eyes. “Yang Hong, you always enjoyed scheming. If I

were to actually do as you say, it is probably the scene that you wouldn't want to see, right?"

"But you can rest assured; I don't care about being the Number One Freshmen. What I want is to defeat all of you!"

A flame ignited in Mu Kui's eyes as he said. "If you have to fight, then fight. But whoever wins will have to fight me. I will naturally seize the Spirit Flag after I've defeated all of you!"

"Haha, I admire Brother Mu Kui's candor." Yang Hong laughed out loud. He knew that Mu Kui is a battle maniac who would not take advantage of his fight with Mu Chen to seize the Spirit Flag.

"If you want to fight, then fight as much as you want. I'm not interested. However, since nobody wants the Spirit Flag, I'll just help myself to it." Bing Qing, who was nearby, suddenly spoke coldly. Yang Hong had taken advantage of Mu Kui. However, she wasn't interested to wait until their battle was finished.

She was no longer inclined to stay after she finished speaking, her delicate body instantly moved out toward the Spirit Flag.

But a slender shadow appeared in front of her just as she was making her move. Bing Qing stared coldly at Luo Li, who is standing in her way and frowned as she said. "You want to stop me?"

Luo Li smiled and replied. "It's not that I want to stop you, but I just wanted to ask you to wait a while longer."

The situation has become extremely delicate. The animosity between Mu Chen and Yang Hong had already reached its boiling point. Mu Kui's addiction to fighting meant that he had no interest in the Spirit Flag. Therefore, Luo Li's only concern at the moment was Bing Qing.

Truth be told, Luo Li also did not really care for the Spirit Flag or the honor of becoming the Number One Freshman. She never concerned herself with these kinds of pointless competition

between hot-headed males. However, she did not want the Spirit Flag to be snatched away while Mu Chen's hands were tied due to fight with Yang Hong.

Therefore, she acted at this moment and stood in Bing Qing's way.

Their confrontation caused the countless gazes watching the summit to burn hot with anticipation. Although the match between Mu Chen and Yang Hong was similarly thrilling, the two girls were clearly easier on the eyes. Luo Li and Bing Qing were both exceedingly beautiful girls; the former's exquisite appearance would enchant any man while the latter's ice-cold personality was also oddly attractive. A fight between these two would definitely be a sight to behold.

"Wait for what?" Bing Ling softly asked.

"Wait until they've finished their fight. I won't stop you again if you go for the Spirit Flag then." Luo Li quietly said.

"And what if I don't comply?" Bing Qing's voice seemed to carry a bone-chilling aura.

"Then I'd have no choice but to personally experience your Ice Spirit Clan's secret arts." Luo Li's jaded hand tightly held the hilt of the black longsword. The black sword light emitted out had twisted around the sword's blade like streams of water.

Bing Qing slightly narrowed her icy-blue eyes as she concentrated on Luo Li. An icy-blue, cold aura flowed out from her exquisite yet delicate body, causing the surrounding air to freeze over.

The atmosphere between the two had immediately devolved into mutual hostility.

Elsewhere on the summit, Yang Hong secretly sighed in relief when he saw this development. It was extremely important to him to surpass all the other freshmen, and he did not wish to see someone else obtain this title.

For Luo Li to oppose Bing Qing, it had suited him well. He knew that Luo Li would not stand idly since she wanted Mu Chen to capture the Spirit Flag.

But she didn't know that her actions would only benefit Yang Hong in the end.

The corners of Yang Hong's mouth curled up into an icy-cold smile. He immediately looked at Mu Chen and said. "Now we can fight to our heart's content. I'll make you understand that I, Yang Hong, will completely overshadow you at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

Mu Chen extended his palm slowly and faintly smiled. "I'll beat you up so bad you will never dare to speak those words again."

"With your pitiful strength at the Spirit Stage Late Phase?"

Yang Hong smiled mockingly as he casually took a step forward; dense Spiritual Energy fluctuations begin to spread out from his body. "Did you really believe that my strength was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase?"

Boom.

Yang Hong's footsteps landed heavily on the ground one after another; the summit seemed to quake as astonishing Spiritual Energy saturated the air forming an overwhelming pressure that surged towards Mu Chen.

Yang Hong's gown fluttered open as a powerful current of Spiritual Energy converged on the palm his two hands; such frightening intensity revealed that he had truly reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase!

This Yang Hong was really concealing his true strength!

The gallery of onlookers on the surrounding peaks gasped in surprise; this freshman is really strong! Even though he had only recently entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, his strength had already surpassed some of the older students.

“Come at me with everything you’ve got or you will be crushed like a dead dog!”

Yang Hong’s piercing gaze swept out toward Mu Chen, his chin lifted in a condescending manner as he sneered at the latter. His eyes began to glow with killing intent.

“Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase…”

Mu Chen lightly sighed; this Yang Hong really is a difficult opponent. Nevertheless…

He slowly extended his hand toward Yang Hong and made a beckoning gesture, black light coalesced in the depths of his eyes as if forming an enigmatic, dark-black light pagoda.

“Come.”

As Mu Chen’s soft voice faded away, everyone sensed that the sky above the summit became dark as if in anticipation of the confrontation between the two.

This freshman year’s greatest battle is about to get underway.

Chapter 181 – Mu Chen VS Yang Hong

Swoosh!

In the sky, two powerful Spiritual Energies surged out and collided with each other. When these two energies made contact with each other, it was as if the lightning within the clouds had collided with each other. Deep sounds echoed out. This tense atmosphere even made the airflow stop completely.

Numerous gazes had concentrated at the summit of the mountain. All of them were breathless as they waited in anticipation. The atmosphere at that location was extremely tense and was about to break out.

Within the quiet skies, a furious wind suddenly blew and the forest began to sway. From afar, it seemed as if a green wave had appeared within the mountain.

However, once the wind had faded away, Mu Chen and Yang Hong's eyes had turned completely serious and a hint of sharpness emanated from them. Both of them rushed out at the same time towards each other. Their Spiritual Energies had turned into a majestic torrent as they soared through the sky before fiercely colliding with each other.

A dazzling sound reverberated out. From the collision between Spiritual Energies, as a gale formed and emitted out from them. Towering trees were uprooted before they were completely smashed into pieces by the shock waves.

The two Spiritual Energies fiercely colliding against each other, wasn't a duel between techniques. Rather, it was a battle based purely on the density of Spiritual Energy one possessed.

From this collision, it was clear that Yang Hong had the upper hand. After all, he was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. As for Mu Chen, he was still at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. In a

battle between density of Spiritual Energy, it was clear that Mu Chen was at a disadvantage.

Therefore, the black torrent emitted out by Mu Chen had shown signs of weakness in front of the green torrent emitted out by Yang Hong.

“Mu Chen. Do you understand now? This is the difference between me and you!”

Yang Hong stood in the sky as the green torrent of Spiritual Energy continued to surge out from his body. Moreover, he had stirred up the Spiritual Aura within the world and had added it to the green torrent. His robes fluttered constantly and he looked down condescendingly at Mu Chen as he sneered.

“I don’t have time to play with you any longer. Once I defeat you, I have to seize the Spirit Flag!” Yang Hong gripped his hand tightly and green Spiritual Energy surged out. It had formed into a massive Spiritual Energy vortex, which completely enveloped Mu Chen’s surroundings.

Within the massive green vortex, a black torrent of Spiritual Energy was rushing around. However, the density of this Spiritual Energy was vastly inferior to the green Spiritual Energy.

“Boom!”

Yang Hong stared at Mu Chen, who was within the black torrent of Spiritual Energy. His eyes flashed as he gripped his hand. All of a sudden, a deep sound rang out. The green vortex had begun circulating at a higher speed, and a powerful oppression had descended down upon the black torrent.

Yang Hong, wanted to completely destroy all of Mu Chen’s defenses! He wanted to shatter the self-esteem of the person that was once a bothersome existence to him in the Spiritual Road! He wanted to tell him that he, Yang Hong, was like the stars in general and that he was dazzling existence.

“Boom!”

Accompanied with Yang Hong’s killing intent, the enormous green Spiritual Energy vortex released an extraordinarily destructive power. Then, it bombarded fiercely against the black Spiritual Energy torrent.

In the instant that it hit, the black torrent completely crumbled away. It was evident that it was impossible to block a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase’s all-out attack with the Spiritual Energy of a Spirit Stage Late Phase.

On the nearby mountains, sighs echoed out. The freshman known as Mu Chen was going to lose this quickly? It seemed that the gap between Stages was too great for him. However, he was pretty good as he managed to reach the summit with the strength of a Spirit Stage Late Phase.

At this moment, Li Xuantong’s eyes were completely indifferent. He stared at the collapsing black torrent and frowned. He, Mu Chen, shouldn’t be this weak, right?

“Eh?”

Just when this thought appeared in Li Xuantong’s mind, he immediately concentrated again. This is because he noticed that the collapsing black Spiritual Energy had suddenly trembled for a moment. Then, the black lights had gathered together and formed into a blurry black tower.

The black light tower stood in the center of the green vortex and a mysterious bell sound reverberated out from it. Light surged out from the tower’s body. However, it remained completely motionless against any attacks from the green Spiritual Energy vortex.

In this instant, Yang Hong’s face sank slightly. A hint of coldness flashed through his eyes as he waved his sleeves. The green Spiritual Energy vortex had suddenly accelerated and an

oppressive power that could crush a mountain had emerged. It had constantly descended down upon the light tower formed by the black Spiritual Energy.

Buzz.

In the face of the violent attacks unleashed by the green Spiritual Energy vortex, the black light tower formed by the black Spiritual Energy emitted out a buzzing sound, and numerous black halos spread out from it.

These black halos were considerably strange and they seemed to possess a mysterious power. Whenever the attacks from the green Spiritual Energy vortex were unleashed, they would be completely negated by the black halos.

“He actually stopped it…”

The sudden change of events was seen by countless individuals. Astonished cries immediately resounded out. They originally thought that Mu Chen was about to lose, but they never imagined that the latter had special techniques as well.

At the foot of the mountain where the battle occurred, countless freshmen stared nervously at the summit. Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the others had gathered together as they stared at the very top of the mountain. They understood that Yang Hong was much more powerful than Mo Lun. However, they did not know what the outcome would be this time.

At this moment, Yang Hong’s cold eyes stared at the blurry black light tower and sneered: “You won’t be able to stop me by relying on this thing!”

“Sky-Shattering Spirit Trident!”

Yang Hong clasped his hands fiercely and green Spiritual Energy surged out. It had directly formed into a massive green trident in the sky and a sharp fluctuation rippled out from it.

“Go!”

Yang Hong flicked his finger and the green trident shot forth at an extraordinary speed. In an instant, it had vanished and, under everybody's gazes, it had appeared in front of the blurry black tower.

Buzz.

The black halos emitted out from the tower attempted to stop the attack. However, the giant trident broke its way through. Then, everybody witnessed the trident striking the surface of the light tower.

An extraordinary Spiritual Energy emanated out. Cracks quickly emerged on the light tower and it had exploded completely with a bang.

When Yang Hong noticed that the light tower had completely shattered, he let out a cold humph. But before he was able to speak, his eyes suddenly focused as he heard a buzzing sound. From the place where the light tower had exploded, a golden light wheel had suddenly shot out and charged straight towards Yang Hong.

"Scram!"

Yang Hong blasted out a punch in retaliation. Dense Spiritual Energy rushed out and this single punch had completely destroyed the golden light wheel.

"Roar!"

However, just when Yang Hong had destroyed the golden light wheel, a dragon-like roar had suddenly resounded out. From the sky, a dark golden light had surged. A dragon and an elephant suddenly emerged and integrated with each other to form a plate with a dragon and an elephant. Then, it attempted to suppress Yang Hong.

"A Spiritual Array?"

At this moment, Yang Hong had detected a mysterious Spiritual Energy fluctuation. Then, he noticed a light array had formed in

the air. At this moment, his eyes had focused slightly. So Mu Chen was actually a Spiritual Array Master. Judging from this Spiritual Array, it was probably comparable to a Rank 3 Spiritual Array.

“Could it be that this bastard is also a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master?” Yang Hong was stunned. A Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master already possessed the strength comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage.

“No matter how many techniques you’ve hidden for today, I will still trample over you!”

Yang Hong’s eyes quickly turned cold. From his hand, a green Spiritual Energy billowed out. His palm had suddenly become like a jade and countless veins could be seen on it.

“Sky-Shattering Jaded Spirit Hand!”

Yang Hong struck out with his palm. The jade-like hand floated out and collided against the approaching golden plate without any hesitation.

When the two attacks met, the air was trembling, it was as if a vacuum of air was formed. Yang Hong’s robes continued to flutter and he seemed like a war god. A green light exuded out from his jade-like hands and he fired out a dozen handprints. Every single one of them had smashed onto the golden plate and the violent energy from them eventually forced it back.

“Shatter!”

Yang Hong moved forward and smashed down with his palm. A crisp sound was heard, as the golden plate containing the dragon and elephant was completely destroyed by this attack. The golden plate had turned into lights as it gradually dissipated away.

As the lights drifted and faded away, Yang Hong stood in the air as his cold eyes had locked onto a slender figure nearby. Green Spiritual Energy stormed out from his palm towards this figure.

At the same time, Mu Chen stared calmly at Yang Hong, who was

about to release a powerful attack. The two Spiritual Arrays that he had cast successively were easily destroyed by Yang Hong. A Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase was truly extraordinary.

However... These two Spiritual Arrays were only Rank 2 Spiritual Arrays. It was quite unlikely for them to hurt Yang Hong at all.

Therefore...

Mu Chen slowly closed his eyes. At the same time, Spiritual Seals rushed out from his sleeves and quickly integrated into the sky behind him. All of a sudden, the sky turned fiery red and a massive red array formed. A burning and violent fluctuation emanated out from the Spiritual Array.

“That is...”

Countless eyes were focused on the massive red array. Soon, these eyes were filled with seriousness.

“It’s a Rank 3 Spiritual Array!”

“So Mu Chen is actually a Spiritual Array Master. And he’s a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master, to boot!”

“So that’s it. A Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master is capable of fighting against a Heavenly Fusion Stage. No wonder he wasn’t afraid of Yang Hong...

“But why can he arrange an array this quickly?”

Countless whispers erupted out at this moment. Even Elder Zhu Tian was quite surprised by this sudden display of talent by Mu Chen. His eyes were soon filled with interest.

“This little guy...He had actually trained in Spiritual Arrays. Moreover, this state...Is it the Initial Level of the Heart Array State?”

Chapter 182 – Array of the Great Ifrit

The sky surrounding Mu Chen glowed scarlet at this moment, painting the clouds a fiery red as if they had caught on fire. The air became distorted by the searing heat as an enormous array of fiery red light gradually formed behind Mu Chen.

The faint Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted out from the center of this array of fiery red light caused the complexion of many of the older students to change. They feared that even ordinary people at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase would not be able to receive this level of attack.

So this freshman named Mu Chen clearly did not reveal his true strength when he previously fought against Mo Lun.

“The freshmen this year are terrifying.” Some of the people inwardly sighed. Although these freshmen were younger than them, their techniques, as well as their schemes, cause others to sigh with amazement.

“A Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master, huh?”

On the summit, Mu Kui also looked up to gaze at Mu Chen’s figure, as a fire ignited within his eyes. The latter didn’t let him down; if Mu Chen was defeated this quickly at the hands of Yang Hong, he would’ve felt some regret.

Elsewhere, Luo Li and Bing Qing were still facing each other in a standoff. Although the atmosphere between the two girls was tense, neither had made a move. It is obvious that they were both wary of their opponent; once they made a move, both sides might have to expend a lot of energy.

Bing Qing glanced at Luo Li before she too raised her head to look at the shocking battle in the sky. The secret technique that Mu Chen revealed had also caused her to be somewhat astonished. She had previously believed that Yang Hong would make short work of

Mu Chen.

Now it seems that it won't be that simple. This Mu Chen was able to capture Luo Li's heart; he was not just some trivial and worthless character.

Luo Li slightly craned her snow-white neck to look up at the tall and lean figure; a trace of softness flitted across her clear glass-like eyes. Mu Chen's background count for nothing compared to the other four on the summit. According to him, the place where he came from ought to be just a small and weak continent in the Great Thousand World. His background was nothing spectacular, yet he was not the slightest inferior to Yang Hong and the other freshmen powerhouses.

That's why she was certain that Mu Chen would come to the Five Great Academies even though he was kicked out halfway through the Spiritual Road. Even though he did not receive the Spiritual Energy Empowerment from the Spiritual Road, he was still able to stand out in this gathering of geniuses.

Perhaps, in the future, this youth will achieve fame and glory that will shake this vast Great Thousand World. The Five Great Academies will be nothing more than the first step in his journey.

Under the starry skies within the Spiritual Road, the youth, who was in a slightly awkward state after he dealt with a group of pursuers, had raised his head. On his handsome face, a determined smile had emerged.

"Luo Li, there will come a day that my name will resound in every corner of the Great Thousand World." The youth turned his head to face the small campfire and gaze at the girl beside him with his cool and lonesome eyes, looking at her delicate and beautiful cheeks that cause men to be intoxicated.

"Why?" The young girl said with a faint smile.

“If that happens, you will hear my name no matter where you are, so that even if I’m not by your side, I will still be able to protect you just like today.” The youth smiled. His sincere and refreshing expression had caught the young girl off guard, a hint of a smile curled up on the corner of her lips.

Luo Li’s clear glass-like eyes gently blinked, and the corner of her mouth slightly curved upwards. She looked at his slender frame and could feel the latter’s maturity even though he is, currently, still too far away from making good on his promise of great ambition.

But she believed that he will be able to do it.

Just like how she believed that he will arrive at the Five Great Academies to finish what he had started on the Spiritual Road.

With the eyes of countless onlookers gazing up the sky, Yang Hong’s expression was somewhat unsightly and felt a little alarmed as he looked at the array of scarlet light gradually forming behind Mu Chen.

“Spiritual Array Master? I won’t let you arrange a Spiritual Array this easily!”

Yang Hong coldly snorted. This is not the first time he had fought against a Spiritual Array Master. The power of this incomplete Spiritual Array is not weak, but all Spiritual Array Masters have a fatal flaw. It is not easy for them to gain enough time to deploy their Spiritual Arrays during pitch battle. An experienced opponent will finish the fight before the Spiritual Array Masters can complete their arrays.

Swish!

Yang Hong’s figure abruptly rushed forth like lightning as both palms once again became sparkling and translucent like jade.

Yang Hong headed straight for Mu Chen. This scene caused many

people's to secretly nod their heads; Yang Hong really isn't somebody who is easy to deal with. He did not foolishly wait for Mu Chen to complete his Spiritual Array.

As long as he managed to interfere with Mu Chen and make it so that he could not arrange his Spiritual Array, the victor of this battle would be determined.

"Brother Mu, watch out!"

Upon seeing this from the foot of the mountain, Mo Ling and the others' hearts jumped as they anxiously yelled out, but they discovered that Mu Chen was too far away to hear their warning.

Mu Chen tightly closed his eyes and submerged himself in the Heart Array State, perfectly controlling each and every Spiritual Seal. However, he immediately sensed Yang Hong's imminent arrival and realized the latter's intent.

"You want to interfere with me?"

Mu Chen laughed mockingly in his heart, but his mental state remained calm and composed. He did not panic in the slightest, but instead submerged himself even deeper into the subtle control ability of the Heart Array State.

With this level of fine control, he was able to clearly perceive the direction and trails of the Spiritual Energy flow in the world.

The complex Diagram Array behind him was also reflected within his heart, incomparably distinct and penetrating.

Under this fine control, Mu Chen's palm sudden extended out of his sleeves and lightly whirled, only to see several tens of Spiritual Seals condensed once again. With a flick of his finger, the Spiritual Seals shot out into the air in front of him, causing a Spiritual Energy fluctuation that instantly arranged into a Spiritual Array.

Roar!

A flash of light radiated out to reveal a massive array of golden

light, after which a golden dragon and elephant violently surged out and fused into a golden disc that streaked toward Yang Hong.

“WAHH!”

This development instantly caused an immediate uproar to fill the air. Mu Chen had unexpectedly deployed two Spiritual Arrays at the same time? Is this something he should be able to accomplish as a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master?

Who doesn’t know that Spiritual Array Masters won’t dare to have the slightest lapse in concentration when they deploy Spiritual Arrays much less dividing their attention in two!

“What?”

Elder Zhu Tian, who was watching the battle in the sky, also cried out in surprise before muttering to himself. “To be able to achieve this level as a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master, it seems that this kid is quite talented in regards to the Heart Array State.”

Only a select few of the high-level Spiritual Array Masters were able to develop this ability to divide their attention. He hadn’t anticipated that Mu Chen had already reached this level of proficiency.

Bang!

Yang Hong’s facial expression darkened as his punch blasted into the golden disc. He blocked the Spiritual Energy shock waves from the explosive collision and wanted to press forward without delay, but another golden disc came whistling toward him.

It was obvious that this level of Spiritual Array was no longer difficult for Mu Chen.

After the momentary delay from blocking this second attack, Yang Hong stopped moving forward. He had a gloomy expression on his face because the massive array of scarlet light behind Mu Chen’s body was already completely formed.

Obviously, his attempt to disrupt the array formation had failed.

Mu Chen slowly opened his eyes at this moment and a cold chill flitted across his black pupils. He gazed at the dispirited Yang Hong and said with an almost mirthless smile. “You seem to use your head a little bit more.”

“You think that you can challenge me just because you completed a Rank 3 Spiritual Array? How naive.” Yang Hong sneered.

Mu Chen simply smiled in response and ignored him. As he changed his seals, the massive array of scarlet red light behind him suddenly activated as a blaze spread out like fiery waves and swept across the sky.

He extended his slender finger and pointed to the sky as his black pupils became ice-cold.

“Boom!”

Towering flames that covered the sky swept out from the center of the Spiritual Array, after which an inhuman sound roared out from within. Flames spread out as a massive pillar of fire explosively shot out from the center of Spiritual Array.

Roar!

The flames that shot out appeared to tremble before it unexpectedly transformed into an incomparably massive creature of fire. Two horns grew out from its head, fiery red scale covered its entire body, and an extremely frenzied and scorching Spiritual Energy fluctuation emanated out causing the moisture in the air to evaporate immediately.

A look of amazement appeared on the faces of the countless onlookers as they gazed at this creature of fire. The fluctuations emitting out of its body was not any weaker than a person at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. This Spiritual Array arranged by Mu Chen was apparently ranked amongst the top of Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays.

“Array of the Great Ifrit!”

Mu Chen flicked his finger as his quiet voice reverberated through the air. “Go!”

Roar!

The Ifrit roared up at the sky. Flames swept out like waves as its body moved and directly transformed into a fiery light. The flames ignited into a raging inferno as its entire body transformed into a flaming meteor and streaked across the horizon toward Yang Hong.

The ground below ruptured and burst open as the flaming meteor swept past. Superheated air formed a visible arc in front of the flaming meteor and created a magnificent tail of fire.

Yang Hong raised his head. The Ifrit meteor reflected in his eyes as the corner of his mouth slowly curled up into a sinister smile.

“This is what you had prepared to use against me? It’s not bad, but it all ends now! I’m tired of playing with you!”

Yang Hong took one step forward as the clothes on his body abruptly turned into dust. A cyan light radiated forth as a frenzied dragon roar ferociously resounded throughout the heaven and earth.

Numerous trembling gazes followed along only to see a resplendent cyan light. Yang Hong’s body slowly faded away and was replaced by a gigantic dragon entrenched in the sky.

This gigantic dragon’s body was dark green with cyan dragon scales which were unexpectedly covered in tiger stripes. Its head was not that of a dragon, but rather the head of a sinister tiger.

When this unusual dragon appeared, everyone felt an overwhelming fluctuation sweep out.

“This is…”

Many onlookers concentrated on the gigantic dragon’s body with

a stunned expression on their faces.

“Ranked 50th on the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking’s: Ancient Tiger Dragon?”

Chapter 183 – The Nine Netherbird Appears

Cyan light illuminated the horizon, bringing with it an overbearing pressure that caused the air to become stifling. The numerous spectators were all similarly overwhelmed as their shocked gazes fixated on the massive cyan-colored dragon that settled up above in the sky.

Who would've imagined that Yang Hong had ingested a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence and it turned out to be an Ancient Tiger Dragon that is ranked 50th upon the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. Even a Heavenly Completion Stage powerhouse would have to retreat in the face of a mature Ancient Tiger Dragon. This Yang Hong had unexpectedly obtained its Soul Essence?

The older students looked at each other in dismay before they shook their heads and sighed; each freshman had been more terrifying than the last.

"An Ancient Tiger Dragon?" Surprise flashed across Li Xuantong's eyes when he saw this scene from one of the surrounding mountain peaks. Generally speaking, someone with this amount of strength, who is capable of obtaining the Soul Essence of a fearless existence, such as the Ancient Tiger Dragon will have a strong background. The possibility that someone had relied solely on a fortuitous encounter to obtain it is inconceivable.

Li Xuantong's gaze concentrated on the blazing meteor whistling across the vast sky towards the Ancient Tiger Dragon. Yang Hong's strength had risen dramatically by pushing the Ancient Tiger Dragon's Soul Essence to its limit. It would be difficult to find a worthy opponent for him within the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. Even if Mu Chen had his hidden card as a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master, it would still be a tall order if he wanted to defeat Yang Hong.

Next up, he would have to see how Mu Chen will respond to this

situation.

“Haha, Mu Chen. Did you truly believe that you’re the only one with hidden cards and that I didn’t have my own?”

The immensely formidable Tiger Dragon occupied the sky; its large ruby eyes watched Mu Chen attentively as a mocking laughter burst forth from its ferocious tiger maw. Yang Hong, who had activated the Ancient Tiger Dragon’s Soul Essence, could already feel a surge of power within his body. This strength was sufficient enough to gravely injure anyone of the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase with just one punch, to say nothing of Mu Chen who only had the strength of the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

“Watch as I break your Spiritual Array attack!”

The Tiger Dragon’s laughter echoed like thunder before its massive dragon claw suddenly clenched and fiercely struck the whistling flame meteor.

Boom!

The two titans mercilessly collided in mid-air with a loud explosion, resulting in rolls of thunder that reverberated across the sky. The momentum of the Ifrit meteor had been completely stopped by the brute force of the impact, causing a rain of fire to fall from the sky.

Although its momentum had been stopped, Yang Hong was still forced to retreat a great distance even in his Tiger Dragon form. However, it didn’t take long before he stormed forth once more with a whip of his tail and proceeded to bombard the giant flame meteor with a flurry of punches.

Boom! Boom!

The Tiger Dragon was relentless in its attack and violent Spiritual Energy surged out like a storm. Roaring up at the sky, its claws started to glow from the cyan light of the accumulated Spiritual Energy, bringing with it a kind of terrifying power to

topple mountains to bear down on the blazing meteor.

“Scram!”

Yang Hong gave a savage roar in his Tiger Dragon form as his fist explosively punched out. The empty air appeared to distort around the fist as it forced back the giant flame meteor. Lines and lines of cracks rapidly propagated through the meteor, until it finally shattered under the shocked gaze of the countless spectators.

Anyone who saw this rain of fire covering the sky was visibly moved; Yang Hong’s power had clearly advanced by more than a level after transforming into the Tiger Dragon.

On the summit, Mu Kui watched Yang Hong’s incredible display of martial prowess with a heavy expression. Even he was particularly wary of the power that the latter showed. Although this person is quite a schemer, his own strength was just as impressive.

“Mu Chen is going to lose. Aren’t you going to help him?” Bing Qing said indifferently as she glanced at Luo Li.

After transforming into the Ancient Tiger Dragon, Yang Hong’s strength gave her a strong feeling of trepidation, and she’s afraid she might not even be able to contend with Mu Chen’s Spiritual Array.

Fixated on the tall and lean silhouette in the sky above, Luo Li showed a faint smile and said. “He won’t lose so easily.”

Bing Qing knitted her umber-black eyebrows; she clearly didn’t understand where all of Luo Li’s confidence came from. The current situation is not optimistic for Mu Chen.

“Then I’ll have to see just how he is able to reverse this situation.” Bing Qing looked up with her beautiful face to watch the sky, not convinced of Luo Li’s confidence in Mu Chen.

“Haha.”

The transformed Yang Hong broke out in thunderous laughter up in the sky. Even the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had painstakingly arranged had collapsed under his relentless strikes. Who is winning and who is losing in this battle was self-evident.

“It will be your turn next!”

Yang Hong’s large ruby eyes looked intently at Mu Chen. He couldn’t wait to crush the latter and enjoy the pleasure of trampling Mu Chen beneath his feet.

Swish!

Cyan light suddenly burst forth from the Tiger Dragon’s gigantic body. A squall rose up with a single whip of the Tiger Dragon’s massive tail. Thunder rippled through the air as the Tiger Dragon transformed into a cyan beam and appeared above Mu Chen, its enormous shadow descending on the latter.

“Get off the mountain!”

Dense Spiritual Energy violently gushed out from the Tiger Dragon’s clenched claws, appearing like a resplendent cyan-colored sun. The massive claws contained enough power to rend the sky as it blasted out toward Mu Chen.

Enveloped in cyan light, the Tiger Dragon’s attack was as fast as lightning as it streaked across the air, leaving a vacuum in its trail. Everyone held their breath. At the foot of the mountain, Mo Ling and the others’ faces paled; they could still sense just how frightening Yang Hong’s punch was even when they were separated by such great distance.

This punch might even instantly kill a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase powerhouse!

Mu Chen raised his head just then and concentrated on the incoming dragon claw. Both of his hands slowly clenched as an exotic black flame emerged from the depths of his eyes. The dark-black Spiritual Energy that covered his body had also silently burst

into black flames.

Mu Chen's black eyes became more profound at this moment.

Watching the battle from up in the sky, Elder Zhu Tian's expression suddenly became more intense. He turned his head to glance at the two elders besides him and saw a stunned look flit across their eyes.

They sensed an extraordinarily powerful fluctuation that was faintly similar to when someone activated a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, but was also slightly different.

This fluctuation still has Spirituality and vitality.

Boom!

While they were in a state of amazement, the dragon claw had finally arrived. A look of pity appeared on the faces of the spectators as the attack ferociously exploded onto Mu Chen's body.

Bang!

The heavens trembled as a frenzied cyan-colored Spiritual Energy surged out uninhibited like a large wave and illuminated the heavens.

This punch ruthlessly struck Mu Chen.

Ye Qingling and Zhou Ling's complexion became pale. They no longer entertained thoughts of Mu Chen pulling out a victory, but instead were only praying that his injuries are not too severe. As long as he can hold on to his life, they can rescue him later.

"Eh? Why hasn't Brother Mu fallen?" Mo Ling said distractedly as he carefully scanned cyan sky.

Ye Qingling and the others were also surprised and startled as they looked toward that direction. According to common sense, Mu Chen should be falling from the sky after directly receiving that punch.

Many others had also thought that this was peculiar. The

astonished gazes looked to the sky at once where the cyan light from the devastating Spiritual Energy began to wane.

The first sight to emerge after the cyan light faded was the massive dragon claw, but a black light appeared to shine from underneath the claw. Fixating on their attention there, the pupils of the countless spectators immediately shrank.

They saw black flames violently raged inside the black light underneath the massive dragon claw. Right now, those black flames seemed to have transformed into a pair of gigantic wings of black flame that have enclosed around Mu Chen's body and shielded him from Yang Hong's fierce punch.

"How can this be..."

Numerous murmurs broke out; the thoughts of many were filled with disbelief and shock. They really couldn't understand how a person at the Spirit Stage Late Phase was able to repeatedly resist the all-out attack of an opponent at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase

"How is this possible?!"

Identical thoughts flitted across Yang Hong's heart. His eyes rapidly turned blood red as he looked below to see that Mu Chen had suddenly grown a pair of gigantic wings of black flames.

This sensation of being repeatedly thwarted really made him unable to calm down.

He should've easily destroyed Mu Chen like breaking dead branches from a tree and trampled him under his feet!

"Boom!"

The Tiger Dragon form of Yang Hong roared up at the sky as its dragon claws shortly whistled through the air and frantically attacked the human figure below.

Hu.

A pair of black wings stretched open from within the black flames that enveloped Mu Chen's body. As soon as the wings flapped, the sound of breaking wind resounded, an afterimage appeared, and his figure flashed before appearing a kilometer away.

A trace of coldness flashed across the black flames in Mu Chen's eyes as he changed his hand seals while watching Yang Hong's frantic assault.

Li!

A clear and resonant cry suddenly resounded throughout the world. When this sharp cry sounded out, everyone could sense that all the Spiritual Aura within the world had suddenly showed signs of resistance.

And the source of this resistance is precisely Mu Chen's position!

"What's that?!"

A loud shout suddenly rang out causing countless gazes to hastily look over only to see the dark-black Spiritual Energy behind Mu Chen surge up like thick smoke. Black light spread through the skies as the flames behind Mu Chen transformed into a monstrous and mysterious black bird.

A colossal bird stretched its wings and immediately caused the sky to darken. Black flames surged out and engulfed the heavens. This scene caused shock to appear in the eyes of many people.

"This fluctuation..."

Up in the sky, Elder Zhu Tian's complexion turned solemn at this moment. He looked at the other two elders and saw the same shock in their eyes.

This Mu Chen had actually ingested the Nine Netherbird's Spiritual Beast Soul Essence?!

Chapter 184 – The Power of the Bloodline Bond

As the mysterious black bird emerged in the world along with its devastating black flames, countless gazes were immediately attracted to it.

The massive black bird was completely covered with black flames. However, its body wasn't clearly visible, thus, a few individuals weren't able to determine which Spiritual Beast it was. But judging from its aura, it was definitely much more powerful than the Yang Hong's Ancient Tiger Dragon!

"W-What is that Spiritual Beast? What a terrifying aura!"

Mo Ling and the others gaped in shock as they stared at the enormous black bird. It was the first time that they've seen Mu Chen use the power of a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Moreover, they've originally thought that Mu Chen had ingested one of the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that he had obtained in the Northern Heavens World. However, from what they've seen, it was evident that they were clearly wrong.

Mu Chen had always been hiding the Soul Essence that he had ingested!

So this was the strongest trump card that he had hidden!

"This guy..." Zhou Ling had a shocked expression before he inhaled deeply as a complex expression emerged on his face. Originally, he thought that he would be able to narrow the gap between him and Mu Chen once he had advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage. But who could have imagined that this person was like a bottomless hole. Nobody could understand the depths of his strength.

It was as if he was completely unpredictable.

At this very moment, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitting

out from Mu Chen's body was already comparable to Yang Hong!

Sometimes, even Zhou Ling had to admit that Mu Chen was a person who would always create miracles...The situation that he had originally thought was impossible to overturn was finally switched around magically by Mu Chen.

On the nearby mountains, the seniors that were watching this battle had stunned expressions. This tide of this battle had constantly changed, which had made them completely surprised.

"These freshmen are truly amazing. In the future, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will definitely become quite lively..."

At this moment, Li Xuantong stood up straight with his hands behind his back. His eyes were also focused on the mysterious black bird that had emerged behind Mu Chen. However, his eyes were quite something so he managed to predict which Spiritual Beast it was.

But the result of his prediction was something that he could not believe.

"How is it possible that he could ingest a Soul Essence of this level with his current strength?" Li Xuantong frowned. A Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast of this level was quite difficult to conquer, and even more difficult to ingest. However, only an idiot would believe it if one was to say that Mu Chen, with his Spirit Stage Late Phase strength, had managed to ingest it.

But the truth was placed in front of their eyes. Moreover, Li Xuantong was able to detect that the energy of Mu Chen's Soul Essence seemed to possess a higher level of Spirituality compared to Yang Hong's Soul Essence.

This feeling was quite strange. However, a truly keen individual would be able to perceive this subtle difference.

This feeling...It was as if one was a dead object while the other was a living creature.

After pondering for a while, Li Xuantong could only shake his head, and continue to stare at the sky. This time, he must admit that Mu Chen had completely surprised him. At the very least, the latter wasn't as weak as he had imagined.

In the instant that everyone in the mountains were shocked by the mysterious black bird, the three elders were completely surprised as well.

"Nine Netherbird...Impressive. How did that boy do it? An existence like the Nine Netherbird possesses the potential to evolve into a Divine Beast. Once it evolves, it will be an existence that is equivalent to Lord Dragon ... How could it be ingested by a human?" Zhu Tian and the others muttered as their eyes were filled with shock.

The Lord Dragon that they mentioned was the Guardian Beast of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the Northern Sea Dragon. Even the Principal would have to be polite in front of it.

Their keen eyesight wasn't something that a student could compare. Therefore, they knew that the Nine Netherbird was a prideful and terrifying Spiritual Beast. In order to ingest its Soul Essence, one must require a Sovereign-level existence to personally suppress it for them to ingest its Soul Essence. It was impossible for Mu Chen, who had come out from a tiny place like the Northern Spiritual Realm, to satisfy this condition.

As an elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Zhu Tian and the others knew about Mu Chen's information. Therefore, they were quite confused when they saw the Nine Netherbird.

"Interesting..." Elder Zhu Tian smiled as he continued to look up at the sky.

On the summit, Mu Kui and Bing Qing's expression had turned serious as well. At this moment, even they felt a hint of danger from Mu Chen.

As for Luo Li, she continued to stare at the sky calmly. Her red lips revealed a shallow smile. Although this trump card of Mu Chen made her surprised as well, she had always believed in Mu Chen. Therefore, she had always believed that this seemingly thin boy wasn’t someone that would be easily overwhelmed by others.

Everything that he had lost, he would slowly get it back.

While everybody’s gaze were focused on Mu Chen’s body, Mu Chen directed his thoughts into his body. This is because he could feel unique changes occurring within his aura sea.

Within his aura sea, the Nine Netherbird was sitting elegantly on top of the mandala flower. Black flames would surge out endlessly from its body as it rushed into the Spirit on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel.

At this moment, Mu Chen’s Spirit was completely covered with black flames. It looked extremely mysterious.

When the Nine Netherbird glanced at the Spirit on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel, it muttered lazily: “It actually managed to assimilate with my power to this extent. What a lucky fellow.”

This power was naturally brought forth by the Bloodline Bond. When Mu Chen had fought against An Ran within the Northern Heavens Hall, he had used this power as well. However, the power at that time was completely incomparable with the power right now.

Although Mu Chen had completed the Bloodline Bond with the Nine Netherbird, it doesn't mean that he could directly use the Soul Essence’s energy as he did not ingest the Nine Netherbird’s Soul Essence. Instead, he needed to gradually assimilate with the Nine Netherbird’s power. The more he had assimilated with it, the more power he would be able to control.

Moreover, this power would remain with him even if the Nine

Netherbird had left his body. Not to mention, when he had reached the limits of the assimilation, Mu Chen could even become the Nine Netherbird, and possess all the abilities of the Nine Netherbird.

From a certain extent, Mu Chen was basically considered to be a human form of a Nine Netherbird!

It wasn't a half-baked existence that Yang Hong and the others had formed.

This was the benefits of a Bloodline Bond!

In other words, the Bloodline Bond is a power that could evolve. For people like Yang Hong, who had directly ingested a Soul Essence, they would be able to gain more strength early on. However, its potential was far less than the former method.

In the sky, Mu Chen clenched his hands slowly while his body was wrapped in black flames. He could feel that the dense Spiritual Energy that was surging within his body. This power was enough to destroy mountains.

As his assimilation with the Nine Netherbird increased, he would be able to use more of its power. This power wasn't like the power that he had temporarily borrowed against the fight with Liu Jingshan. It was a power that he had complete control over.

Mu Chen slowly raised his head. A black fired burned within his eyes as he stared at the Ancient Tiger Dragon far away. At this moment, the latter's red eyes were focused on him tightly.

At this instant, Yang Hong's heart stopped out of shock. He originally thought that the battle was about to end, but a sudden change had occurred.

Although he wasn't able to clearly see the appearance of the mysterious black bird behind Mu Chen, Yang Hong was able to feel that the Ancient Tiger Dragon that he had ingested was trembling in fear. It seemed to be fearful of the mysterious black bird behind

Mu Chen.

Since the Ancient Tiger Dragon was afraid of this mysterious Spiritual Beast, its ranking had to be at least listed on the top 30 of the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking!

He could not imagine how Mu Chen was able to ingest a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence of that level. Even for him, he had only managed to ingest the Ancient Tiger Dragon's Soul Essence after his father joined forces with various Elders and that was only barely a success. But what did this Mu Chen rely on to do this?

This person is too dangerous!

This thought flashed through Yang Hong's heart. In this instant, killing intent rushed out from him. He understood that if he continued to let Mu Chen live, he, Yang Hong, would definitely be completely suppressed by him. As long as they were both within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy it would be impossible for him to become a dazzling existence.

This was something that Yang Hong wouldn't accept!

"Kill him!"

Killing intent surged through Yang Hong's heart. As he immediately roared out into the sky, an azure light surged out like waves. It rumbled as it rushed through the sky in order to envelop Mu Chen under it.

It was evident that Yang Hong was going to use everything that he could to kill Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen stared at the rumbling waves of Spiritual Energy approaching, he immediately concentrated and the gigantic black bird lifted its wings. Black flames surged out and formed into a sea of flames as it protected him.

Rumble!

The rumbling azure light rushed over and collided against the sea

of flames. However, once the azure light made contact with the blazing flames, it was evaporated instantly.

The mysterious black flame seemed to have burned even the Spiritual Energy.

Yang Hong's eyes changed instantly and recklessness filled his heart. Originally, he had the absolute advantage against Mu Chen, but all of a sudden, his advantage had completely vanished. Instead, he had become unable to even destroy Mu Chen's defenses.

The Ancient Tiger Dragon roared furiously as it attacked. However, the sea of black flames did not budge. In front of the mysterious black bird, the Ancient Tiger Dragon that was formed by Yang Hong, was like an angry loach.

At this instant, Mu Chen stared calmly at Yang Hong, who was completely furious. His body floated up and he landed on the mysterious black bird. Then, he flew up high in the sky.

As Mu Chen stared down condescendingly from above at the Ancient Tiger Dragon formed by Yang Hong, he suddenly closed his eyes. At the same time, he circulated the Great Pagoda Art within his body.

Black lights begin to emerge within the depths of his body and linked up with each other.

In the sky, the black light suddenly descended down from above as a bell sound rang out. Countless gazes hurriedly looked at the direction of the sound. Within the sky, the mysterious black bird had started to fade away. Instead, what replaced it was a massive nine-floor black tower. Black flames were wrapped on the surface of the black tower.

An extraordinary fluctuation rippled out in waves from the black tower.

When the Ancient Tiger Dragon formed by Yang Hong had

looked up at the nine-floor tower in the sky, a sense of anxiety and fear filled its heart.

Just when Yang Hong had felt uneasy about the tower, this nine-floor black tower had suddenly brought forth a horrifying energy fluctuation; it tore through the sky. And under countless gazes, it had completely suppressed the Ancient Tiger Dragon!

Refers to the Northern Sea Dragon, the Guardian Beast of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Chapter 185 – Black Tower Seals the Tiger Dragon

Boom!

At this moment, shockwaves rippled out high up in the skies. An extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation condensed like a storm as a powerful Spiritual Energy pressure enveloped the entire world.

The source of this rumbling Spiritual Energy was a massive black tower. Black flames surged throughout the surface of the tower as it descended down.

The scene was quite a shock and countless individuals watching could not hide the surprise within their eyes.

Even for those who had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, this attack was enough to stun them.

On the summit, Mu Kui and Bing Qing had exceptionally solemn expressions and their eyes twitched slightly. From the Spiritual Energy fluctuation in the sky, they could feel a fatal-type of danger.

It was evident that they never expected that Mu Chen and Yang Hong's battle would be this extreme.

In this instant, Mu Kui and Bing Qing exchanged gazes with each other. They both knew that the outcome of this battle would all depend on this one move.

In the sky, Elder Zhu Tian watched as the black tower descended down. A hint of confusion suddenly appeared on his handsome face and he frowned. Then, he muttered to himself: "This black tower…Why does it feel that I've seen it somewhere before…"

Even though he said that, Elder Zhu Tian had thought hard about it, yet he could not remember where he had seen this black tower.

Thus, he could only shake his head helplessly. It seemed that this freshman known as Mu Chen wasn't as simple as the information that he had known about him. Otherwise, how could a person from such a small Northern Spiritual Realm possess such frightening techniques?

"The outcome of this battle has probably been decided..."

Elder Zhu Tian lifted his head as he stared at the black tower, who had formed a massive shadow on the ground. It was clear that this attack contained all their strengths from both sides. They weren't holding back at all. Thus, the one who was at the disadvantage would probably end up losing completely.

In the sky above the summit, the Ancient Tiger Dragon formed by Yang Hong glared at the black tower, which was emitting an immense pressure. He, too, was able to detect a hint of unease and danger.

If he failed to stop Mu Chen's attack, he would probably end up in a complete defeat.

Once he lost, his achievements would all end up in Mu Chen's reputation. It was something that the prideful Yang Hong couldn't accept. No matter what, he must not let Mu Chen step on him!

"In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I, Yang Hong, am the most dazzling existence. Mu Chen, if you want to stop me, then I must force it so that I will be stepping on you!" A furious roar echoed within Yang Hong's mind. In the blood-red eyes of the Ancient Tiger Dragon, ferociousness gushed out.

The Ancient Tiger Dragon raised its head and roared out to the sky. Its roar was like a dragon, yet at the same time, it was like a tiger. It contained a deep fierceness emotion that was similar to the ingested Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Perhaps when he had obtained this power, his hidden personality was somewhat affected by the Soul Essence. Therefore, it was apparent that Yang Hong had changed slightly and became brutal like the Ancient Tiger

Dragon.

“Boom!”

As the Ancient Tiger Dragon roared, a dense azure light gushed out of the massive body. Golder tiger stripes emerged on the surface of the Tiger Dragon’s body and it started to glow. When the azure light and the golden light both appeared near the Ancient Tiger Dragon, it seemed to have formed into an azure dragon and a golden tiger that were fighting against each other. A hint of ferociousness had suddenly surged throughout the world.

“Mu Chen. I am the Number One Freshman, nobody can steal it away from me!”

This violent shout echoed through Yang Hong’s heart and he immediately concentrated. At this moment, the Ancient Tiger Dragon swung its massive tail upwards, it emitted an azure light, and covered a massive range.

Roar! Roar!

When the roars of the Ancient Tiger Dragon resounded out constantly throughout the world, everybody lifted their heads up in response. They watched as the Ancient Tiger Dragon rushed straight up into the sky.

And from above, the black tower with black flames continued to descend as it suppressed everything.

In this instant, both of them had red eyes!

Under countless gazes, accompanied with the black flames and azure light, the black tower and the Ancient Tiger Dragon soared through the sky and finally collided heavily with each other.

In the instant that they met, the world seemed to tremble. The ground that was kilometers below them started to tremble and cracks quietly spread out.

A stinging light with violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations surged

out from the sky. Rumbling sounds reverberated out along with it.

At this moment, the numerous gazes endured the stinging pain as they watched the furious collision between the two individuals. The violent and raging Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted out and distorted the air slightly.

“Roar!”

The Ancient Tiger Dragon continued to growl furiously as it charged ferociously. Waves of azure light smashed onto the black tower as it attempted to shatter it.

Despite this frenzied attack, the black tower remained motionless. Black flames surged through it and the azure light was burned whenever it approached the black tower.

“Buzz!”

Finally, in response to the powerful offensive displayed by the Ancient Tiger Dragon, a mysterious engraving slowly emerged on the tower. Black light quickly gathered on the base of the black tower and formed into a massive black rune.

This black rune moved slowly around, causing it so that nobody was able to see it clearly. However, a mysterious fluctuation with sealing abilities seemed to have emitted out from it.

“Pagoda Tower. Suppress All Things!”

Within the black tower, an ancient bell sound resounded out. All of a sudden, the massive black rune descended down and smashed onto the Ancient Tiger Dragon’s body.

Just from that one contact, the azure light emitted from the Ancient Tiger Dragon’s body suddenly darkened. A mournful roar also came out from the Ancient Tiger Dragon’s mouth.

It was able to detect that a mysterious force was entering its body through the black rune. Once this power invaded its body, it had sealed all of the Spiritual Energy circulation paths within its body.

It was as if it was forcibly sealed by it.

As the azure light darkened, a bright glow burst out from the black tower and it directly suppressed the massive body of the Ancient Tiger Dragon. After suffering such a heavy attack, the massive body quickly descended down from the sky along with the black tower.

Boom! Boom!

Everybody watched as the Ancient Tiger Dragon descended down, an explosion seemed to have emerged when the black tower collided with the Ancient Tiger Dragon. Even the ground below had collapsed from the collision.

“Dong!”

Under countless gazes, the black tower had finally descended down to the ground. In the end, it had landed on top of a mountain and the mountain instantly trembled. Many boulders rolled down the mountain and the entire mountain started to collapse.

Billowing smoke rose up into the sky and covered their sight.

At this instant, the entire world was completely silent. The only sound that still existed was the echoed of the boulders rolling down the mountain. Everybody’s gaze was completely focused on the collapsing mountain’s peak. The victor should have been determined, right?

From the foot of the mountain, Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the others all flew up into the sky as they watched nervously at that location. A conclusion had finally appeared for this shocking battle, right?

At the same time, Li Xuantong, too, focused his gaze in that direction.

On the summit of the Northern Spirit Mountain, Mu Kui, Bing Qing and Luo Li also flew up into the sky. Judging from their appearance, it seemed that the outcome of this battle was more

important than Spirit Flag that represented the Number One Freshman.

And under the countless gazes, the smoke on the collapsing mountain gradually faded away. Immediately afterwards, a land filled with cracks had emerged in their eyes. The mountain peak had been turned into a flat land. Moreover, the entire mountain was completely destroyed.

At the center of the mountain, a huge crater had emerged. The violent Spiritual Energy emitted out from that crater had slowly dissipated.

The situation was finally clear for everybody watching.

Everybody's gaze immediately gathered at that direction. Then, bustling commotions resounded throughout the world.

At the crater, the Ancient Tiger Dragon and the black tower had already disappeared without a trace. What replaced it were two slightly awkward individuals. Both of them had bloody bodies and torn clothes as they confronted each other.

These two individuals were naturally Yang Hong and Mu Chen.

At this moment, Yang Hong's hair had turned messy and it wasn't as stylish as before. His eyes were staring at Mu Chen in front of him. At the same time, a surging madness and fear appeared in his eyes.

"They're actually still standing?"

Seeing the two individuals confront each other, everyone was stunned. Aren't these two individuals too stubborn?

Mu Chen was slightly pale. He stared at Yang Hong and slowly wiped the blood off from the corner of his mouth. Then, he turned around and slowly walked away from the cracked ground.

"I've said it before. I will take back what belongs to me. This time, it's your turn to pay back your debt. Next time, it will be Ji

Xuan.” Mu Chen walked out of the cracked area and a hoarse voice resounded out.

Puchi.

At this moment, Yang Hong’s expression finally turned red and blood sprayed out as he lifted his head up. Then, his body slowly tilted forward before it crashed down on the ground. His eyes were filled with disbelief.

He actually… Lost again to Mu Chen.

Is that bastard truly this terrifying? Even though he had lost a year’s worth of cultivation… Even though he had lost the Spiritual Road Empowerment… Why is he still able to catch up with me?

Yang Hong’s eyes slowly closed. No matter how much he wasn’t willing to admit it, he knew that deep inside perhaps only Ji Xuan was able to suppress a dazzling existence like Mu Chen.

Chapter 186 – Who's the Number One Freshman?

Violent Spiritual Energy surged through the world before it finally dissipated. At this moment, countless gazes were focused on the place with shattered ground. To be precise, they were staring at the boy who was slowly walking out of the crater.

The boy's handsome face was slightly pale, and the Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitting from his body had weakened significantly. It seemed that he was slightly tired.

However, nobody laughed at his weakened and tired state. Even the seniors had serious expressions as they stared at him. It was evident that the earlier battle had shocked them as well.

A battle of this degree would rarely occur between freshmen. Even the seniors couldn't afford to deal with such a fierce fight.

In front of them, the freshman known as Mu Chen had earned everybody's respect and attention with his strength.

At the foot of the mountain, numerous freshmen were stunned as they watched this scene. The silence lasted for a long time before someone slowly raised their hands and started clapping gently. Soon, sounds of applause resounded out quickly as it echoed throughout the skies.

The performance and abilities displayed by Mu Chen had truly impressed them. At the same time, it gave face to the freshmen. At the very least, they'd be able to talk back towards the arrogant seniors within the academy.

'There's an amazing person among us freshmen!'

Mu Chen stood atop the shattered ground as he stared out towards the numerous figures in his surroundings. Then, when he heard the thunderous applause, he couldn't do anything but helplessly smile.

On the peak of a mountain, Li Xuantong gazed at the slender figure and slowly retracted his gaze. His chin nodded slightly. Mu Chen's appearance today hadn't disappointed him at all. As expected, Luo Li's eyes were quite capable.

However, even with this battle, Mu Chen still wasn't worthy of standing next to Luo Li. He'd only become an obstacle to her, and when that time came...the two of them might be hurt.

Li Xuantong's eyes drooped slightly. He knew that he liked Luo Li, yet Luo Li had only treated him as a friend. Even so, this was something that he felt that he had to do for Luo Li. Perhaps she might disagree with his actions, but it was needed.

The thunderous applauses lasted for a while before it gradually faded away. At this moment, Luo Li quickly rushed over and appeared beside Mu Chen. Her glass-like eyes stared at the latter as she asked gently, "Are you alright?"

Mu Chen smiled and nodded his head. However, his pale expression was apparently unconvincing. After all, Yang Hong wasn't an ordinary opponent. Even though he'd successfully defeated him, he'd still paid a great price. Right now, he, too, was considerably weak and powerless.

From the distant sky, Elder Zhu Tian slowly approached and appeared in the sky in front of Mu Chen. His eyes stared peculiarly at Mu Chen before he smiled, "Little guy, this battle is your victory. However, you didn't obtain the Spirit Flag yet, so you can't be regarded as the Number One Freshman."

Countless gazes immediately became focused on this scene. It was true. Although Mu Chen had managed to defeat Yang Hong, the Freshmen Competition wasn't a duel within an arena. Only the person who managed to obtain the Spirit Flag could be considered the Number One Freshman, and it was clear that Mu Chen hadn't satisfied this condition yet. However, the latter's strength had already made everyone accept him as the strongest.

Nobody present at the scene believed that there was someone among the freshmen that could defeat Mu Chen in a one-on-one duel.

When Ye Qingling and the others heard the words from Elder Zhu Tian, they felt slightly regretful. Although they hoped that Mu Chen would become the Number One Freshman, they knew that Mu Chen wasn't in a decent state right now. It was clear to them that both Mu Kui and Bing Qing were tricky individuals. The two of them weren't a lot weaker than Yang Hong. Therefore, there was a big disadvantage for Mu Chen if he was to fight against the two of them.

At this moment, Mu Kui and Bing Qing rushed over. They stood in the sky as they watched Mu Chen.

But under the numerous gazes, Mu Chen suddenly smiled. He shook his head and replied, "Elder Zhu Tian, I give up on the remaining battles. Let the others compete for the title of the Number One Freshman."

Regard the title of the Number One Freshman, Mu Chen had never cared much about it. The only reason why he'd gone against Yang Hong was because of the grudge that they held. And now, the outcome had been decided. Thus, he didn't want to force himself and carry out a high-intensity battle once again. This would only be a burden on his body.

"Oh? You're actually giving up on becoming Number One?" Elder Zhu Tian was surprised as he stared at Mu Chen. A boy like Mu Chen should be at the age where he was young, fit, and impulsive. A catchy title should be enough to make him fight to death. However, Mu Chen actually gave up on this chance?

Countless seniors were also surprised as they stared at Mu Chen. The latter's imposing aura was at the peak. If he continued to fight after his victory over Yang Hong, it might be possible for him to obtain the Spirit Flag if he joined forces with the girl in black dress

that he was extremely close to.

Mu Chen nodded his head. The rewards for the top 5 individuals were actually pretty close. Aside from the amount of Spiritual Values that they would obtain, the rest were basically the same. Moreover, they would all be able to enter the “Spiritual Arts Hall”. Therefore, he didn’t feel the need to fight against Mu Kui and Bing Qing for the title of the strongest.

“The competition for the Spirit Flag will belong to you two now.” Mu Chen directed a smile at Mu Kui and Bing Qing as he spoke.

“You’re not going to fight?”

When Mu Kui heard this, disappointment filled his eyes. Then, he shook his head melancholically as he replied, “I’m not interested in the so-called Number One Freshman. Right now, I’m more interested in a fight against you. How about it? Do you want to test me out?”

Mu Chen was stunned as he gave a bitter smile. This Mu Kui was truly a battle maniac…

“He isn’t in a decent state right now. If you enjoy fighting, I will fight against you. At the very least, I won’t disappoint you.” Luo Li said to Mu Kui.

When Mu Kui noticed this, he smiled embarrassedly. Then, he seemed slightly anxious as he shook his head. “Since you’re not going to compete anymore, the Freshmen Competition has turned completely boring. I can’t be bothered to fight against two women. That’s why, I’ll give up as well.”

“However, you must promise me: When you’ve fully recovered, you have to fight against me once… Just like earlier. There’s no need to hesitate. The more ruthless you are, the better the fight will become.”

Mu Chen could only nod helplessly in response to these words. He, too, had a favorable impression towards Mu Kui’s

straightforward personality. Therefore, he decided to put up with it.

“What did you mean when you mentioned women?”

Bing Qing suddenly frowned. She stared coldly at Mu Kui and a freezing chill slowly emanated out, “Do you really think that you can defeat me?”

Mu Kui was stunned and soon let out a hollow laugh. Against the creatures known as women, Mu Kui had always felt a headache. Therefore, he didn’t openly provoke Bing Qing again. After all, this girl was quite powerful and he might not win if they were to fight.

Seeing Mu Kui turn completely silent, Bing Qing finally turned her gaze towards Mu Chen and spoke, “The Freshmen Competition has become boring because of you. Everybody is giving up on it. If I were to seize the Spirit Flag, it would only make me look like a fool. Therefore, I don’t want to take the Spirit Flag either.”

Mu Chen’s mouth twitched at this moment. Why were all these individuals so unique... They didn’t want the title of the Number One Freshmen when it was handed directly to them. If it was anyone else like Yang Hong, they’d be quite anxious to rush over and pluck the Spirit Flag.

“All three of you are giving up?” Elder Zhu Tian was baffled as he stared at Mu Chen and the others. It was evident that he, too, had noticed that this year’s freshmen were quite unique.

Mu Kui and Bing Qing casually nodded their heads. Then, they both turned over and looked at Mu Chen, “This time, you have the right to become the Number One Freshman. After all, I would’ve probably ended up in a similar state as Yang Hong if I were to fight against you just now. Thus, if Luo Li, who is beside you, has no argument, then you deserve to become the Number One Freshman.”

Mu Kui and Bing Qing’s words were indeed true. In the earlier

battle, Mu Chen had fought furiously against Yang Hong and it was quite an exciting match. Even they had to recognize that they would've probably lost to that terrifying black tower that was revealed by Mu Chen in the final moments of the battle.

Although Mu Chen didn't fight directly against them, everybody was able to recognize and understand a few facts. Therefore, they didn't waste any time. With their prideful attitudes, neither Mu Kui nor Bing Qing wanted to take advantage of the weakened Mu Chen and seize the title of the Number One Freshman.

“Thank you for your praise.”

Mu Chen smiled and replied, “However, since we’ve already given up, let’s have Luo Li pick up the Spirit Flag. I believe that she’s more worthy of obtaining the title of the Number One Freshman than me.”

Although nobody had ever seen Luo Li’s true ability, Mu Chen was still able to feel that Luo Li’s true strength was definitely beyond Yang Hong. If Mu Chen were to fight against Luo Li unreservedly, he didn’t have the confidence that he’d defeat her.

When Mu Kui and Bing Qing heard this, they, too, glanced over at Luo Li. Then, they nodded their heads. Both of them were able to sense the same thing that Mu Chen had felt from Luo Li. Although Luo Li didn’t fight often, nobody dared to underestimate this beautiful girl. After all, even Bing Qing had stopped and temporarily abandoned her goal when Luo Li had stopped her.

Luo Li was startled for a moment. It was evident that she didn’t understand why the title of the Number One Freshman had suddenly fallen to her. At this moment, she glared at Mu Chen. This nasty person had actually pushed her to the front.

Perhaps others might covet the title of the Number One Freshman, but Luo Li didn’t really cared about it.

“Cough. Just to remind you, first place receives 500,000 Spiritual

Value. Right now, we're quite poor. If we obtained this Spiritual Value, we'd be able to improve ourselves quite a bit. It truly isn't easy raising a family." Mu Chen approached Luo Li and gently fiddled with Luo Li's slender hands.

At this instant, Luo Li was quite furious, yet she wanted to laugh as well. However, she didn't want to do anything to Mu Chen, who was quite powerless right now. Thus, she could only grit her teeth and charge to the summit under numerous gazes as she pulled out the enormous Spirit Flag.

Afterwards, she descended down while holding the massive Spirit Flag. She smiled slightly at Elder Zhu Tian, who was in a daze, and said, "Elder Zhu Tian, can you announce the results now?"

Tears of laughter filled Zhu Tian's eyes as he nodded. These freshmen were truly quite fascinating, and impossible to understand at the same time. After all, Luo Li hadn't fought against anyone, yet she had somehow become the Number One Freshman...

Even amongst the history of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it was probably the first time that a person had obtained the title of the Number One Freshman that easily, right?

Chapter 187 – Conversation

The Freshmen Competition eventually came to a rather comical conclusion. The one to take the title of the number one freshman was neither Yang Hong nor Mu Chen, who had fought in a life-or-death battle, but Luo Li, who hadn't even fought at all.

Many of the freshmen and seniors had been somewhat disappointed with this turn of events. They couldn't help but smile wryly, but there wasn't much to complain about. They had already witnessed the spectacular showdown earlier between Mu Chen and Yang Hong during this Freshmen Competition. It was likely that any further fight would not have been able to eclipse that performance so the desire to watch them was not high.

The so-called Number One Freshman was just a title. Luo Li, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing may not have fought, but their abilities were unquestionable. The ease with which they had reached the summit had already confirmed their strength.

In addition, there had been occasions where the strongest freshman hadn't been the one to seize the Spiritual Flag. However, everybody naturally knew how to assess the strongest freshman deep within their hearts.

The battle they had just witnessed earlier had left them completely shaken. Even the proud seniors of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy couldn't help but admire Mu Chen for achieving this level as only a freshman. They obviously felt in their hearts that Mu Chen is fully deserving of being first among this year's freshmen class.

Of course, whether Mu Chen had any thoughts about what the others were thinking was another question.

The cultivation fervor among the freshmen had died down somewhat following the end of the Freshmen Competition. During this transition period in Northern Spiritual Heavens Academy,

they were currently familiarizing themselves to the new surroundings and truly becoming a part of this massive spiritual academy.

In Mu Chen's case, he also took three days off for rest and recuperation to fully recover from his fight against Yang Hong. Although Mu Chen viewed the latter unfavorably, he had to admit that Yang Hong was quite capable. Based on his talent alone, he would be able to carve out a place for himself at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

However, Mu Chen did not fear him; he had already beaten him once before, and naturally there will be a second time and a third. If Yang Hong is unable to live with it and want to cause problems for Mu Chen, he would not mind letting him experience the taste of defeat again.

On top of a very small house, Mu Chen motionlessly sat cross-legged, looking up at the vast blue sky. A long time passed before he exhaled a mouthful of white air and stretched his body which had become somewhat stiff from inactivity.

He had been quietly residing here to recover from his injuries these last few days. As for the commotions that he had caused due to his duel with Yang Hong the other day, he was hardly concerned about it.

Mu Chen swept a glance around the outskirts of the freshman area; bustling conversations could be heard coming from there and the mood seemed exceedingly exuberant. Ever since the Freshmen Competition, their residential area had undoubtedly become the most dazzling of all the freshman areas. Plenty of freshmen made their way here wanting to join the Goddess Luo Association and follow Mu Chen and Luo Li.

However, Mu Chen and Luo Li clearly didn't give much thought to this kind of thing. On the other hand, Zhou Ling had shown an intense enthusiasm. Moving back and forth all day long, he worked

hard to expand the Goddess Luo Association's prestige and influence.

"This guy..."

Mu Chen gave a resigned smile. He couldn't relate to Zhou Ling's passion, but he had a favorable impression of Zhou Ling and therefore supported his undertaking.

"Hmm?"

Mu Chen was looking into the distance, but his expression abruptly changed as he turned his head, only to see a streak of light approach from the distant sky. Within a few breaths of time, it had already appeared above his small house.

The figure turned out to be a man with a handsome face and a pair of indifferent eyes. It was precisely Li Xuantong.

Li Xuantong emerged and glanced lazily at Mu Chen. His eyebrows could not help but crease as he said. "Looking like this, could it be that you believe that your victory over Yang Hong and becoming the number one freshman is enough for you to be complacent?"

Mu Chen frowned, but did not bother to argue with him and replied. "The number one freshman is Luo Li and not me. Besides, I had just recovered; a small break doesn't seem too excessive, right?"

Mu Chen did not hold a particularly good opinion of Li Xuantong. He seemed to be familiar with Luo Li, but Mu Chen did not appreciate him interfering in the affairs between Luo Li and himself. He might have his reasons, but he definitely did not have any respect or consideration for them.

However, since Li Xuantong did not have any bad intentions toward Luo Li, Mu Chen had tolerated the uncomfortable feeling in his heart, not wanting to fall out with him.

I also witnessed the battle during the Freshman Competition a

few days earlier." Li Xuantong said indifferently. "I have to admit that you do have a bit of ability, but like I've said before, you still do not have the qualification to be in a relationship with Luo Li."

Mu Chen's eyes slightly narrowed as a trace of anger flit across his eyes, his voice becoming flat. "Senior Li Xuantong, don't you think you are sticking your nose where it doesn't belong?"

Mu Chen stared at Li Xuantong and continued. "Please remember that you aren't anybody to Luo Li, so you have no business interfering in her choice. If you despise me, don't hesitate to come at me; whatever you want to do, I'll accompany you."

"Are you angry?" Li Xuantong smiled faintly as his expression slowly became frosty. He looked at Mu Chen with a sharp gaze similar to cutting edge of a sword and said: "It's not that I want to interfere in her choice; rather, it's you who is preventing her from making the right decision. You're not like what she thinks and, at the same time, you also can't imagine her burden. You like her, but do not know that you staying by her side is a grave hindrance to her."

"That is why leaving her is the best thing you can do for the both of you. I also wish that you are able to do this very much." Li Xuantong said with a deep voice.

Mu Chen's eyes slowly gained a fierce light. He stood up, looking coldly at Li Xuantong and said. "And if I say no?"

"In order to lessen her suffering in the future, I'll have no choice but to make my move." Li Xuantong said indifferently.

"You can try!"

Mu Chen's eyes turned cold as he stared at Li Xuantong. Dark black Spiritual Energy rapidly surged out from his body.

Li Xuantong remained expressionless as he took a step forward. The Spiritual Aura of the world immediately converged, causing the sky above the small house to become somewhat distorted. An

extremely terrifying pressure exploded out and came crashing down on Mu Chen.

This frightening pressure enveloped Mu Chen's body, but his tall and lean frame remained perfectly straight like a spear. His eyes fixated on Li Xuantong and did not show any sign of fear, even if the person before him is the Heaven Ranking Rank 2 powerhouse.

Kacha.

Mu Chen sunk into the ground, causing the ground to split open and cracks to appear. The dark black Spiritual Energy that covered his body also became somewhat muted, but his expression remained unwavering as he stared at Li Xuantong.

Such a confrontation continued for half a minute before Li Xuantong took a step back, causing the oppressive feeling to immediately dissipate. He gazed at Mu Chen and said coldly. "I'll give you two months. If you still do not leave Luo Li within two months, I will take action."

"You are an awfully arrogant person. I believe if you are repeatedly beaten at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it will be a severe psychological shock for you."

Li Xuantong continued apathetically. "Don't question my ability to keep my word. And believe me when I say the hardships you may encounter in the future will seem mild in comparison to what I'll do to you. So I hope you are smart enough to know when to cut your losses and back down.

Mu Chen's eyes became icy-cold and his five fingers slowly clenched into a fist at this moment. This self-righteous prick really rubs people the wrong way.

"You should carefully consider your next move during these two months."

Li Xuantong suddenly turned his head and look into the distance. A streak of light flew over from that direction before revealing a

familiar silhouette of a beautiful woman. It was precisely Luo Li. She had obviously sensed the confrontation between the two. A trace of anger could be detected from the Spiritual Energy fluctuation.

“I hope you don’t reveal what was said between us to Luo Li to get her to stop me. I will be thoroughly disappointed if that happens.” Li Xuantong said indifferently. Without further delay, his figure moved and disappeared into the distance.

Swish.

Once Li Xuantong left, Luo Li rushed to the top of the small house, her beautiful face turned to look coldly at the direction Li Xuantong had left. Afterwards, she looked at Mu Chen with her glass-like eyes and said. “He didn’t do anything to you, right?”

Mu Chen looked back and smiled; his eyes were somewhat hazy. “No.”

Luo Li stared at Mu Chen, and then said after a slight hesitation. “He didn’t say anything, right?”

Mu Chen stared into Luo Li’s clear and lovely glass-like eyes and then suddenly reached out to take the young girl into his arms. Caught by surprise, the young girl was too slow to react as her delicate cheeks flushed red, but she did not try to push him away. She was able to sense that there was something bothering Mu Chen.

“Luo Li.”

Mu Chen lowered his head, lightly breathing in the delicate fragrance of the young girl’s hair, before he said softly. “No matter what, regardless of what price I need to pay or effort I need to put in, I will absolutely not let you go.”

The young girl’s white arm wrapped lightly around Mu Chen’s waist as her face rested upon Mu Chen’s chest. Softness flit across her clear eyes as her small head gently nodded.

Mu Chen slowly raised his head and looked in the direction that Li Xuantong had disappeared to. A penetrating light gathered in his dark pupils.

Li Xuantong, I don’t care what reasons you may have, but if you really want to get involved I will not let you get what you want so easily.

Mu Chen knew that Li Xuantong was difficult to deal with, much more difficult than Yang Hong, but he also clearly understood that there are some things that he simply cannot give up, no matter the consequence.

The girl in his arms, for example.

Chapter 188 – Spiritual Energy Fusion

A dark clear night enshrouded the massive Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as a faint moonlight poured down from above. At this moment, the entire world seemed to be covered with a hint of silver color.

However, within the bustling and populated Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it was still shining brightly even though it was late in the night. In a few training grounds, it was still possible to see people cultivating endlessly.

In the freshmen area, Mu Chen was sitting cross-legged in his room, simply letting the dazzling moonlight shine through his window and illuminate his body. At this moment, his eyebrow twitched slightly while his eyes flashed.

The conversation that he had during the day with Li Xuantong had finally made him serious. It was evident that Li Xuantong was planning to intervene with his relationship with Luo Li. Moreover, it was clear that he did not have much goodwill towards Mu Chen.

There was no doubt that Li Xuantong was extremely powerful. After all, he was a powerhouse ranked second on the Heavenly Ranking even among all the geniuses within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Nobody would dare underestimate him.

If he was actually going to intervene in this matter, it might become troublesome for Mu Chen.

Thus, in order to deal with this problem, Mu Chen did not have any choice but to become stronger. Only then, he would not be afraid of any possible actions that Li Xuantong would take against him.

But for the current Mu Chen, Li Xuantong was clearly extremely difficult to deal with. Although they have not fought against each other, Mu Chen had already predicted that Li Xuantong had far

surpassed the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

The gap between him and Li Xuantong was too large. It wouldn't be easy for him to cover the gaps with his various techniques. Aside from relying on the Nine Netherbird's power like he did against Liu Jingshan, there was no way for him to deal with Li Xuantong. However, if he was to do that, he believed that he wouldn't have won with his own strength. After all, the battle with Liu Jingshan was about life and death. As for the battle against Li Xuantong, it hadn't reached the same extent of resolve yet.

Furthermore, Mu Chen did not like showing off with the Nine Netherbird's power. After all, this power did not truly belong to him.

"In order to be able to compete against Li Xuantong, I probably will have to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage..."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. The gap between a Spirit Stage and a Heavenly Fusion Stage was far too enormous. Even he could only compete against a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase after exhausting all his techniques. Once he confronts a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase, he would be at a disadvantage. Not to mention an entity like Li Xuantong, who had far surpassed the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

Therefore, if Mu Chen wanted to reduce the gap between the two of them, he would have to break past the Spirit Stage and advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage during these two months!

Mu Chen nodded his head gently. It seems that he couldn't relax even after he had defeated Yang Hong. There are countless geniuses within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If he did not continue to work hard and constantly push himself to become stronger, perhaps next time he would be the one that loses.

"Just another two days and we will be able to enter the "Spiritual Art Hall". I must try my best to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art. This way, I will have another trump card up my sleeves." Mu Chen

mumbled.

Deity Tier Spiritual Art. These words were extremely tempting to anyone. Even Mu Chen could not help but become moved upon thinking about it. After all, he had never seen a Spiritual Art at that level before. However, it was clearly synonymous with the meaning of powerful.

In the Spiritual Art Hall, there are countless Deity Tier Spiritual Arts for sale. However, the high prices stopped Mu Chen from obtaining them. Therefore, it was an excellent chance for him to enter the Spiritual Art Hall this time.

Although he knew that the chances of obtaining a Deity Tier Spiritual Art was extremely low, he still had to try no matter what.

“Power...Power...”

Mu Chen shook his head while he sighed unhappily. His leisurely days had been destroyed by Li Xuantong. Although he did not know what Li Xuantong wanted two months later, it was apparent that he would have to be well prepared.

Mu Chen curled his lips slightly and slowly closed his eyes. His consciousness sunk down into his aura sea. On top of the mandala flower, the Nine Netherbird was lying down lazily as a black flame continued to burn endlessly on its body.

“Are there any methods to make me stronger?” Mu Chen scratched his head as he asked the Nine Netherbird.

“Aren’t you strong enough now? You were able to defeat a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase opponent with your Spirit Stage Late Phase strength.” The Nine Netherbird extended its wings lazily. Every single one of its actions revealed a hint of elegance, causing Mu Chen to seriously doubt its gender.

“It isn’t easy to deal with Li Xuantong.” Mu Chen smiled and immediately responded. “Moreover, that person has been in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a long time. He probably

has millions of Spiritual Values. Therefore, if we manage to obtain it, perhaps we would be able to buy the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence..."

The Nine Netherbird's eyes immediately brightened up upon hearing these words. The black flames on its body suddenly became more intense.

"So, can you help me think of a way to improve my strength? Once I become stronger, the speed of obtaining Spiritual Values would also accelerate. This way, you will be able to obtain the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence sooner." Mu Chen smiled. He had completely grasped the weak point of the Nine Netherbird.

"That Li Xuantong is considerably stronger than you. He isn't someone that can be compared with Yang Hong. If you are going to confront him right now, you will absolutely get slaughtered." The Nine Netherbird knew that Mu Chen was using its weakness to provoke it. Thus, it glared at him as it spoke.

"Don't I have two months?" Mu Chen smiled. Regarding the difference in strength, Mu Chen did not feel frustrated about it. After all, Li Xuantong was indeed quite talented and had cultivated in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for countless years. If he didn't have such strength, he would have been looked down upon by others.

The Nine Netherbird stared at Mu Chen as it spoke: "What you are thinking is correct. Right now, the most urgent matter is for you to quickly breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage. Otherwise, you wouldn't be able to compete against Li Xuantong."

Mu Chen nodded his head slightly. He also understood this. If he could not advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he was not qualified to fight against Li Xuantong. Techniques were only a method of closing the gap between him and his opponents. But once the gap was too big, no matter how powerful his techniques were, it was completely useless in the face of absolute strength.

Mu Chen sighed. It looks like that he must attempt to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage...

“Wait.” Just when Mu Chen was about to exit his aura sea, the Nine Netherbird suddenly spoke.

“Eh?” Mu Chen stared at it in confusion.

“It’s true that you must breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage. However, I can provide a bit of help to strengthen you as well.” The Nine Netherbird responded. Currently, it had formed a Bloodline Bond with Mu Chen. If Mu Chen was too weak and was killed by someone, it, too, would end up dead. Therefore, the Nine Netherbird would not hide any means of improving Mu Chen’s strength.

“What help are you talking about?” Mu Chen was stunned and his face was instantly filled with delight as he asked.

“Spiritual Energy Fusion.” The Nine Netherbird replied faintly.

“Spiritual Energy Fusion?” Mu Chen repeated the phrase spoken by the Nine Netherbird and was completely dumbfounded. It was evident that he had never heard of the term “Spiritual Energy Fusion” before.

“Spiritual Energy Fusion is something that could only be performed by someone with a Bloodline Bond. It is actually quite simple. As long as we fuse our Spiritual Energy, you will be able to obtain a special power within your Spiritual Energy.”

The Nine Netherbird extended its wing. On top of its wings, a black flame was burning: “What do you think about my black flame?”

“It’s truly powerful.”

Mu Chen nodded honestly. The Nine Netherbird’s black flame was even able to incinerate Spiritual Energy. Moreover, since he was able to utilize the black flame when he had borrowed the Nine Netherbird’s power, he understood the effects of the black flames

extremely well.

“This is called the Nine Nether Flame. It is an innate ability of the Nine Netherbird race and can ignite Spiritual Energy and all types of energy. This flame is extremely powerful. Moreover, it would even accompany us through our evolution and evolve as well. Once I evolve into a Divine Beast, this Nine Nether Flame will evolve into the Nine Netherworld Flame. Furthermore, if I become even stronger and completely awaken the ancient Undying Bird’s blood within my body, the flame will become unperishable unless I die.” A hint of pride could be heard within the Nine Netherbird’s voice as it explained. It was evident that this Nine Nether Flame was something that the Nine Netherbird’s race was extremely proud of.

Mu Chen nodded his head as he praised it deep down inside. Within this world, there are indeed many wonders. Although the Spiritual Beasts are quite different than humans, they, too, possess special abilities that humans would truly hope to obtain.

“If you are able to complete the Spiritual Energy Fusion, your Spiritual Energy will also possess the abilities of the Nine Nether Flame. From that moment onwards, the Spiritual Energy that you’ve cultivated will become more overbearing than anybody else’s Spiritual Energy. It can be considered as a qualitative improvement of your Spiritual Energy.”

“Oh?”

Mu Chen’s eyes lit up. His Spiritual Energy will obtain the incinerating abilities of the Nine Nether Flame? Although Mu Chen was able to utilize a tiny amount of the Nine Nether Flame when he was borrowing the strength of the Nine Netherbird, the Nine Nether Flame would vanish once he had stopped borrowing from the Nine Netherbird. It would not remain within his own Spiritual Energy.

Hence, he had become surprised once he heard that the Spiritual

Energy Fusion that the Nine Netherbird had mentioned would allow his Spiritual Energy to possess the characteristics of the Nine Nether Flame.

“How can we perform this so-called Spiritual Energy Fusion?” Mu Chen asked urgently.

“The Spiritual Energy Fusion, it is not an easy task. Since the synchronization between me and you was too low previously, we were not able to reach the level of being able to perform it. However, we should be able to barely perform the Spiritual Energy Fusion right now.”

A hint of delight appeared within the Nine Netherbird’s tone. “I must inform you, though. The Spiritual Energy Fusion is extremely painful. Your Spiritual Energy might be incinerated by my Nine Nether Flame, which would cause more pain than you being thrown into a volcano. If you are able to endure it and complete the fusion, your Spiritual Energy will change.”

“So…Are you courageous enough to try it?”

Mu Chen did not hesitate and nodded. Flames began to burn within his eyes: “When do we start?”

“There’s no need to hurry. You should rest for a day or two first. Then, after we leave the Spiritual Art Hall, we can find a place to cultivate and strive to help you breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage within two months. At the same time, we will also complete the Spiritual Energy Fusion!” The Nine Netherbird responded.

“Good!”

Mu Chen grinned. If he was able to complete both tasks, his strength would likely increase significantly. When that happens, he would possess a few means to compete against Li Xuantong.

Chapter 189 – Number One

In the following two days, Mu Chen followed what the Nine Netherbird's instructions and didn't focus heavily on cultivation. Instead, he made the effort to rest calmly in order to reach his peak condition.

The results were quite excellent and in just two days, Mu Chen had completely recovered from his injuries in the battle against Yang Hong. The Spiritual Energy within his body surged endlessly throughout his body like a river and he could feel an immense power rippling through his limbs.

Compared to when he fought against Yang Hong, Mu Chen could feel that the Spiritual Energy within his body had become denser. Although the battle was quite dangerous, it clearly brought a few benefits to his cultivation. However, this increase did not make him reach the limits of a Spirit Stage Late Phase and the feeling of breakthrough did not appear yet...

Regarding the breakthrough, Mu Chen remained fairly calm. After all, it was not easy for one to advance to a Heavenly Fusion Stage. Even though he had cultivated steadily, it still required a certain catalyst and enough Spiritual Energy before he could truly advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

Therefore, it was apparent that he could only cultivate quietly and wait for that day to arrive.

In the freshmen area, Mu Chen sat cross-legged on top of a clear lake as faint Spiritual Energy surrounded his body. It gave off an appearance as if he was floating above the water.

Beside the lake were a few training grounds. Numerous freshmen were either cultivating or sparring at that place and almost all of them were part of the Goddess Luo Association. After the day when Mu Chen had a fight with Yang Hong, the prideful "Wyvern Association" no longer dared to act arrogant. Instead, the "Goddess

Luo Association" took the opportunity and increased in size. Luckily, both Zhou Ling and Ye Qingling had experiences in managing a large group of people. Thus, they did not allow just anyone to enter. Only after they had passed through a few trials, they would be permitted to enter the Goddess Luo Association. This was the primary reason that the "Goddess Luo Association" was not filled with countless freshmen.

Amongst the freshmen, Mu Chen was currently the most dazzling figure. He shone brighter than Yang Hong, Mu Kui and any of the others. After all, the battle on the day of the Freshmen Competition was just too amazing. Even after a few days, numerous freshmen were still talking about it. However, this was not limited to the freshmen, even a few seniors would praise them and inform others of that brilliant fight.

Therefore, many curious and awed gazes would be focused at the center of lake.

As Mu Chen sat cross-legged on top of the lake, he could feel the ripples from the surface of the water. A hint of serenity had emitted out from his heart and caused the flow of his Spiritual Energy within his body to become more agile.

Suddenly, fluctuations occurred on the peaceful lake and Mu Chen slowly opened his eyes. Then, he gave a faint smile towards Ye Qingling and Zhou Ling, who had approached him.

"Hey, it was said that Yang Hong had regained consciousness today." Zhou Ling smiled as he spoke to Mu Chen.

However, Mu Chen gave an indifferent nod. It was apparent that Yang Hong was gravely injured compared to him, thus, he had just woken up from his coma.

"You will head to the Spiritual Art Hall tomorrow to select your Spiritual Arts," Ye Qingling stated enviously: "If you are able to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art, it would truly be amazing."

After all, a Deity Tier Spiritual Art was extremely attractive for almost anyone.

“How could I obtain one that easily?” Mu Chen smiled. If a Deity Tier Spiritual Art could be obtained so easily, it wouldn’t be priced at such a terrifying price at the Spiritual Values Hall.

“By the way, what were you doing for the past few days? You did not cultivate and instead acted quite lazy like an old man.” Zhou Ling asked curiously. For the past two days, Mu Chen had been quite lazy. He stayed in the freshman area and did not head to a Spirit Convergence Array or to the Lightning Territory to cultivate.

“Adjusting my condition.”

Mu Chen smiled and did not explain further. He lifted his head and stared at the massive bird-like mountain within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. On the wings of this bird-like mountain, the Spirit Ranking was shining with a golden light. Moreover, his name was currently shining on the Rank 3 Position on it.

“I plan on becoming Rank 1 on the Spirit Ranking.”

Mu Chen’s gaze stared towards the Spirit Ranking’s Rank 1. On that place, a dazzling name was there: Su Ling’Er. It was evident that the person that occupied the Rank 1 position was a girl.

“Spirit Ranking’s Rank 1?” Zhou Ling and Ye Qingling were stunned. Delight immediately filled their faces. Although the Spirit Ranking was only a low-level ranking within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it would cause a tremor within the academy if someone reached the top of it.

Mu Chen might be Rank 3 on the Spirit Ranking, but both of them knew that the difference in power that it represented was completely different.

If Mu Chen managed to become the Spirit Ranking’s Rank 1, it

would definitely bear more weight than the title of the Number One Freshmen.

“However, the person who occupied the Rank 1 position of the Spirit Ranking is Su Ling’Er…She is a well renowned beauty within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.” Zhou Ling spoke as he stared at the name on the peak of the Spirit Ranking.

However, Mu Chen smiled. A beauty? He did not believe that she was more beautiful than Luo Li.

“Moreover, the most troubling fact is that Su Ling’Er’s sister is Su Xuan.” Zhou Ling gave a hollow laugh before he continued.

“Su Xuan?” Mu Chen was finally stunned and asked in surprise: “The one that is Rank 3 on the Heavenly Ranking? That Su Xuan?”

Zhou Ling nodded. The weight of that name was not any weaker than Li Xuantong in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Since Su Xuan possessed such a reputation within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she must not be a petty-minded individual. Replacing an individual on a ranking is a normal occurrence.” Mu Chen smiled. This time, he was going to use his full strength on the Spirit Ranking. Once he had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he would not be able to attempt for a higher ranking anymore. Therefore, this was basically his final chance.

After all, reaching the Rank 1 position of the Spirit Ranking would definitely bring a large amount of Spiritual Values. Therefore, it was quite tempting to Mu Chen, who required a considerable amount of Spiritual Values.

When Zhou Ling heard this, he did not speak anymore. If Mu Chen managed to become Rank 1 on the Spirit Rankings, it would be a great publicity for the Goddess Luo Association. When that happens, their reputation and fame would increase significantly.

At this moment, Mu Chen slowly closed his eyes. Then, Zhou

Ling and the others were able to see a dark-black Spiritual Energy surging out from Mu Chen's body. Mu Chen's body floated up and a powerful Spiritual Energy pressure quietly spread out.

Around the lake, many Goddess Luo Association's members noticed the change at this location and immediately turned their gazes over in curiosity.

Under the countless gazes, Mu Chen's body floated in mid-air before he suddenly opened his eyes. A bright light flashed through his black eyes and the dormant Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's body acted like an awakening lion.

Dark-black Spiritual Energy gathered at Mu Chen's palm at an extraordinary speed. From afar, it seemed like a mass of ink had appeared.

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the massive stone tablet in the distance. He immediately took a deep breath before he slowly blasted out a punch.

After Mu Chen had slowly fired out his punch, the air in front of him seemed to have explode. Black light gathered and four black light seals had emerged. Soon, these four black light seals had formed into a black beam of light as it bombarded on the Spiritual Values Card in front of Mu Chen.

A brilliant rainbow beam burst out from the Spiritual Values Card when the black beam smashed onto it. Under countless gazes, this beam soared through the air and finally landed on the stone tablet which recorded the Spirit Ranking.

The massive stone tablet immediately trembled and a strange buzzing soon rang out. At the same time, golden light unleashed out from it as if it was a rising sun.

The change on the Spirit Ranking had immediately attracted numerous Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's students' attention. They stared dumbfounded at the Spirit Ranking and

soon, they noticed that the name that was Rank 3 on the Spirit Ranking had suddenly emitted a glow. The glow it emitted was as if it was time for a change and the name suddenly rose up. In an instant, it had completely erased the name that had been on the summit of the Spirit Ranking.

The stone tablet issued out a mysterious sound as if it was announcing that the King of the Spirit Ranking had been replaced by someone else.

Finally, the golden light that was entrenched on the top position of the Spirit Ranking had faded away and revealed two golden words.

Spirit Ranking Rank 1, Mu Chen!

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, countless gazes were focused on the unfamiliar name on the top of the Spirit Ranking. All of a sudden, they fell silent. But soon, sounds of surprise appeared.

However this time, not many people felt that this change was anything strange. After all, this name had begun to become known to many seniors after the battle during the Freshmen Competition. They knew that the freshman known as Mu Chen possessed the strength that even that they had to pay attention to.

But this boy was surprisingly amazing. He actually did not care and kicked Su Ling'Er off the Spirit Ranking...That girl wasn't a gentle person at all. She had a completely different personality compared to her sister...

Who knows how her beautiful appearance would change once she noticed that she was kicked off the Spirit Ranking's Rank 1 position...And how she would grit her teeth as she cursed at that bastard that replaced her...

Just when the seniors secretly laughed, they gazed at that name and shook their heads in pity. This freshman was truly a dazzling

existence. Perhaps in the nearby future, this name would truly become quite phenomenal...

Chapter 190 – Su Xuan, He Yao

Mu Chen stared at the sparkling Spirit Ranking in the sky, above the lake, and smiled. He immediately grabbed onto his Spiritual Values Card and noticed that it had increased by a total of 100,000 Spiritual Values. Including the 400,000 Spiritual Values that he had obtained during the Freshman Competition, he had saved up approximately 500,000 Spiritual Values. This was considered to be a decent amount of Spiritual Values. However, it was still far far away from the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence...

Mu Chen curled his lips helplessly. Last time, when he had taken the Rank 3 position of the Spirit Ranking, he had caused Mo Lun to appear. Yet this time, he had taken the Rank 1 position...Who knows what troubles would await him?

However, there was no helping it as it involved Spiritual Values. Who told the Nine Netherbird to keep bugging him about it...

Near the lake, the freshmen witnessed this scene with a burning passion. They stared at the name on the Rank 1 position of the Spirit Ranking and felt their blood boil. If in the future, they were able to leave their name on the ranking, it would definitely be something that they could be proud of.

"Amazing."

Zhou Ling gave a thumbs up as he praised Mu Chen. He no longer had any doubts about Mu Chen. This person was truly bizarre. Even though Mu Chen was only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase, a person at the Heavenly Fusion Stage would still avoid him. Right now, the very same person easily kicked off Su Ling'Er, who had occupied the top position of the Spirit Ranking for nearly a year. Just how is this something easily done by a freshman?

Mu Chen smiled and did not talk about this matter. Instead, he waved his hand towards Zhou Ling and Ye Qingling as he walked towards the depths of the freshman area, leaving behind gazes

filled with worship.

The commotion caused by the Spirit Ranking had also attracted the attention of the other freshman area. When these freshmen noticed the familiar name on the Spirit Ranking, they could not help but exclaim.

At a certain freshman area, Yang Hong's face darkened as he stared at the Spirit Ranking. He gripped his hands tightly and a cold aura emitted from his body. In that instant, the members of the Wyvern Association took a step back and didn't dare to approach.

"Mu Chen. I won't give up this easily!" Yang Hong's eyes flashed as he gritted his teeth, with his fists constantly crackling. The more dazzling Mu Chen appeared, the more he felt his face boil in anger. The feeling of being overwhelmed by someone wasn't something that a narrow-minded person like himself could endure.

At another location, Mu Kui and Bing Qing both stared at the Spirit Ranking. Their gaze changed slightly before they retracted their gaze. This person was truly someone who did not want to be left alone.

He had only dealt with the matter of Mo Lun a while ago, yet he, once again, had kicked someone off the Spirit Ranking.

At the same time when Mu Chen entered the top of the Spirit Ranking, Li Xuantong, who was located on a quiet platform on a mountain, stood up with his hands behind his back.

This mountain was owned privately by Li Xuantong and was a reward given to him by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy after he had completed a Heaven Rank mission. The Spiritual Aura within this location was equivalent to being within a Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array. A private residential area was something that many students would dream of having. However, generally speaking, this private residential area was worth more than 1,000,000 Spiritual Values. Therefore, it wasn't something that a

normal student could possibly afford.

Li Xuantong stared towards the vast and wide, Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Numerous figures were rushing back and forth the academy.

Suddenly, a figure of light approached from afar. Then, it landed on the platform of this mountain. At this moment, Li Xuantong's expression changed slightly as he turned his body over. But what entered his sight was a girl in black dress with calm eyes and an exquisite appearance.

"This is truly rare. You would actually come searching for me by yourself." Li Xuantong's apathetic expression faded away slightly as he smiled.

Luo Li glared at the boy in front of her. The latter was quite handsome and was considered to be outstanding. Even within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was liked by countless girls. However, she, herself, had never felt anything towards this boy.

"What did you say to him yesterday?" Luo Li raised her eyebrow as she asked.

But in response, Li Xuantong only smiled.

"Li Xuantong, this is my own affairs. I do not wish that you will intervene in them. Also, I hope that you would not interfere with him either." Luo Li said in a cold tone.

The smile on Li Xuantong's face gradually faded away. He stared at Luo Li and replied: "Even if I stop interfering with him, he would still be obstructed by others in the future. The interference he would have to face would be ten times...no, hundred times stronger!"

"When that happens, what would you do?"

Luo Li clutched her hands tightly and responded, "I can deal with it by myself".

“By yourself?” Li Xuantong shook his head and replied: “It seems that you like him quite a lot. Otherwise, how is it possible that you would say such words? Love truly is fascinating…Even an intelligent person would become reckless due to it. However… I have never thought that you would become like this. For him to change you like this, Mu Chen is truly fortunate.”

Luo Li remained silent.

Li Xuantong sighed as he stared at the beautiful girl in front of him. Emotions faintly passed through the depths of his eyes. Back then, when she was still only a little girl, he had already fallen in love with her. He had witnessed this cheerful little girl slowly become more and more calm and mature due to her burdens. Moreover, she was exceptionally tough to herself…tough enough to the point where even he had even felt sympathy towards her.

“You should be aware of the situation of the Luo God Clan. There aren’t many decisions you can make by yourself. Perhaps coming to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is the last decision you can make by yourself.”

“You don’t have much time left. Since you already know that you will be separated from him, why did you come here? This act of yours would not benefit either of you.”

Li Xuantong stared at the girl in front of him. A hint of pain flashed through her glass-like eyes as she muttered quietly: “I have thought about never appearing before him after I left the Spiritual Road. However, I couldn’t endure it. I was afraid that he might have become dispirited since he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road. Therefore, I wanted to be together with him as he endured this pain. I wanted to see him reveal his brilliance out once again.”

“When I am beside him, I feel happy. It’s been years since I had this feeling.” Luo Li’s eyes drooped as she laughed at herself: “I would hate to miss out on this feeling. Therefore, please let me enjoy this feeling during this period of time. You know that my

responsibilities are great and I will shoulder them. However, I hope that you would not intervene with him."

"For myself…Please let me pass through this time like this," Luo Li said gloomily as she turned away and slowly disappeared from this mountain.

Li Xuantong stared at Luo Li's parting figure and slowly closed his eyes. When he had finally reopened them, his gaze had regained the calmness that he had before.

At this moment, at a far away place, the Spirit Ranking erupted out a glow and Li Xuantong directed a gaze towards the name that was Rank 1 on the Spirit Ranking. After a while, he retracted his gaze from the Spirit Ranking.

Luo Li. It's not that I want to pick on him. However, if he really did not possess the strength to be with you, he would only become an obstacle for you in the future. That is why I will deal with him with my own methods.

At a certain location of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there was a massive lake. An island with a house and flowers blooming was at the center of this lake.

At this moment, a furious voice resounded out from the house.

"AHHHHH! That freshman known as Mu Chen is truly annoying. He isn't satisfied after seizing Mo Lun's Rank 3 position. He even dared to kick me out of the Spirit Ranking. This pisses me off!"

"Sister. You must help me even out the score!"

The house became silent for a moment before another girl let out a gentle laugh: "The Spirit Ranking originally belongs to the freshmen. Why are you even on the Spirit Ranking in the first place? Since that you've been kicked out of the Spirit Ranking, you should work hard and focus on the Heavenly Ranking."

"But he's too much! A freshman that had just arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is actually acting this

arrogant!”

“Ohoho, this freshman is quite powerful. I won’t help you about this matter. Also, you should be honest with yourself. If you were to fight against him, you probably aren’t his opponent.”

“I don’t believe it!”

The door of the house was pushed open with rage, and a pretty little girl rushed out from within. She wore a light yellow dress and her blue hair was tied up in a ponytail. As her ponytail bounced, it revealed her youth and vitality.

Once this little girl exited the house, her body immediately turned into a figure of light as she quickly disappeared into the distance.

Once the little girl had departed, another graceful figure slowly walked out from the house. Her blue hair flowed straight down and her pointed face was white like snow. Her appearance gave off a gentle temperament.

At this moment, she stared helplessly at the direction where the little girl had headed to.

“Ohoho, what happened to Ling’Er? Who angered her this time?” A laugh suddenly appeared outside of the lake as a figure appeared on the island.

The person that arrived had a tall and thin body. His blue hair was exceptionally unusual and he had a handsome appearance. However, a hint of evilness was revealed within his face. But once combined with his smile, he was quite appealing to the girls.

“Nothing happened.” The gentle girl glanced at him and replied with a smile: “Is there something that you want from me?”

“I’ve recently accepted a Heaven Rank mission and I need a partner. Therefore, I wanted to ask if you have some time.” The boy in blue hair smiled. Within the depths of his eyes, a hint of passion and emotion appeared as he stared at the gentle girl.

However, the gentle girl shook her head and rejected him. “I need to focus on my cultivation recently. Therefore, I don’t have the time to do the mission. You should find someone else.”

Once these words were said, she immediately returned back to the house and gently closed the door.

Seeing this, the boy with blue hair could only smile helplessly. Then, he turned around and exited the island on the lake. Once he reached the shore, a group of people rushed over and asked, “Boss, did she reject you again?”

“Boss, you are, after all, a famous individual who is ranked 4th on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Heavenly Ranking. She truly isn’t giving you any face. If it wasn’t for the fact that you held back against her, she wouldn’t be occupying the Rank 3 position of the Heavenly Ranking.” A person muttered angrily.

“Why are you so impatient?” The boy with blue hair smiled: “You can only obtain such an outstanding girl slowly. It’s not possible to obtain her easily. Relax, she will eventually belong to me in the future.”

The boy’s smile was gradually filled with wickedness. Then, he turned around and looked at the house at the center of the lake as he grasped his hands tightly.

“The girl that I, He Yao, took a liking to…How is it possible for her to escape from my clutches?”

Chapter 191 – Spiritual Arts Hall

When morning arrived the next day, both Mu Chen and Luo Li left the freshmen area, and headed towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After all, today was the day that they'd select Spiritual Arts from the Spiritual Arts Hall.

Mu Chen was deeply moved and passionate about when it came to the Spiritual Arts Hall. To a certain extent, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was considerably stricter than the Northern Spiritual Academy. At this place, there were things known as free Spiritual Arts that one was able to learn. If one wanted to obtain a powerful Spiritual Arts, they could only obtain it by exchanging for it with Spiritual Value.

Every single student within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would constantly work hard to obtain Spiritual Value. This was because the effects of one's cultivation would be greatly reduced if one didn't have Spiritual Values.

The Spiritual Arts Hall was a place where students would drool even more so about entering. However, not everyone was able to enter this place freely. Only the outstanding students, those who had obtained an award from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, would be able to enter this place and possess the chance of obtaining a Spiritual Art.

Moreover, if one was lucky, it was possible to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art from the Spiritual Arts Hall. Therefore, entry to the Spiritual Arts Hall was enough to make one be filled with jealousy.

Mu Chen and Luo Li headed directly to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and after approximately a dozen minutes or so, they gradually slowed down their speed. In the end, they landed on the peak of a towering mountain.

Atop the mountain, there was a massive hall. A stone square was in front of the massive hall. This location was where both Mu

Chen and Luo Li landed.

As they landed on the stone square, they glanced around and noticed that this place was completely empty. However, their expressions had turned serious the moment they landed. The two of them had clearly perceived a faint consciousness passing through their bodies. This consciousness was considerably powerful, and it was evident that there was a guardian hidden nearby.

The Spiritual Arts Hall was an important place within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Thus, it was certainly filled with powerful defenses. If anybody wanted to wreak havoc at this location, they'd probably wind up engulfed in a tragedy.

Mu Chen and Luo Li exchanged gazes with each other before they slowly walked towards the massive hall. At the same time, they relaxed their bodies and didn't reveal any tension.

Just when Mu Chen and Luo Li stood in front of the massive hall, swishing sounds resounded from behind them as three figures descended down. They, too, landed on the stone square. These individuals were Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing.

In the instant that Yang Hong appeared, his eyes had already become fixed on Mu Chen's body. He immediately clutched his hands tightly, as his eyes filled with rage.

However, Mu Chen only glanced at him for a moment before retracting his gaze. Then, he smiled at Mu Kui and Bing Qing.

"The two of you have come quite early," Mu Kui said as he grinned and walked forward. His eyes swept across the massive hall and muttered: "I never imagined that the security at this place would be this powerful. I was nearly scared to the point of wanting to run away."

Mu Chen smiled. It seems that they, too, had felt the powerful consciousness scan through them when they'd approached this

place.

“Little guys, you’ve arrived too early. I haven’t even properly rested yet.” Just when the five of them had gathered at the Spiritual Arts Hall, a lazy voice appeared from within the hall. Mu Chen and the others immediately raised their heads and noticed Elder Zhu Tian appearing above the massive hall all of a sudden. As he appeared, he revealed an appearance as if he hadn’t slept yet.

“Greetings to Elder Zhu Tian.”

Mu Chen and the others bowed down towards Elder Zhu Tian in a line. It was evident that they had to be respectful to Elder Zhu Tian, who was a Heaven Ranked Elder at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Elder Zhu Tian smiled as he nodded. In an instant, he had appeared in front of Mu Chen and the others. The speed he showed made the five of them completely stunned. They weren’t aware of exactly when the former had appeared in front of them. Instead, they had a feeling that Elder Zhu Tian had always been standing in front of them.

“So powerful.”

Mu Chen was secretly shocked. Was this the power of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Even a Heaven Ranked Elder possessed such strength. No wonder the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was able to possess such a reputation throughout the entire Great Thousand World.

Elder Zhu Tian chuckled as he stared at the five of them. His gaze circulated around Mu Chen’s body a few times and, under his gaze, Mu Chen felt that the latter had seen through everything within his body as a chill arose.

“Good. Since everybody has arrived, let us enter the Spiritual Arts Hall.”

However, Elder Zhu Tian’s gaze didn’t remain on his body for

long, and he quickly waved his hand. Then, he turned around and looked at the tightly closed doors. After flicking his finger, a light was shot out towards the gigantic bronze doors.

As the light passed through, the bronze door started to glow. Rays of light began to intertwine with each other and vaguely formed a complex array. A subtle, yet powerful fluctuation was emitted from it.

“As expected, the security is quite tough. Not only is it protected by so many hidden experts, it’s also protected by such a powerful Spiritual Array.” Mu Chen glanced at the array for a moment and secretly smacked his lips. From the fluctuations currently being emitted, he could tell that the Spiritual Array on the bronze door was at least Rank 5, or was even higher.

“Follow me.”

Elder Zhu Tian waved his sleeves and took the lead. As he took a step into the bronze door, a bright light glowed and he disappeared. Seeing this, Mu Chen and the others also quickly followed.

Immediately after the five of them had passed through the bronze door, lights flashed in front of their eyes. A hint of dizziness appeared within their heads. When they finally recovered, the scene in front of their eyes had already greatly changed.

It was a place filled with dazzling rivers that were formed by light rushing forth from all directions. As they stared further out into the distance, they could see that this scene had extended to the horizons.

Mu Chen and the others were stunned when they witnessed this bizarre scene. It was evident that this place was completely different from the Spiritual Arts Hall that they’d imagined. Moreover, they didn’t see any Spiritual Arts in this place.

Elder Zhu Tian’s body appeared in front of them and a smile rose

on his face. He pointed at the numerous rivers of light and smiled as he said: “This place is the Spiritual Arts Hall. And the Spiritual Arts that you all wanted are hidden in this place…”

Mu Chen and the others were surprised as they stared at the rivers of light. They could vaguely feel mysterious fluctuations emitting from them.

“First of all, I must tell you this. The Spiritual Arts Hall is the collection place of the Spiritual Arts within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Arts. There are countless Deity Tier Spiritual Arts within this place. If you possess both the strength and luck required, it’s possible for you to obtain one.”

Elder Zhu Tian smiled, “Of course, it doesn’t mean that it’s certain that you’ll obtain a Spiritual Art after entering the Spiritual Arts Hall. Once your challenge to obtain one has failed, you will return empty-handed.”

“Challenge has failed?” Mu Chen and the others were filled with doubt. This could also occur?

Elder Zhu Tian nodded and explained: “Within the rivers of light, there are countless Spiritual Arts. If you want to obtain a satisfactory Spiritual Art, you’ll have to enter and search for one. It’s fine if it’s a normal Spiritual Art, but if you grab onto a powerful Spiritual Art, you’ll be transferred somewhere. At that place, you’ll meet the protector of that Spiritual Art. Their strength will be based on the level of the Spiritual Art. As long as you can defeat them, you will be able to obtain the Spiritual Art that you have chosen. However, if you are defeated, you will lose the opportunity to obtain a Spiritual Art, and will have to return empty-handed.”

Mu Chen and the others were stunned. It truly wasn’t easy to obtain a Spiritual Art from the Spiritual Arts Hall.

“Therefore, I would advise you not to be too persistent in your pursuit of the strongest Spiritual Art. Otherwise, you might be

quite unlucky."

Elder Zhu Tian waved his hand and asked, "Is there any questions you would like to ask?"

Mu Chen and the others exchanged gazes and slowly shook their heads. Eagerness filled their eyes. It was evident that the method of acquiring a Spiritual Art had evoked their interest.

"If that's the case, then let's begin. I hope that you will be able to return here in success," Elder Zhu Tian said as he nodded and smiled.

"Let's go!"

Mu Chen exchanged gazes with Luo Li and the two of them smiled. They took the lead and headed straight into a river of light. Behind them, Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing also quickly followed and vanished within the river of light.

When Elder Zhu Tian witnessed the five of them rush into the river of light, he smiled and muttered: "I wonder what these kids will obtain. It isn't easy to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art..."

Once Mu Chen entered the river of light, the sight in front of him turned brighter. He stared in front of himself, and noticed that the beams of lights were rushing past his body at an alarming speed.

As Mu Chen looked at the beams of lights that passed by, he was able to notice that there were scrolls within the beam. A peculiar Spiritual Energy fluctuation was emitted from them, and it was evident that they were all high rank Spiritual Arts.

Mu Chen extended his hand out and grasped onto one of the beams. When his hand grabbed onto the beam, information quickly flowed into his mind.

Collapsing Thunderfist, Spiritual Tier Middle Rank Spiritual Art. The aura formed was like lightning. It is a tough and overbearing technique which can even shatter mountains.

Mu Chen smacked his lips. He didn't expect that he would just randomly grab onto a Spiritual Art at the Spiritual Tier Middle Rank level. This Spiritual Art would be considered a treasure at the Northern Spiritual Academy. But at this location, it was just a common item.

Mu Chen released the beam that he had grabbed onto and allowed it to rush away from him. It was clear that he wasn't interested in a Spiritual Art at this level. Since it was a rare chance for him to enter the Spiritual Arts Hall, it would be a disappointment if he was to obtain a Spiritual Tier Middle Rank Spiritual Art after entering the Spiritual Arts Hall.

"The best items are probably at the back."

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the beams of light at the very end. He smiled slightly, and quickly turned into a beam of light. He rushed over towards the depths of the river of light.

As Mu Chen was rushing towards the depths of the river, he didn't detect that the mysterious black paper within his aura sea had twinkled slightly.

However, the Nine Netherbird that was laying on the mandala flower seemed to have noticed it. It stared at the mysterious black paper that it was afraid of for a moment, yet it didn't detect anything. Therefore, it closed its eyes once again.

Chapter 192 – Selecting the Spiritual Art

Within the magnificent and glamorous river of light, Mu Chen's body rushed out like lightning. Countless beams of light rushed through the sky and every single one of these beams possessed a scroll that was glowing in a different color. Spiritual Energy fluctuations would emit from these scrolls.

However, Mu Chen only glanced at these beams and did not take any action. Relying on his past experiences, he knew that the scrolls within these beams of light were mainly Spiritual Tier Middle Rank Spiritual Arts. Although they were decent Spiritual Arts, Mu Chen wasn't satisfied with them anymore.

As Mu Chen continued to progress further in, a thick and bright beam burst out. The lustre of this beam was clearly brighter than the beams he had seen earlier.

Mu Chen stared at this beam and dark black Spiritual Energy gushed out of his hands. It extended out like billowing smoke and rushed over towards the beam.

When the beam of light had entered the black Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen quickly retracted his Spiritual Energy. However, the beam continued struggling like a caught fish within his Spiritual Energy. His dark Spiritual Energy started to show signs of it crumbling. Seeing this, Mu Chen quickly utilized his Spiritual Energy and wrapped heavily around the beam of light. Then, he stretched out and grabbed onto this beam

In the instant he had grabbed onto the beam of light, information flowed into his mind.

Grand Arctic Jade Hand, Spiritual Tier High Rank. Requires extremely cold Spiritual Energy to learn. When it is mastered, the cold aura is extremely overbearing and could turn one into an ice sculpture through contact. Once the sculpture is hit, it would shatter.

“It is actually a Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art.” Mu Chen smacked his lips. Speaking of which, a Spiritual Art at this level is considered to be quite excellent. Even the Spirit King Finger that he had learned was only at the level of a Spiritual Tier Low Rank Spiritual Art. As for the Shadowspirit Step, it was at the level of a Spiritual Tier Middle Rank. Both of these Spiritual Arts had helped Mu Chen out numerous times in the past. However, with the increase of his strength, these Spiritual Arts were not able to satisfy him any longer.

Mu Chen hesitated for a moment before letting this beam of light escape. Although Elder Zhu Tian had warned them not to be too persistent in obtaining a Deity Tier Spiritual Art and should know when to stop, Mu Chen did not want to be easily satisfied with such a Spiritual Art. This was not recklessness, but the confidence that he had within himself.

After letting the Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art escape, Mu Chen continued to rush into the depths. In a few minutes, he had seen many Spiritual Arts that were at the same level of the Grand Arctic Jade Hand. However, he had let all of them escape his grasp. His black eyes swept through the dazzling river of light nervously as he continued to search for a Spiritual Art that truly tempted him.

This search of his lasted for approximately ten minutes. Finally, Mu Chen was able to discover...

Of course, it couldn’t be said that he had discovered it. This is because the beam of light was too amazing. If the beam of lights earlier were like loaches, this beam of light was like a serpent. It was massive and powerful. All other lights would avoid it as it passed by. It was as if these lights were afraid of this massive light and did not dare to face it.

When Mu Chen noticed the serpent-like beam, he could vaguely see a blue glow within it. This blue glow was like a storm and it exuded out a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation.

“That’s the one!”

Mu Chen’s eyes glowed. He hurriedly stabilized his posture and Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body. Then, his Spiritual Energy rushed out and attempted to envelop the serpent-like beam.

But just when the Spiritual Energy had enveloped the beam of light, the beam of light shook furiously and rushed out as it forcibly destroyed the black Spiritual Energy.

The powerful resistance displayed by the beam of light had shocked Mu Chen. He did not dare to relax and hurriedly utilized his Spiritual Energy and continued to attempt to wrap it around the beam of light.

Chi Chi!

But against Mu Chen’s obstacles, the beam of light smashed it in a rampage. With a powerful manner, it had rushed through all these obstacles. The former’s obstruction was completely useless in front of it.

This beam of light was actually powerful to this extent!

Mu Chen’s eyes turned serious and he smacked down with his palm. He immediately muttered: “Vajra Pagoda!”

Dark-black Spiritual Energy surged out and quickly formed into a massive hand. Mysterious black tower engravings loomed out within the hand and a powerful suppression was released.

When the massive hand was condensed, it was smashed down towards the beam of light. An extraordinary shock wave emitted out when the two had made contact with each other. This shock wave had blown away all the other beams of light.

Endless Spiritual Energy fluctuations burst out from the massive hand. The tower engraving would constantly squirm and a mysterious power was released. Finally, it managed to slow down the beam of light. But even so, Mu Chen found that he could only

fight against it in a stalemate and it was difficult to actually suppress it.

“I’ll see how long you can endure this!”

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and circulated his Spiritual Energy. He continued to infuse the Spiritual Energy into the massive hand. If he were to relax, the beam of light would escape and everything that he had done would come to naught.

Therefore, the two attacks had remained at a stalemate. Spiritual Energy fluctuations would emit out continuously, causing the surroundings to become empty.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and sweat began to form on his forehead. In order to remain this stalemate, he needed to consume a large amount of Spiritual Energy. Moreover, it was like a tug of war, once he relaxed, he would lose.

Boom!

Spiritual Energy fluctuations burst out endlessly. But just when sweat flowed down from Mu Chen’s forehead constantly, the beam of light was no longer as powerful as before. Instead, the lustre of its light had turned slightly dim.

“This is the moment!”

When the beam of light had turned dim, Mu Chen’s eyes flashed. He smacked down with the massive hand and it bombarded against the beam of light. Lights flew in all directions. At the same time, Mu Chen rushed forward and his hand entered the storm within the beam of light.

Chi Chi.

The storm was like a blade and cut Mu Chen’s hand. Bloodstains appeared, yet Mu Chen remained calm. He had completely ignored it as his hand grasped onto the scroll within the storm.

When he caught the scroll, a powerful resistance rushed out from

it. The scroll attempted to escape, but Mu Chen had tightly held onto it. Spiritual Energy surged out and wrapped around the scroll. Even if his hand was injured, he would not let it escape.

Fresh blood slowly dripped down from his palm. In the end, the scroll's resistance grew weaker and Mu Chen finally retracted back his palm. His eyes stared eagerly at the scroll within his hand.

This scroll was blue in color. Its entire body was like a jade and countless tiny gales would form near the scroll. A swishing sound would emit from it, causing it seem quite peculiar.

When Mu Chen grabbed onto the blue scroll, he felt a wave of information entering his mind.

Nine Dragon Skywind Art, Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Learn through obtaining the astral winds of the heavens and earth. When it is mastered, nine dragons would roar and cause the world to split apart. It is impossible to detect its divine might.

"Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art?"

Mu Chen hesitated for a moment before surprise and delight filled his face. Delight because this Spiritual Art was not a common item and surprise because there was actually a Quasi-Deity Tier in terms of Deity Tier Spiritual Arts.

Judging from its appearance, the Quasi-Deity Tier was probably the lowest level of the Deity Tier Spiritual Art. But no matter how low it is, it cannot change the fact that it is a Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Its power is immense and it was not something that a Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art could compare with.

Mu Chen stared at the Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art and his eyes twinkled. He nodded his head. A man should not be too greedy, you should stop when you know that it's enough. A Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art is already considered to be powerful. If he was too greedy, it was possible that he would end up with nothing.

Thinking about this, Mu Chen no longer hesitated and tightened

his grasp. He planned on shattering the scroll and get transferred into it. After he defeated the protector within the scroll, he would finally obtain this Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

But just when Mu Chen was about to shatter the scroll, a mysterious buzzing vibration was emitted out from his body. His hand instantly became powerless and had loosened up.

At the same time, the blue scroll burst out from his hand and formed into a beam of light as it flew away quickly.

Mu Chen was dumbfounded as he stared at this scene. The Deity Tier Spiritual Art that was within his grasp had flown away. Even with his personality, he could not resist and shouted angrily: “Nine Netherbird, was this your doing?!”

It was apparent that the vibration earlier was not made by himself. And inside his body, there was only the Nine Netherbird. Therefore, who else could it be except for this bird?

Within his aura sea, the Nine Netherbird had completely ignored Mu Chen’s furious shout. Instead, it stared tightly onto the piece of black paper. On the surface of this black paper, a dark purple light slowly rose up and flew away.

Mu Chen, who was about to enter a rampage and had planned to trouble the Nine Netherbird, suddenly noticed a dark purple light wrap his body. Then, before he could react, it had completely surrounded Mu Chen and dragged him into the depths of the river of light at an amazing speed.

This scene had completely startled Mu Chen. When the dark purple light appeared, he knew that it wasn’t the Nine Netherbird’s fault. He immediately focused and gradually discovered the source of the vibration.

When Mu Chen discovered the source of the fluctuation, he sucked in a mouthful of cold air. His eyes were filled with disbelief. This commotion was actually caused by the mysterious black paper

that had never done anything to him during the many years he had obtained it?

“What does it want?”

Mu Chen muttered. At this moment, he had discovered that he had already lost control of his body and could only allow the dark purple light bring him to the depths of river of light. This made him wanted to cry, yet tears would not come out. The Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art that he spent so much effort to obtain...

But just when Mu Chen was brought to the depths of the river of light by the dark purple light, in an independent space deep below, a beam of light that had dozen of suns suspended near it had exuded out an extraordinary pressure.

At the same time, a deep rumbling suddenly rang out. Black lights had slowly emerged behind the dozen suns.

When the black lights emerged, the dozen suns actually retreated back a bit. It was as if the suns were afraid of the black lights.

The black lights swayed and an ancient fluctuation emitted out from it. It stopped for a moment and suddenly it rushed out from the deepest parts of the river of light as if it was attracted by something.

Chapter 193 – Four Gods Constellation Scripture

Within the brilliant river of light, a dark purple light flashed by. The countless beams within the river of light actually moved away by themselves, and allowed the purple light to pass through smoothly.

At that moment, Mu Chen was within the purple light. His expression was filled with disbelief and shock. Ever since he'd obtained the mysterious black paper, it had only displayed a miraculous power when the Nine Netherbird had attempted to seize his body. Since then, it had returned to its peaceful state, and no matter what Mu Chen did, he'd failed to make any contact with it.

But contrary to his expectations, the mysterious black paper had once again begun to move...

Although Mu Chen was stunned, he didn't resist it. Ever since he'd obtained the mysterious black paper from the Spiritual Road, it'd never caused him to be in danger. Instead, it had protected him. Therefore, it was unlikely that the paper would harm him.

As he thought about this, Mu Chen gradually calmed down. He stared at the beams of light that flowed by, and noticed at least three different beams that were just as bright as the Nine Dragon Skywind Art as he progressed further in. It was evident that these beams possessed a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art as well.

Mu Chen stared reluctantly at the bright lights in the distance. However, seeing that the purple light didn't show any signs of stopping, he could only let out a helpless sigh. Right now, he wanted to see just where it would bring him to.

The dark purple light continued to carry Mu Chen into the depths of the river of light. After approximately ten minutes, Mu

Chen noticed that his speed had finally slowed down. At that moment, the surroundings were completely devoid of light, and weren't as magnificent looking as before. Instead, it seemed that he'd reached the very end of the river of light.

In the end, the purple light had finally stopped and Mu Chen glanced around in the darkness. He let out a bitter laugh. Just what the hell was going on?

Just when Mu Chen became dumbfounded, swishing sounds rushed out from the deepest parts of the darkness. He immediately turned around and noticed a black clump with a tail of light rushing towards him at an alarming speed.

The black clump of light quickly arrived in front of Mu Chen. At that moment, Mu Chen stared at it in surprise. The clump of light was pitch-black and looked like a tiny black hole. Even his line of sight seemed to be sucked into it. Therefore, Mu Chen wasn't able to see anything as he looked at it.

Although he wasn't able to detect anything strange with it, Mu Chen's gaze turned serious. This was because he could vaguely feel an immense and obscure fluctuation being emitted from within the black clump.

As he continued to gaze at the black clump of light, the roars of an ancient dragon and a tiger resounded out from within. Aside from these two roars, there were also two other, different ancient roars as well.

When Mu Chen heard the ancient dragon and tiger's roar, his expression had become completely serious. From these sounds, he could sense a mysterious pressure.

Mu Chen stared tightly at the black clump of light, and couldn't decide whether or not he should touch it. At the same time, he didn't dare to move either. His instincts told him that this item was probably more formidable than the Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art earlier.

Just when Mu Chen hesitated, a purple light rushed out from his body and illuminated the black clump of light. At the same time, Mu Chen was able to detect that the mysterious black paper within his aura sea had started to vibrate. A mysterious purple light was constantly being emitted out.

Chi Chi.

Under the radiance of the purple light, the black clump of light had actually melted away. Soon, the item within the black clump was revealed in front of Mu Chen.

Within the faint black light, there was a dark scroll. Ancient beast engravings were carved atop the surface of the scroll. At the same time, lights were emitted from within, and had condensed into illusionary beast figures near the scroll. Each one of these figures roared out. From the sound, Mu Chen was able to sense that it was both mysterious and ancient...

Mu Chen stared at the powerful aura that was emitted out from the scroll and his heart trembled. He hesitated for a moment before he extended his hand out. The black scroll slowly descended down and landed within his palm.

In the instant he made contact with the black scroll, he was able to detect that a wave of information had flowed into his mind.

Four God Constellation Scripture. A powerful Deity Art created by using the Constellation Spirits of the four directions. It could summon the Constellation Spirits from all four directions. Once these four gods gathered, it could tremble the heavens and the earth.

It was a simple introduction, yet it wasn’t able to conceal the powerful and overbearing aura being emitted. But what had shocked Mu Chen the most was that it didn’t state the level of the Four God Constellation Scripture.

Even though it wasn’t stated, Mu Chen was aware that this

Spiritual Art was definitely at the Deity Tier level. Moreover, it was much more powerful than a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art; he was actually unclear as to just how powerful it was.

“This Four God Constellation Scripture seems to be related to the mysterious black paper within my body,” Mu Chen muttered as he held onto the black scroll. From the commotion caused by the mysterious black paper, Mu Chen knew that it was the mysterious black paper that had attracted this Spiritual Art towards him. Otherwise, it would’ve been impossible for Mu Chen to reach this place with his own power, and he wouldn’t have been given a choice to obtain a Spiritual Art at this level.

Although he’d obtained this black scroll, Mu Chen still hesitated for a moment. It’s not like one could take away a high ranked Spiritual Art just because they’d managed to obtain it. This was because one first had to defeat the protector in order to take away the Spiritual Art.

Furthermore, from what Elder Zhu Tian had said, it seemed that the more powerful the Spiritual Art was, the more powerful the protector would become. Even though Mu Chen hadn’t faced against any of the protectors before, he knew that the protector that were used to protect a Deity Tier Spiritual Art weren’t weak at all.

Mu Chen lowered his head and stared at the black scroll within his hand.

Should I take it or not?

Mu Chen’s eyes flashed for a moment before he finally became serious. Since there was such an opportunity, he mustn’t miss out on it. It wasn’t a big deal if he failed, he’d just return empty-handed!

Thinking about this, Mu Chen no longer hesitated, and gripped onto the black scroll tightly. An overwhelmingly powerful dark light was unleashed and instantly enveloped Mu Chen’s body.

Then, both Mu Chen and the black scroll vanished from that place.

At a certain location in the Spiritual Arts Hall.

Elder Zhu Tian sat cross-legged within a large hall. In front of him, there was a white-haired old man. In front of them, they would gently place pieces on the Go Board from time to time.

Within the large hall, there were a dozen of other individuals sitting with closed eyes. It was clear that they were currently cultivating.

“Ohoho, I wonder if any of this little guys will manage to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art this time? During the past few years, only Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong managed to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art during their freshman year, right?” The white-haired old man in front of Elder Zhu Tian chuckled as he placed a board piece down.

“That depends on the mood of the Spiritual Arts Hall. If it’s in a bad mood and has strengthened the protectors, it will become much more difficult.” Elder Zhu Tian smiled and continued speaking, “However, there are a few powerful ones among the freshmen this time. I think that it’s possible for them to obtain a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art.”

The white-haired old man smiled and nodded. Just when he was about to speak again, his expression suddenly changed. From within the hall, a rippling fluctuation was being emitted out. It was from a consciousness that didn’t seem human.

“Someone made contact with a Spiritual Art at the Core Territory of the Spiritual Art Collection.”

When this thought was conveyed out, Elder Zhu Tian and the white-haired old man’s expression changed. Their board pieces dropped down onto the Go Board and had actually shattered both the board and the table.

“A Spiritual Art from the Core Territory?!”

Elder Zhu Tian and the white-haired old man exchanged gazes with each other in astonishment. Then, they immediately frowned and asked, “How is this possible? It is impossible for even a Heavenly Transformation Stage to enter that place. How could someone have made contact with a Spiritual Art inside that place? Moreover, the Spiritual Arts within that place aren’t even among the Spiritual Arts that could be selected by students. How could someone possibly enter that place?”

“The Spiritual Art rushed out from that place by itself.” A thought was conveyed out to them.

“What?” Elder Zhu Tian and the white-haired old man were finally stunned. The Spiritual Art had actually come out by itself? This was the first time that they’d ever heard of this occurring.

Within the large hall, the dozen figures, who were cultivating, also opened their eyes. Surprise filled their faces. It was also the first time since they’d guarded the Spiritual Arts Hall that they had heard of such a thing occurring.

“Which Spiritual Art is it?” Elder Zhu Tian asked solemnly.

The Spiritual Arts that were stored within the Core Territory of the Spiritual Arts Hall were considered to be a treasure even within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Ordinarily speaking, it wasn’t something that they could let a student to obtain.

The inhuman-like consciousness turned silent for a moment before it responded: “Four Gods Constellation Scripture.”

“Four Gods Constellation Scripture?”

Elder Zhu Tian and the white-haired old man were stunned. Their eyes immediately shrank slightly and asked, “Is it that ancient Spiritual Art that nobody has ever successfully learned?”

“Yes.”

Elder Zhu Tian frowned. It was unknown when the Northern

Heavens Spiritual Academy had obtained this Spiritual Art. However, ever since they'd obtained it, no one had ever successfully managed to learn it. Even the principal had attempted to learn it, and had still failed. According to the what their principal had said, the "Four Gods Constellation Scripture" was a powerful Spiritual Art that was probably born from an ancient scripture. It would be immensely difficult to learn it without the ancient scripture...

But why would such a situation occur now?

"Who obtained this Spiritual Art?" Elder Zhu Tian inquired.

The air trembled and lights gathered within the hall. In the end, it had condensed into a handsome boy with a slender body.

When Elder Zhu Tian looked at the figure formed by light, his eyes were filled with surprise. He muttered, "So it was Mu Chen...That boy isn't simple...Not only does he possess the Nine Netherbird's Soul Essence, he even caused the "Four Gods Constellation Scripture" to rush to him by itself..."

Elder Zhu Tian chuckled and his eyes flashed.

What an interesting little guy.

Chapter 194 – Protector

When Mu Chen opened his eyes once again, the river of lights had already vanished. Instead, a dark golden hall had emerged in front of him. This hall was quite spacious and seemed to pulse with a chill as if it was made of metal.

Mu Chen's eyes swept across the massive hall and stared at the center of the hall with a serious expression. At that location, there was a shadow standing still. From its appearance, it seemed like a heavy black armor. This heavy black armor was engraved with many black lines and gave off a mysterious feeling.

Mu Chen stared at the lifeless black armor and sensed danger from it. At the same time, he quietly circulated his Spiritual Energy within his body.

Kacha.

Just when Mu Chen looked carefully at the lifeless black armor, a clicking sound rang out from the icy-cold armor. It was as if something had been activated. Then, Mu Chen noticed a pair of scarlet lights being emitted from the armor. It seemed like that the armor was gazing at him coldly.

When the scarlet light focused itself on Mu Chen's body, black lightwaves slowly surged out from the black armor and a powerful Spiritual Energy pressure was released from the icy-cold armor.

"Intruder. You will be able to obtain the Spiritual Art if you beat me!" A emotionless voice resounded out from the black armor.

"Are you the protector of the Spiritual Art?" Mu Chen's eyes focused. It was clear that the black armor wasn't human and was a special item like a puppet. Apparently, this was the protector that Elder Zhu Tian had mentioned earlier.

Buzz.

Once the protector's voice faded away, a stone platform slowly

emerged from behind the black armor. Black lights glowed on top of the stone platform and a black scroll could be vaguely seen within the black lights. Illusory beasts were condensed on the scroll and these beasts issued out ancient roars endlessly.

This was the “Four Gods Constellation Scripture”. As long as Mu Chen defeated the mysterious protector in front of him, he would be able to obtain this Spiritual Art.

Mu Chen’s gaze slowly move away from the “Four Gods Constellation Scripture” and towards the protector with heavy armor. He felt that it would be quite a thorny path. After all, he had already felt an immense pressure emitting from the protector even without it attacking him. This pressure was extraordinarily powerful and Mu Chen was aware that he wasn’t its opponent.

Mu Chen shook his head with a bitter smile. It was evident that a Spiritual Art at this level wasn’t something a freshman could obtain. However, who would have imagined that the mysterious black paper within his body had actually summoned the “Four Gods Constellation Scripture” from deep within...

Just when Mu Chen sighed helplessly, black lights had already begun to surge out from the protector’s icy-cold armor. An extraordinary Spiritual Energy pressure was emitted out from within it.

The protector didn’t say anything else and took a step forward. Sounds of metal clashing could be heard. At the same time, the protector turned into a beam of light as it rushed directly in front of Mu Chen. Then, it fired out a punch straight towards Mu Chen.

When this punch was blasted out, the violent black Spiritual Energy had charged forward like a serpent. The powerful winds formed by it had actually blasted away the air in front of it.

When Mu Chen noticed the protector approaching aggressively, his expression changed. Retreat wasn’t an option anymore. Thus, he could only defend himself by attacking. He, too, blasted out a

punch and four Limitless Death Seals were condensed and erupted out towards the protector's punch.

Bang Bang Bang!

However, the overlapping Limitless Death Seals were actually forcibly blown away when it made contact with the attack from the protector. The remaining power of the attack had smashed onto Mu Chen's arm as he protected himself.

Even though he had protected himself, Mu Chen's body was still sent flying away. Blood flowed out his body and a stinging pain burst out from his arms. His body flew back a few hundred meters before he had finally stopped.

Although Mu Chen stabilized his body, he was deeply shocked. The protector was too strong. From his estimates, this heavy armor had already surpassed the Heavenly Fusion Stage. How could he possibly deal with it right now?

Mu Chen stared at the black scroll on the stone platform in front of him and let out a bitter laugh. Elder Zhu Tian was correct. If one was too greedy, they would end up with nothing...

Not far away, the protector did not give any chance for Mu Chen to rest. Instead, it charged forward and every single step it took caused the hall to tremble. A powerful offensive surged out from it towards Mu Chen.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's expression darkened. He could only grit his teeth and continued to avoid the attacks.

From a certain location inside the Spiritual Arts Hall, Elder Zhu Tian and the others raised their head up. In front of them, a screen of light had formed and within this screen of light, a scene of the protector chasing after Mu Chen was displayed.

"Ohoho. Although that little guy was fortunate enough to obtain the 'Four Gods Constellation Scripture', it seems that he does not possess the strength to defeat the protector." The white-haired old

man watched this scene as he laughed.

Elder Zhu Tian also nodded and responded: “The protector of the ‘Four Gods Constellation Scripture’ is equivalent to a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase. Mu Chen is only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. The gap between them is just too large, this gap wasn’t something that techniques could cover…”

When Mu Chen had successfully defeated Yang Hong, who was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, Elder Zhu Tian was quite surprised. However, he did not recognize that it was an impossible act. But judging from the what was occurring right now, Elder Zhu Tian could only say it was simply unimaginable for Mu Chen to defeat the protector by himself.

“It seems that this little guy wouldn’t be able to obtain the ‘Four Gods Constellation Scripture’. To be honest, I actually wanted to see if this little guy would be able successfully learn the Spiritual Art.” The white-haired old man smiled.

Elder Zhu Tian shook his head and replied: “It can’t be helped. The rules are decided by the Spiritual Arts Hall. We can only assist it and cannot change the rules. If Mu Chen fails to defeat the protector, then we can only play by the rules.”

The white-haired old man nodded and stared at the screen of light. At this moment, Mu Chen was in a completely awkward state. Judging from his appearance, it seems that he wouldn’t be able to last much longer.

As Mu Chen retreated, he was once again struck by the powerful winds formed by the attacks of the protector. The air erupted and a long trial was formed as Mu Chen’s feet slid across the hall. At this moment, blood had emerged from his mouth.

Mu Chen wiped the blood traces from his mouth, but at the same time, his heart was in a mess. Every single attack of his seemed to be fragile like a piece of paper in the face of the protector. He knew that this was caused by the difference in strength. Even if he had

advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he would not be able to defeat this protector. However, he would at least be able to compete with it and would not be in this awkward state he was in right now.

Mu Chen's eyes twinkled and he sent his consciousness towards his aura sea to look for the Nine Netherbird. In this situation, he truly needed a bit of help.

Within his aura sea, the Nine Netherbird stretched its wings lazily and responded: "Don't come searching for me. This mess wasn't caused by me, so you should look for the culprit instead."

Hearing this, Mu Chen could not help but turn his eyes towards the mysterious black paper within his aura sea. At this moment, the latter was in a completely peaceful state. However, a faint purple light could be seen emitting from it.

Unfortunately, Mu Chen wasn't able to do anything to the mysterious black paper. Therefore, he could only shake his head in response.

"The protector's strength isn't weak. Judging from your current strength, it isn't something that you can possibly defeat. But sometimes, it isn't necessary to defeat it in a head-on battle. The Spiritual Arts Hall is probably an exceptional Spiritual Artifact and the protector is controlled by it. As long as you are able to sever the link between the protector and the Spiritual Arts Hall, this puppet won't be able to move at all." Seeing Mu Chen's dejected expression, the Nine Netherbird curled its lips and spoke out loud.

"Sever the link?" Mu Chen was stunned, but he quickly asked, "How?"

"How should I know..." The Nine Netherbird flapped its wings that were tainted with black flames. It was evident it was quite dissatisfied since Mu Chen had came searching for it whenever he didn't know the solution to his problem.

Mu Chen sighed. The bird and paper were basically acting like gods. It seemed that he could only rely on himself.

Within the hall, Mu Chen's body was blown away once again. Fortunately, he did not dare to fight directly against the protector. Instead, he was constantly avoiding it in order to stall for time.

At this moment, his eyes blinked rapidly. In order to sever the link between the protector and the Spiritual Arts Hall, he must first understand how the two of them are connected, right?

Mu Chen's eyes flashed and scanned through the heavy armor on the protector. He could see faint engravings flashing on the surface of the armor and a mysterious fluctuation emitted out from it.

Mu Chen's eyes focused fiercely. This fluctuation...Is it a Spiritual Array's fluctuation?

That's right!

The Spiritual Arts Hall arranged a Spiritual Array on the protector's body in order to control it. As long as managed to destroy the Spiritual Array, he would be able to severe the link between the Spiritual Arts Hall and the protector.

A hint of excitement filled Mu Chen's black eyes.

At this moment, the protector rushed forward once again. Just when it had approached Mu Chen, Mu Chen took this chance to scan through the complex engraving on the armor and firmly remembered it in his mind.

This time, Mu Chen was blown away again. However, he immediately crawled back up. His eyes had became brighter due to the hope of defeating the protector.

Bang! Bang!

Next up, the protector had continued to bombard its attack towards Mu Chen and Mu Chen was constantly sent flying away by it. Although he was becoming more injured and more blood was

flowing out from the corner of his lips, his eyes revealed more and more excitement.

He was finally able to understand the Spiritual Array arranged on the armor of the protector. He knew where the core of the Spiritual Array was located at!

The protector continued to cause the hall to tremble as it charged forward once again. But this time, when it had approached Mu Chen and blasted out a punch, the latter had also taken a step forward. Dark-black Spiritual Energy gushed out from his hand and a black flame danced within it.

When the protector's attack had smashed onto his chest, Mu Chen's attack also managed to smash down on a specific location of the black armor!

Chapter 195 – Trick

Within the hall, Mu Chen's body was blown away awkwardly. His feet scraped across the metal-like floor and was finally blown into a massive stone pillar.

Puchi.

Fresh blood sprayed out from Mu Chen's mouth. At this moment, Mu Chen was extremely pale. Although he had already overestimated the protector's strength, he discovered that he had still underestimated the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage after enduring one blow.

Mu Chen rubbed his chest and pulled out a black piece. This black piece resembled a black pot with Spiritual Energy engravings placed on its surface. This was a Low Rank Spiritual Artifact that Mu Chen had obtained in the Northern Heavens World. He had never used it all this time, but at that earlier moment, Mu Chen had activated it. If it wasn't for this black pot, right now, his injuries would be much more serious.

Mu Chen tossed aside the black piece and wiped away the blood from his mouth. Then, he stared at the protector in the distance. At this moment, the latter had also stopped moving. A scarlet light shone out from within the heavy armor.

Mu Chen stared firmly at the protector and clenched his hands. Although his estimations were mostly accurate, he must witness the final result to know if it had any effects.

If this method failed to sever the link between the protector and the Spiritual Arts Hall, Mu Chen could only try to think of another way.

As Mu Chen stared at the protector, Elder Zhu Tian and the others were also watching the screen of light from a certain location. A hint of surprise appeared as they noticed the unmoving

protector.

With their keen senses, they could detect something abnormal.

Chi Chi.

While they were surprised, the icy-cold body of the protector had suddenly released out a disorderly Spiritual Energy. Then, the scarlet light emitted out from within the armor had dimmed before it had completely turned black.

“What happened?” Seeing this, Elder Zhu Tian was shocked and he asked in surprise.

“He destroyed the hidden Spiritual Array on the protector’s body and severed my connection with the protector.” A thought was conveyed over as the screen of light fluctuated.

“Oh?”

Elder Zhu Tian and the white-haired old man exclaimed loudly. Naturally, they knew that the Spiritual Arts Hall had the ability to control the protectors. This was achieved by the hall through a Spiritual Array placed on the protector’s body. However, this Spiritual Array was quite complicated. It would not stop even if a portion was destroyed unless it was the core of the Spiritual Array. However, Mu Chen had managed to destroy the core of the Spiritual Array.

This eyesight and the timing to grasp the opportunity was indeed marvelous.

“Should I reconnect to the protector?” An inhumane thought was conveyed out once again.

Elder Zhu Tian thought for a moment and shook his head. “Although he did not truly defeat the protector, he still managed to stop it. Therefore, it is considered that he had passed this test.”

Elder Zhu Tian glanced at the white-haired old man. The latter had also nodded his head and said, “Consider him passed.”

“Okay.”

This thought was conveyed over and the inhumane consciousness faded away.

“That little guy… He truly is surprising. He actually managed to defeat the protector using such a method,” Elder Zhu Tian exclaimed.

The white-haired old man also smiled. He stared at the boy in an awkward state within the screen of light and muttered: “It seems that there are indeed excellent seedlings within this year’s freshmen. Perhaps in the nearby future, he will possess the qualifications to challenge the seniors at the top.”

“When that happens, it will be quite fun to watch.”

Inside the hall, Mu Chen finally let out a sigh of relief after noticing that the Spiritual Energy had completely vanished from within the protector’s body. He immediately wiped out the sweat from his forehead.

It seemed that his gamble had paid off this time.

With Mu Chen’s strength, it would be quite difficult for him to forcibly destroy a Spiritual Array at this level. Therefore, he could only observe the Spiritual Array carefully and discover the core and the important array lines. He would destroy one of them and this would lead to an effect of completely disrupting the Spiritual Array.

Of course, he only managed to perform this feat because he had relied on the Nine Netherbird’s Nine Netherflame. This flame was able to burn even Spiritual Energy. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to instantly destroy the Spiritual Array lines.

“This Nine Netherflame is indeed powerful.”

Mu Chen stared at the hint of black flame on the icy-cold body of the protector. He could not help but let out a praise. It seems that he must perform the Spiritual Energy Fusion that the Nine

Netherbird had mentioned after he exited the Spiritual Arts Hall. When his Spiritual Energy had fused with the Nine Netherbird's, the overbearingness and power of his Spiritual Energy would reach another level.

Moreover, the battle with the protector had finally made Mu Chen understood how powerful a Heavenly Transformation Stage powerhouse was. This made him quite alarmed. After all, Li Xuantong's strength was probably even stronger than the protector. If he did not improve, he wouldn't be able to contend against Li Xuantong. It was evident that he, Mu Chen, did not want to see a situation where he was completely powerless in the face of Li Xuantong.

"It seems that I must hurry and improve my strength."

Mu Chen muttered to himself and felt a hint of urgency. He immediately took a deep breath and suppressed the flowing blood. Then, he slowly walked forward, bypassing the protector and headed towards the stone platform.

And against Mu Chen's action, the protector no longer reacted. From its appearance, it was as if the victor had been determined... Although he had resorted to using a trick.

After walking past the protector, Mu Chen stopped in front of the stone platform. He stared at the black scroll suspended above the stone platform. When he observed the black scroll at a close distance, he was able to notice that the four beast figures surrounding the scroll were a dragon, tiger, phoenix and turtle. As they growled, it was quite mysterious and ancient-sounding.

Mu Chen extended his hand out and held onto the black scroll. At this moment, the black scroll did not resist and allowed Mu Chen to hold onto it.

In the instant that Mu Chen had held onto the "Four Gods Constellation Scripture", a grin appeared on his face. After enormous effort, he finally managed to obtain it.

Buzz.

When Mu Chen had obtained the “Four Gods Constellation Scripture”, a burst of light erupted out from within the hall. Then, Mu Chen felt the space distorting and everything in front of him had changed.

Mu Chen calmed down and immediately looked around. Then, he noticed that he was staring at Elder Zhu Tian, who had a smile on his face. Beside him was a white-haired old man. And further behind these two individuals, there were a dozen figures who had stared at him in a curious manner.

“You truly are lucky... From the rules, you currently aren’t qualified to obtain a Spiritual Art at the level of the Four Gods Constellation Scripture.” Elder Zhu Tian’s eyes swept through Mu Chen’s body as he smiled.

Mu Chen let out a hollow laugh. However, deep down inside, he felt nervous. Could Elder Zhu Tian and the others plan on taking back the “Four Gods Constellation Scripture”? He understood that he wouldn’t be able to obtain the “Four Gods Constellation Scripture without the summon of the mysterious black scroll within his body.

Elder Zhu Tian glanced at Mu Chen and seemed to know what he was thinking: “Relax. Since you’ve obtained the ‘Four Gods Constellation Scripture’, we would not ask you to hand it back to us. This is also considered to be your opportunity.”

“Then I will have to thank you, Elder Zhu Tian.”

Mu Chen was relief and quickly gave his thanks.

At this moment, Elder Zhu Tian smiled and waved his sleeves. Four other beams flashed near Mu Chen and four figures emerged from within. It was Luo Li, Yang Hong, Mu Kui and Bing Qing.

All four of them had a dense Spiritual Energy surging out from their bodies. It was evident that they had experienced a battle as

well. However, judging from their expression, they were in control of the fight.

When the four of them appeared, they looked towards Mu Chen, who was in front of them. However, they were stunned when they noticed Mu Chen's pale expression and torn clothes.

"What happened?" Luo Li's expression changed and hurriedly walked forward. Right now, Mu Chen's condition was even worse than the condition he had after fighting against Yang Hong.

Mu Kui and Bing Qing were also surprised as they stared at Mu Chen. Only Yang Hong's eyes were sneering. It was evident that he was willing to see Mu Chen in a beaten up state.

"Ohoho, this little guy met a Deity Tier Spiritual Art and was beaten up to this state by the Heavenly Transformation Stage protector." Elder Zhu Tian chuckled.

"Heavenly Transformation Stage protector?!"

When these words were spoken, Luo Li, Mu Kui and Bing Qing were completely stunned. All of them had actually obtained a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art. However, the protector they had faced was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. This Mu Chen had actually fought against a protector at the Heavenly Transformation Stage? Just exactly what level was the Spiritual Art he had found?

"How overconfident." Yang Hong sneered. This guy, who does he think he is? He actually didn't know his own strength and even dared to touch a Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

Mu Chen glanced towards Yang Hong and completely ignored him. This made Yang Hong's face turn blue.

"Since I found one, I attempted to obtain it." Mu Chen directed a smile towards Luo Li.

Luo Li shook her head helplessly. He wouldn't've discarded his opportunity because of this one attempt?

“Ohoho. He didn’t fail.” Elder Zhu Tian smiled.

“Didn’t fail?” Luo Li and the others froze when they heard this. A hint of disbelief emerged in their eyes. They stared at Mu Chen, who was completely pale and in an awkward state. If he didn’t fail, does that mean he had succeeded?

Mu Chen actually defeated a protector at the Heavenly Transformation Stage? How is this possible!

“Although he resorted to using a trick, it is still considered a success. This little guy isn’t as simple as you think.” Elder Zhu Tian smiled towards Mu Chen.

Towards Elder Zhu Tian, who had spoken out his secret, Mu Chen could only laugh wryly. Then, he smiled towards Yang Hong, who had a gloomy expression, and said, “Sorry. It wasn’t what you think it was.”

Yang Hong’s expression turned blue. A hint of powerless filled his heart. Originally, he thought that he would surpass Mu Chen once he obtained a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art. However, who would’ve imagined that this bastard would actually defeat a Heavenly Transformation Stage protector. Although he didn’t know what trick Mu Chen used, but could the difference in strength really be covered by a “simple” trick?

Chapter 196 – Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array

Outside of the Spiritual Arts Hall, lights burst out and Mu Chen and the others' figures emerged. As each one of them obtained a Spiritual Art, it was evident that their trip to the Spiritual Arts Hall was over.

However, Yang Hong's expression remained somewhat gloomy even after they had left the Spiritual Arts Hall. He glanced at Mu Chen sullenly and disappeared into the distance. At this moment, he was filled with disbelief and horror as he heard that Mu Chen had defeated a protector at the Heavenly Transformation Stage.

Mu Chen glanced at Yang Hong's departing silhouette before retracting his gaze.

On the other hand, Mu Kui and Bing Qing stared curiously at Mu Chen. They wanted to know what Spiritual Art Mu Chen had obtained within the Spiritual Arts Hall. However, it wasn't polite to inquire about it. Thus, they could only cup their hands towards Mu Chen before departing on their own.

"Where are you planning to go now?" Luo Li's beautiful eyes stared at Mu Chen as she softly asked.

"I'm going to experience one of the high rank Spirit Convergence Array inside the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Mu Chen smiled. Since he had already obtained the Spiritual Art, he should grasp hold of the time and begin to cultivate. Time was running out and he must breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage within two months. Moreover, he must complete the Spiritual Energy Fusion. After all, he felt immense pressure from Li Xuantong.

Luo Li blinked. She was extremely intelligent and could guess why Mu Chen was trying so hard to cultivate.

“If it’s because of Li Xuantong, you don’t have to care about him…” Luo Li hesitated slightly before she spoke.

Mu Chen smiled. His gaze were firmly fixed on the delicate and exquisite face of the girl in front of him. This appearance…This smile…It was extremely bewitching.

“Why are you staring at me like this?” Luo Li’s face turned slightly red once she was aware of Mu Chen looking at her like this.

Mu Chen extended his hand out and held onto the girl’s slender and delicate hands. This soft texture made it nearly impossible to let go.

At this instant, Luo Li’s face turned bright red. Her eyes quickly scanned through the surroundings. Only after she noticed that there were nobody nearby, she stopped struggling.

“It isn’t because of Li Xuantong.” Mu Chen bit his lips and stared at the girl in front of him. His handsome face had changed slightly and revealed a hint of determination: “I don’t know what you’re burdened with, but, since you told me in the Spiritual Road that you would protect my back, then who do you think is standing in front of you?”

Luo Li stared at Mu Chen. Within her glass-like eyes, a hint of emotion emerged.

“Perhaps I may not be qualified right now. However, I believe that I would be able to do it in the future. When that happens, I will fulfill my promise. Therefore, I am currently working hard to achieve it.” Mu Chen’s gentle voice revealed his determination.

Since you are standing behind me. Naturally, I will be in front of you.

Luo Li nibbled her lips and stared at Mu Chen. After a while, she revealed a slight smile and nodded her head.

“I’ll head out first. Are you planning to come with me?” Mu Chen

smiled.

Luo Li shook her head and replied: “I will stay at the freshman area for the next few days. Since you’ve obtained the Spirit Ranking’s Rank 1, it is possible that another person would come due to their rage. This way, I can help you deal with the situation.”

Although Mu Chen had resolved the matter with Mo Lun previously, the rumors spread out from it weren’t all that good. Therefore, Luo Li hoped that this sort of incident would not occur again.

Mu Chen nodded. He did not know Su Ling’Er and did not know her personality. Therefore, it would be best to be prepared for it. With Luo Li’s strength, she shouldn’t be any weaker than Su Ling’Er.

Moreover, if Su Ling was to take action, he could resolve it again after he had finished his cultivation.

“I’ll head out first then.” Mu Chen replied and no longer hesitated. He turned into a figure of light as he headed to the depths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Luo Li stared at Mu Chen’s departing figure and the smile on her face slowly faded away. After a while, she let out a faint sigh before disappearing from this location.

As Mu Chen headed to the depths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he would glance around. At this place, there were countless individuals rushing through the sky. The Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted from these individuals were considerably powerful. This area was normally filled with seniors and their strength was naturally much more powerful than the freshmen’s.

Mu Chen’s eyes looked out into a certain direction. From that location, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation surged out. It was the direction of a Spirit Convergence Array. Moreover, its rank

wasn’t low at all.

Mu Chen pondered for a moment before he rushed out to the right. At that direction, there was a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array. He had never seen a Spiritual Array at this rank before and if he was able to cultivate within it, the results of his cultivation would definitely exceed the results if he cultivated outside of it.

Although it would cause a fortune to cultivate within a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array per day, time was pressing for Mu Chen so he did not consider about the cost.

After flying for approximately ten minutes, Mu Chen had slowed down his pace. His eyes were focused on the scene in front of him. At this place, a fierce distortion was in place and had formed a massive door of light. Even if they were separated by a distance, Mu Chen was able to sense a tiny pressure from the Spiritual Aura rushing out from the door.

Swish!

At this moment, numerous figures would charge into the door of light. It was evident that they were students that planned to enter the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array to cultivate.

Seeing this, Mu Chen let out a praise before following the stream of people and charged into the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array.

In the instant Mu Chen had entered the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array, he felt a powerful surge of Spiritual Aura rushing towards him. At the same time, his body felt quite heavy as if he had a mountain on his back.

Mu Chen quickly circulated the Spiritual Energy within his body to resist this sense of heaviness. He lifted his eyes and glanced around. Then, surprise filled his eyes.

The Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array was larger than what Mu Chen had expected. It possessed valley plains, mountains and river streams. From its appearance, it seemed like a beautiful, yet

secluded place.

Within this area, a faint mist would emit out. However, it wasn't the regular mist that one would encounter normally. Instead, it was formed by the Spiritual Aura of the world. Normally speaking, this mist would only be formed when the Spiritual Aura of the world had reached a certain degree of richness. Moreover, it was very beneficial for cultivation.

"As expected from a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array."

Mu Chen was full of praise as he looked around. Compared to this place, the Spiritual Aura within the freshman area was quite shabby. Of course, the cost of entering this place was quite larger as well.

Mu Chen looked at the Spiritual Values Card within his hand and noticed that a total of 4,000 Spiritual Values were deducted from it. In other words, the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array would deduct 4,000 Spiritual Values every day. Since Mu Chen had around 500,000 Spiritual Values, he could only cultivate in this place for approximately three months.

Mu Chen put away his Spiritual Values Card and let out a wry smile. It was fortunate that he had obtained a bit of Spiritual Value from the Freshmen Competition. Otherwise, he wouldn't have enough Spiritual Values to cultivate in seclusion within the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array.

"Are there any other conditions to perform the Spiritual Energy Fusion?" Mu Chen glanced around before inquiring the Nine Netherbird.

"You should find a location with a high density of Spiritual Aura. Also, it would be best if it is extremely close to a deep lake." The Nine Netherbird's thoughts were conveyed out to Mu Chen.

"A deep lake?"

Mu Chen was slightly confused, but he did not inquire about the

reason right now. Instead, he rushed to the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array. It was evident that the Spiritual Aura became more dense as he neared the center of the Spirit Convergence Array.

Compared to earlier, Mu Chen had slowed down as he flew across the place. Rumbling Spiritual Aura would enter his body every time he took a breath, causing his body to be much more relaxed.

Along the way, there were various mountain river streams, but the majority of the locations were already occupied . Although it would consume a lot of Spiritual Values in order to cultivate within the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array, the density of the Spiritual Aura of the world within this place had made many students flock to this place when they had accumulated sufficient Spiritual Values.

Mu Chen continued to head to the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array, and in approximately ten minutes, he had gradually slowed down and revealed his figure. His line of sight had stared below. At that location, there were two giant mountains which were connected at the summit. Because of this connection, it had formed a massive lake. The lake seemed quite clear and at first glance, it was impossible to see the bottom of this lake. It was evident that it was quite deep.

Dense Spiritual Mist floated above the lake. Even when a powerful gale had emerged, it had failed to dissipate the Spiritual Mist.

Regarding this location, Mu Chen was quite satisfied with it. He descended and landed on the surface of the water. When he landed, his feet caused ripples on the surface of the lake. This was because the Spiritual Aura at this place was too dense and caused Mu Chen’s body to become a lot heavier.

Mu Chen glanced around the surroundings. There should be a few students secretly cultivating near this lake. However, it was

quite quiet compared to the outside. If he was to cultivate at this place, he probably wouldn't be disturbed.

"What should I do now?" Mu Chen inquired again.

"Dive down to the bottom of the lake to cultivate." The Nine Netherbird replied faintly.

"Dive down to the bottom of the lake?" Mu Chen was stunned.

Within his aura sea, the Nine Netherbird stretched its wings that were tainted with black flames elegantly as it responded: "It is extremely difficult to perform a Spiritual Energy Fusion. Therefore, you will require the assistance of an external force. As for this external force, we can use the pressure of the water to replace it. The water within this lake possesses Spiritual Aura, thus, the pressure from it far exceeds ordinary water pressure. Once you reach the bottom of the lake, the water pressure would seep into your body from all directions. When that happens, you can intertwine the Nine Netherflame and your Spiritual Energy and the water pressure seeping into your body will help your Spiritual Energy fuse with the Nine Netherflame gradually..."

"Of course, it is easier said than done. The slightest bit of mistake would cause your body and meridians to suffer a severe injury. Moreover, the Nine Netherflame is exceptionally overbearing. Even with the Bloodline Bond, the Nine Netherflame does not belong to you. Therefore, you must endure this pain or else everything that you've done would end up in naught."

"So...are you prepared?"

Mu Chen took a deep breath and his eyes became serious. In the end, he nodded heavily without any hesitation.

"Let's begin!"

A hint of fierceness emerged within Mu Chen's black eyes. Then, with a plopping sound, he dove straight into the clear lake and water ripples spread out. As for Mu Chen, his figure was just like a

fish as he headed towards the bottom of the lake.

Chapter 197 – Cultivating at the Bottom of the Lake

Splash.

Icy-cold lake water flowed past Mu Chen's body. At the same time, his body descended quickly down to the bottom of the lake. However, as he continued to descend, Mu Chen noticed a powerful pressure surging towards him from all directions.

Currently, Mu Chen did not utilize any Spiritual Energy to protect the surface of his body. Instead, he relied solely on his flesh and body to endure the water pressure as he dove down.

Mu Chen's black eyes were firmly fixed at the bottom of the lake. His body was able to sense that it was withstanding a water pressure that was constantly increasing. In a few minutes, he finally stopped descending. This was because he could feel that the water pressure had caused slight pain to his body.

Then, Mu Chen lifted his head up towards the surface of the lake. At that location, there was a bright clump of light. Right now, he was probably a few hundred meters underneath the lake.

Here, the lake's water was quite unusual. Since the lake's water was mixed with dense Spiritual Energy, it had caused the water pressure to become particularly powerful. Even with Mu Chen's current strength, he felt a slight pressure from it.

Cultivating in this location should be just about right.

Once this thought appeared in Mu Chen's mind, he nodded his head. Then, he sat down cross-legged within the lake. His expression also began to turn serious.

Mu Chen let out a mouthful of air as he closed his eyes. His consciousness began to sink down into his aura sea.

"Can we begin?" Mu Chen stared at the Nine Netherbird lying

down on the mandala flower and inquired.

The Nine Netherbird nodded its head and flapped its wings. A rich black flame surged out. Then, it looked towards Mu Chen and said faintly: “If you’re fully prepared, then let’s begin. Remember, if you feel that you can’t endure it, you should give up on it temporarily. Do not take any risks.”

Mu Chen’s expression turned solemn and he nodded heavily.

“Then let’s begin.”

The Nine Netherbird stopped speaking and flapped its wings. Immediately afterwards, the rich black flame surged out and had surged into the Spiritual Energy light wheel and Mu Chen’s Spirit within his aura sea.

At this moment, even the tiny Spirit within Mu Chen’s aura sea had revealed a dignified expression. It formed seals with its hand and dense black Spiritual Energy erupted out from the Spiritual Energy light wheel as it protected it from the black flame.

Chi Chi!

The black flame quickly surged and instantly enveloped both the Spirit and the Spiritual Energy light wheel. A burst of sound resounded out as the black flame collided with the dark-black Spiritual Energy. At this moment, Mu Chen could feel that his Spiritual Energy melted quickly when it made contact with the black flame.

In the past, Mu Chen was able to control a tiny bit of the Nine Netherflame when he relied on the Nine Netherbird’s power. He managed to manipulate it so that it would not harm him. However, under this circumstance, it was evident that he had lost control of the Nine Netherflame. The Nine Netherflame that was once a razor-sharp weapon for him had now revealed its extraordinariness towards him.

Since his Spiritual Energy was melted by the black flames, Mu

Chen let out a cry and a brilliant light erupted out from his Spiritual Energy light wheel. Dense Spiritual Energy shot out and bypassed the raging black flames. This light exited his aura sea and quickly circulated through his meridians.

Within the Spiritual Energy that had exited his aura sea, every single part of it was tinted with black flames. Moreover, it caused the black flames to appear within Mu Chen's meridians. With just the temperature of the black flames, it made Mu Chen's meridians convulse.

A stinging pain expanded out, causing Mu Chen's body to tremble.

Mu Chen grinded his teeth and endured the immense pain. He continued to utilize and circulate his Spiritual Energy. However, as he circulated his Spiritual Energy, the Spiritual Energy also began to weaken. This was because the black flame had continued to burn through the Spiritual Energy.

Chi! Chi!

In this instant, Mu Chen's body had turned exceptionally hot. Spiritual Energy continued to circulate through his body, yet at the very beginning, the Spiritual Energy was completely burned by the Nine Netherflame as it circulated half-way through his meridians.

It was an intense consumption. As he circulated his Spiritual Energy, he relied on the external pressure to fuse his Spiritual Energy with the Nine Netherflame. However, once the Spiritual Energy was completely burned, the fusion of Spiritual Energy and the Nine Netherflame had ended in failure.

Currently, it was as if Mu Chen was basically swapping his blood for a completely new one. However, it was not blood that he was swapping; it was Spiritual Energy…He required all of the Spiritual Energy within his body to be completely fused with a pure Spiritual Energy like the Nine Netherflame.

Therefore, if the Spiritual Energy that he had drawn out was completely burned and failed to make it back to the Spiritual Energy light wheel, it would mean that it had ended up in failure. Moreover, he would have wasted the Spiritual Energy.

Fortunately, Mu Chen remained fairly calm while facing this situation. He knew that it wasn't easy to perform the Spiritual Energy Fusion. It would definitely take a relatively long period of time for him to adapt to it. Only then, his Spiritual Energy would be able to gradually endure the blazing Nine Netherflame and successfully fuse with it.

As Mu Chen held this thought in his mind, the Spiritual Energy within his body had been thoroughly exhausted in just an hour. The Spiritual Energy light wheel had also turned quite dim.

Therefore, Mu Chen endured the stinging pain within his body and temporarily stopped the Spiritual Energy Fusion. Instead, he circulated the Great Pagoda Art and quickly absorbed the Spiritual Energy within the lake's water in order to replenish the Spiritual Energy within his body.

When the Spiritual Energy within his body was quite abundant again, he did not plan on resting and started to perform the Spiritual Energy Fusion once again...

This was a considerably tiring and painful cultivation.

After the first day of cultivation was complete, Mu Chen was finally able to make the Spiritual Energy within his body gradually endure the Nine Netherflame. However, he was still unable to successfully make a surge of Spiritual Energy return to his Spiritual Energy light wheel.

But Mu Chen wasn't depressed at all. At the very least, there was a tiny bit of progress made.

Next up, for the remaining cultivation period, Mu Chen had repeated the same actions over and over again. He would only rest

briefly every day and would spend most of his time on the Spiritual Energy Fusion. Fortunately, the heavens wouldn't disappoint a hard working individual and on the fourth day, a single surge of Spiritual Energy had endured the Nine Netherflame and the immense water pressure. It completed the circulation and returned within his aura sea.

The Spiritual Energy was several times weaker than when it had departed from his aura sea. Moreover, it was just a shred of Spiritual Energy. However, this made Mu Chen quite excited. After all, this shred of Spiritual Energy had completed the Spiritual Energy Fusion and was strengthened.

Mu Chen's consciousness stared at the brand new Spiritual Energy with excitement. The newborn Spiritual Energy had turned even darker and was the same color as the night sky. Within this shred of Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen noticed a trace of black flames flickering.

It was the Nine Netherflame.

Delight filled Mu Chen's heart. He focused for a moment and the black flame within the shred of Spiritual Energy rose up. But right now, Mu Chen did not feel the slightest trace of danger emitting from it.

This was because this Nine Netherflame truly belonged to him. Even the Nine Netherbird wasn't able to control it!

Although the shred of Spiritual Energy was quite tiny in size, Mu Chen could feel that this Spiritual Energy with black flame was much higher in quality compared to his previous Spiritual Energy!

The destructive power and lethalness had increased several folds.

"You've only fused a tiny part of your Spiritual Energy…It is far from being complete." The Nine Netherbird reminded Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled and quickly suppressed the emotions he felt. He focused once again and the strengthened Spiritual Energy went

inside the tiny Spirit's body on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel. At this moment, the eyes of Mu Chen's Spirit had darkened slightly.

With the success of the shred of Spiritual Energy, the remaining cultivation was performed easily. However, the pain that he suffered did not decrease at all. Waves of pain would stimulate Mu Chen's nerves and caused his body to tremble violently.

In just two short days, the Spiritual Energy fused with the Nine Netherflame had gradually increased in quantity within Mu Chen's body. However, the process was still far from being complete.

Since the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's body was completely emptied, he closed his eyes once again and began to form seals without any hesitation. He activated the Great Pagoda Art and a hint of black flame surged out from his body. Once his absorption of Spiritual Aura had begun, the nearby lake water had instantly evaporated and formed an empty area.

Splash.

At this moment, the lake water was gathering quickly towards where Mu Chen was located. A massive vortex was formed. Mu Chen was sitting at the eye of the vortex as he drew out the Spiritual Aura from the lake's water into his body.

The commotion caused by Mu Chen was extraordinary. The entire lake trembled from his power. This commotion of his had also agitated a few figures, who were also cultivating within the lake. It was clear that they were also using the water pressure to cultivate.

When they detected the commotion within the lake, they opened their eyes in surprise. Then, they rushed through the lake and headed towards the source of the commotion. Soon, they noticed Mu Chen sitting cross-legged within the vortex.

"Who is this guy? He actually caused such a large commotion!"

“He seems to be at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. How is it possible that he possess the ability to cause such a ruckus?”

“This guy…isn’t simple.”

Their eyes were filled with surprise as they whispered with each other. However, they did not disturb Mu Chen’s cultivation. Each one of them were able to sense how powerful Mu Chen was. Although the latter only seemed to be at the Spirit Stage Late Phase, the fluctuations emitted out from the latter’s body made them feel a hint of danger.

They looked at this scene for a moment and noticed that Mu Chen was planning to ignore them. Therefore, they could only disperse and head back to their original locations.

On the other hand, Mu Chen had also detected the figures approaching. But upon seeing that they did not reveal any hostility, he relaxed himself and began to concentrate in order to replenish the Spiritual Energy within his body.

Once the Spiritual Energy within his body was filled, Mu Chen let out a deep sigh and his eyes glowed. He had a feeling that he would be able to complete the Spiritual Energy Fusion this time!

“Let’s begin!”

Mu Chen endured the excitement within his heart and focused. Rumbling Spiritual Energy exited his Spiritual Energy light wheel once again.

Chapter 198 – Su LingEr

Buzz.

At this moment, within Mu Chen's aura sea, a rumbling, rich black flame was enveloping Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy light wheel. As this situation progressed, Mu Chen's Spirit sat cross-legged on the Spiritual Energy light wheel and formed a few seals. Then, it absorbed the strengthened Spiritual Energy that returned.

As more of the strengthened Spiritual Energy returned, the eyes on Mu Chen's Spirit darkened and a faint black flame could be seen surging within it.

Although Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy fluctuation were no different than earlier, the strength that would explode out once he decide to fight would definitely be stronger than before.

The Spiritual Energy that was fused with the Nine Netherflame would also reveal just how extraordinary it is.

"It's nearly complete…"

Ripples formed within Mu Chen's heart and a mysterious feeling emerged. The feeling of his body being completely filled with Spiritual Energy was becoming more and more apparent.

Just when a surge of Spiritual Energy rushed into Mu Chen's Spirit, Mu Chen felt that his Spirit had trembled violently. Then, a violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation erupted from it. At the same time, black flames gushed out from its body. His entire Spirit was covered with black flames.

This black flame was the Nine Netherflame. However, this Nine Netherflame belonged solely to Mu Chen!

"Right now, you have completely changed the Spiritual Energy within your body with the fused Spiritual Energy. However, it does not mean that it is complete yet." The Nine Netherbird watched this scene and spoke: "You still need to form a Seed of Fire using

the Nine Netherflame. Then, from now on, you must continue to strengthen it using your Spiritual Energy. This way, once new Spiritual Energy enters your body, it would be automatically fused with the Seed of Fire and turned into the fused Spiritual Energy."

Hearing this, Mu Chen nodded his head slightly. He did not hesitate and his Spirit formed a tiny hand seal. One hand was above, while the other hand was below. It was as if the sun and the moon were within his hand.

Swish!

The black flames that were wrapped around Mu Chen's Spirit quickly gathered towards the space between its hand. Then, it was compressed endlessly...

While Mu Chen compressed the Nine Netherflame within his body, an irregular black flame soon formed. However, it was evident that it would need some time before a Seed of Fire would be formed.

About this, Mu Chen actually maintained his calmness. He did not hurry and, instead, condensed the black flame slowly and steadily. Eventually, it turned slightly real...

Just condensing the Seed of Fire took approximately five days.

Within these five days, Mu Chen was completely focused on condensing the Seed of Fire. Under his full strength, he had obtained substantial results. The originally irregular black flame had turned into the size of a palm. The color of it was extremely dark and black flames would permeate out from it.

The Seed of Fire was about to be formed.

But while Mu Chen was fully immersed with his cultivation, he did not know that trouble was rushing towards him within the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array. The source of this trouble was Su Ling'Er, who he had kicked out from the Spirit Ranking.

Su Ling'Er had once headed towards the freshman area to search

for Mu Chen. However, she wasn't able to find him there. Instead, she had met with Luo Li and the two of them fought against each other. But what surprised Su Ling'Er was that she wasn't able to defeat Luo Li. It was clear from their battle that Luo Li wasn't inferior to her at all.

This made her become interested in Luo Li. Coupled with the fact that Luo Li was a beauty, Su Ling'Er, instead, wanted to be on friendly terms with her. Therefore, the battle between the two girls did not yield any results.

Although Su Ling'Er's temper wasn't that great, she did not perform a similar feat like Mo Lun and obstructed the freshmen. With her appeal within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, coupled with her sister's reputation, the power that could be formed wasn't something that Mo Lun could compare with.

And upon hearing that Mu Chen wasn't within the freshman area, she had departed from it. Afterwards, she had asked around and heard that Mu Chen had headed to a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array to cultivate. Therefore, she had chased him to the Spirit Convergence Array. This little girl was quite prideful and felt humiliation when Mu Chen had kicked her out of the Spirit Ranking without any mercy. In the past few years, it was the first time that she had seen a man that dared to do such a thing to her.

Therefore, she must beat up the freshman known as Mu Chen and let out her temper.

But the area within the Spirit Convergence Array was considerably large. It was evident that it wasn't easy to find a person within this place. However, this wasn't any trouble for Su Ling'Er. After all, she was considered to be a well-known beauty within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Coupled with the fact that she was the sister of Su Xuan, there were many students that wanted to please her. Therefore, she only had to reveal her goal and many male students would volunteer to help her. They would help find Mu Chen within this Spirit Convergence Array.

Therefore, a ruckus occurred within this Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array. Many seniors would pass through the area searching for traces of Mu Chen. This disturbed the peace within the Spirit Convergence Array.

Although there were a few people that were unhappy about it, they could only accept it as they knew of the reputation of these sisters.

Countless figures stood on top of a mountain peak within the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array. The one leading these individuals was a pretty girl dressed in light yellow. Her blue hair was tied up in a ponytail and her skin was like the snow. She possessed large eyes and a petite nose. With all of the above traits, she was considered to be a bright and beautiful girl. At this moment, she was gritting her teeth. After all, she had been searching for Mu Chen on a grand scale and attracted some dissatisfaction from others. Although she might not care about it, it would still anger her because others were secretly talking behind her back. Therefore, she pushed the source of this rage towards Mu Chen.

“This bastard. It’s the same every time. He would hide after doing what he had to do! Just why would Luo Li like him?” Su Ling’Er said bitterly.

“Ohoho, there’s no need to be this impatient. We should be able to find him soon. When that happens, we would be glad to help you take care of him if you ask us to.” Behind Su Ling’Er, a boy smiled and replied. His face was filled with arrogance and from his tone, it seemed that he never thought that Mu Chen was someone important.

“This Mu Chen is truly within the limelight recently. It was said that he is the Number One Freshman among this year’s freshmen. During the day of the Freshmen Competition, he had defeated Yang Hong, who had already reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. We are only slightly stronger than Yang Hong, so it

won't be easy for us to defeat him." Another boy said in a solemn voice.

"What? Chen Xiu, are you actually afraid of a freshman?" The boy earlier let out a mocking laugh. "No matter how strong he is, he is only a freshman. If he wants to defeat us, he will need to cultivate for at least a year before that's possible."

"Enough. When I find him, I will defeat him by myself. There's no need for you to intervene." Su Ling'Er shook his head. She did not hold too much resentment towards Mu Chen. After all, she only wanted to let out her anger. Therefore, it was enough if she had defeated Mu Chen. There wasn't a need to waste this much effort on a freshman.

"Swish!"

Just when Su Ling'Er spoke out loud, a figure of light suddenly approached from a distance. It landed on the mountain peak and spoke with delight: "We found where Mu Chen is!"

"Oh?"

Joy instantly filled Su Ling'Er's face. I've finally found you, you bastard! Let's see whether or not you can continue to hide from me!

"Hurry and bring me there!"

Swish! Swish!

Swishing sounds resounded out on top of the mountain as Su Ling'Er and the others rushed away. In a dozen minutes or so, they appeared in the sky where two mountains' summit had connected with each other. A lake was formed within the connected area.

"Miss Ling'Er. Mu Chen should be cultivating within this lake. I've seen him before." When Su Ling'Er appeared, a figure approached from the shore of the lake. This person was cultivating at this place earlier as well and was disturbed by Mu Chen's cultivation commotion before.

“Thanks.”

Su Ling’Er let out a pleased smile and waved her hand. A beam of light shot out from her Spiritual Values Card.

The figure quickly received the beam of light and noticed that his Spiritual Values Card had increased by another 5,000 Spiritual Values. This caused him to grin. After all, he could cultivate within this place for another day. This Su Ling’Er sure is generous and is quite wealthy. No matter who, as long as they managed to successfully obtain her love, they would never have to worry about not having enough Spiritual Values.

Su Ling’Er sent the person away after handing over some Spiritual Values. Then, her beautiful eyes were focused on the clear lake. She let out a hmph and said: “Are you still planning to hide like a coward now?”

“Ling’Er. Let me drag this person out for you and force him to apologize.” The boy in white clothes beside Su Ling’Er smiled.

“I can deal with it by myself.”

Su Ling’Er smiled faintly. She did not need an apology from him. She only wanted to defeat Mu Chen and prove to her sister that she wasn’t as weak as she had imagined!

Once she said these words, Su Ling’Er swept her hands and a beam of Spiritual Energy rushed out into the lake. Powerful waves and gales were blasted directly to the bottom of the lake.

“Mu Chen. Hurry and come out in front of this lady!”

When Su Ling’Er caused a ruckus at the lake, she shouted out towards the depths of the lake. Her voice was wrapped with Spiritual Energy and echoed through the sky as well.

At this moment, countless students cultivating nearby were affected. They quickly turned to the source of the commotion and stared in surprise. After all, Su Ling’Er was a celebrity within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Everyone would pay

attention to her actions.

“So she’s finding Mu Chen.”

“Is it the Number One Freshman? Mu Chen, who had recently obtained Rank 1 on the Spirit Ranking?”

“Who else could it be? He actually dared to provoke Su Ling’Er. He truly doesn’t know much about the world.

“Su Ling’Er is about to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase, right? Although Mu Chen is quite powerful, he will probably suffer this time.”

Whispers resounded out through the sky. Countless individuals stared at this place with interest. After all, cultivation was considerably boring. Right now, it was evident that this scene would help relieve them from their boredom.

Just when this area became lively, Mu Chen opened his eyes from the bottom of the lake. Black flames surged within his eyes and the nearby lake water instantly evaporated.

He lifted his head slowly and frowned. He could vaguely guess why this trouble had occurred.

Chapter 199 – Battle between the Old and New Spirit Ranking Rank 1

In the sky above the lake, Su Ling'Er stood in mid-air as she stared down towards the bottom of the lake. She raised her eyebrow slightly. Even with all this, that bastard is actually trying to hide from her?

"Could it be that the Number One Freshman this year is actually a coward?" The boy in white clothes behind Su Ling'Er laughed out mockingly.

"Ling'Er. Watch me drag out that guy for you!" At that moment, he descended down after speaking. When Su Ling'Er noticed this, she did not stop him from rushing towards the bottom of the lake.

Seeing that Su Ling'Er did not object to his actions, he grinned and dense Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. At the same time, his body turned into a figure of light as he rushed down towards the bottom of the lake.

It was evident that he was planning to enter the lake and to drag out Mu Chen from his hiding place.

His speed was extremely fast and the wind pressure from his descent caused a large crater to form on the surface of the lake. Then, he tore past the surface and rushed into the lake. However, a sudden pillar of water burst out like a water dragon from below.

This water dragon smashed heavily on the boy in white clothes. Moreover, the Spiritual Energy within the water dragon had caused the boy to be blown away awkwardly. At the same time, his clothes were completely wet.

As the boy stabilized himself, his expression turned slightly pale. His gaze was firmly fixed at the center of the lake. At that location, a huge whirlpool had formed. And within the center of the whirlpool, a water pillar suddenly burst out. A handsome boy with

a slender body had emerged from the water pillar.

When Mu Chen emerged from the bottom of the lake, he stared at the nearby figures before his gaze settled on Su Ling'Er. He frowned and asked: "May I know why you are disturbing my cultivation?"

"So you're that Mu Chen?"

Su Ling'Er stared at Mu Chen, who had appeared. She carefully observed him for a moment before saying: "I'm Su Ling'Er. You should know why I am searching for you, right?"

So it was her...

Mu Chen frowned and replied faintly: "Are all of the seniors within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this narrow-minded? Every time they are beaten within the rankings, they would have to appear in front of me. Could it be that, in your eyes, it is truly difficult to endure a freshman surpassing you?"

Su Ling'Er's face instantly turned red. She was slightly angered by the tone displayed by Mu Chen. Hmph, this bastard. Just what is there to be proud of? He had only broken her results from a year ago!

"It's not like I care about the measly title of the Spirit Ranking Rank 1." Su Ling'Er gritted her teeth as she spoke: "I only wanted to see exactly how special the Number One Freshman this year was. But judging from what I've seen, you seemed to be quite ordinary."

"From the very start, I was just an ordinary freshman." Mu Chen smiled: "It seems that I've disappointed this senior. If that's all you've wanted, then please leave. I still need to cultivate and I have no time to play with you."

After saying this, he attempted to dive down into the lake again. Judging from his appearance, it seemed that he did not wanted to be related to Su Ling'Er at all.

At this moment, Su Ling'Er was actually dumbfounded. It was the first time that she had seen such a person from the opposite sex act like this in front of her. This surprised her, yet it also angered her.

"Hmph. Boy, Su Ling'Er didn't let you leave, yet, you actually dare to leave? Stay right here!"

Because he was taken in by surprise at the beginning, the boy, who had turned into an awkward state due to the water pillar, suddenly shouted out loud. His body quickly appeared above Mu Chen as he smacked downwards.

Rumbling Spiritual Energy surged downwards. The extraordinary attack had actually caused waves to spread throughout the surface of the lake.

Since he had turned to this awkward state by Mu Chen previously, he thought that he had shamed himself in front of Su Ling'Er and he naturally wanted to get back his pride. Therefore, he did not hold back in his attack and used his full strength instead.

Seeing that this boy act immediately after he had spoke, his black eyes had turned cold. This person's strength was similar to Yang Hong. To a certain extent, he wasn't as strong as Yang Hong after Yang Hong had summoned the Ancient Tiger Dragon.

"You really thought that you can do just anything to a freshman?"

Mu Chen's hands spun and dark-black Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. Within the Spiritual Energy, a black flame danced around and an extreme heat emerged. In that instant, the water beneath Mu Chen's foot boiled up.

Mu Chen's hands turned into a fist as he fired out a punch straight out. The dark-black Spiritual Energy flowed through his arm and rushed out like a lion with blazing black flames. It did not

retreat as it collided against the boy in white clothes's attack.

Spiritual Energy shockwaves stormed out from the place where the two attacks collided. A massive abyss was forcibly ripped apart on the surface of the lake.

But when the two Spiritual Energy collided with each other, the boy in white clothes's expression changed dramatically. This is because he detected that his Spiritual Energy was being consumed at an alarming rate.

"This person's Spiritual Energy is quite strange!"

The boy in white clothes was surprised as he stared towards Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy. He noticed that within the black Spiritual Energy, there was a black flame dancing around. Every time it passed by, it would burn his Spiritual Energy and reveal its overbearingness.

Mu Chen let out a deep hmph and the Spiritual Energy within his body burst out without mercy. Dense Spiritual Energy mixed with black flames had rushed up towards the sky.

The boy in white clothes's attack was completely burned away. At this instant, shock filled his face and he hastily retreated. However, Mu Chen did not allow this. His moved quickly and appeared in front of the boy in white clothes. His body was like a bullet as his shoulder smashed onto the boy's chest.

The boy in white clothes was sent directly flying away. Blood flowed out from the corner of his lips as he felt something sweet within his throat. Due to the impact from Mu Chen, his clothes were completely shattered away.

At this moment, commotions broke out from the people watching this scene nearby. The boy in white clothes wasn't particularly nameless, he, too, possessed a bit of fame within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Moreover, his strength was in no way inferior to Yang Hong, yet he was at a disadvantage

during his momentary contact with Mu Chen.

The boy with white clothes turned pale and his eyes darkened. He wiped off the blood traces at the corner of his lips. Then, he stared coldly at Mu Chen as the Spiritual Energy within his body turned more violently.

“Liu Tong!”

However, Su Ling’Er had shouted out just when the boy in white clothes’s eyes darkened: “This is my own affair. I don’t need you to intervene in them!”

Hearing this, the fluctuations emitted from the boy in white clothes gradually weakened. However, the eyes that stared at Mu Chen were still quite gloomy. He was at a disadvantageous position earlier because he did not know about this strange Spiritual Energy. If they were to fight again, it wouldn’t be easy for Mu Chen to gain the upper hand against him!

Mu Chen glanced at the boy in white clothes for a moment before he looked over to Su Ling’Er. He said coldly: “What do you want? Are you going to continue releasing your charm so that you’ll find more opponents for me?”

At this moment, his voice was filled with impatience and rudeness. He was not acquainted with Liu Tong at all and did not bear any resentment with him. However, hatred was formed between them due to Su Ling’Er. Therefore, he was slightly pissed off.

It was evident that Su Ling’Er was rarely treated this way. Therefore, her face turned bright red as she took a deep breath. Her voluptuous chest was lifted up slightly and she replied as she suppressed her rage: “Relax. I, Su Ling’Er, wouldn’t do such a despicable act. I don’t care much about the Spirit Ranking’s Rank 1. However, I have the right to get back the face that I lost when you seized that title. Since you’ve made me lose face, it can’t be that you’re not permitting me to get it back now?!”

“I give up, okay?”

Mu Chen replied faintly and ignored Su Ling’Er. He turned around and descended down towards the lake once again. Time was pressing for him, so he didn’t have time to play with this girl.

“You!”

Su Ling’Er gritted her teeth. It was apparent that she was angered by Mu Chen’s words and actions. Therefore, she did not speak any longer and, instead, fiery red Spiritual Energy surged out from her body. It formed into a Spiritual Energy pillar as it tore through the sky towards Mu Chen.

Sensing the sudden Spiritual Energy fluctuation from behind, Mu Chen’s eyes focused and he blasted out a punch as well. Four Limitless Death Seals emerged and collided against the Spiritual Energy pillar.

Another burst of Spiritual Energy shockwaves erupted out. Enormous waves were formed and rain poured down near the lake.

Ripples began to emerge from where Mu Chen was standing. His expression turned serious. Although Su Ling’Er may look sweet and arrogant, she was indeed quite powerful. She was many times stronger than Liu Tong.

“Hmph. So this year’s Number One Freshman is quite womanly. He doesn’t have the boldness that the other Number One Freshmen from previous years had. He doesn’t even dare to receive a challenge from a girl!” Su Ling’Er stared at Mu Chen, who was within the pouring rain. She laughed out coldly as she spoke.

“However, it’s not possible for you to reject this duel today!”

Su Ling’Er’s body rushed down as a fiery red Spiritual Energy surged out towards the sky. From the fluctuations of the Spiritual Energy, it was extremely close to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase!

Su Ling’Er had turned into a figure of flames as she descended

down towards Mu Chen. Her slender hand moved and dense Spiritual Energy surged out like a storm. It carried the rain as it whistled over towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen lifted his head and black flames surged within his eyes. He, too, took a deep breath and a thunderous roar rushed out from his throat. Then, he turned around and smacked out with his palm.

Black Spiritual Energy surged out from within Mu Chen's body without reservation. From afar, it seemed like a sea of black flames. Even before the rain had poured down, it had been completely evaporated by the black Spiritual Energy.

The two extraordinary Spiritual Energies smashed against each other and shockwaves spread out. The lake's water was blasted into the sky as a massive storm raged through this area.

Countless gazes were focused at a place above the massive lake. As the storm raged throughout this area, two figures were confronting each other. At the same time, both the fiery red Spiritual Energy and the dark-black Spiritual Energy had occupied half of the sky.

At that location, a boy and girl confronted each other with serious expressions.

Many people's eyes were filled with interest as they watched this scene. The two individuals in front of them possessed a bit of fame within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. There was no need to mention about Su Ling'Er's fame. As for Mu Chen, his reputation had soared due to the recent Freshmen Competition. Therefore, the battle between the two of them would definitely be a sight to watch.

Furthermore, the most important part is that...it was the confrontation between the previous and new Spirit Ranking's Rank 1. This made them quite curious. Just which one of them had the greater odds of victory?

Chapter 200 – Means

Crash.

The overwhelming rain enveloped the sky that surrounded the lake as it poured down. Ripples emerged constantly from the surface of the lake, and crisp sounds resounded endlessly from the storm.

At the center of the lake, a boy and a girl were confronting each other. An extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation was emitted from both of them. Before the rain even managed to approach their bodies, it was blown away.

Numerous figures nearby were attracted to this scene. They stared curiously at the two individuals confronting each other.

Mu Chen stood on the surface of the lake as he stared at the beautiful girl confronting him. The girl had bright eyes and white teeth. Moreover, she possessed a slim figure and was an exceptional beauty. However, she was currently like an angry cat, and was glaring at him tightly.

Against such an opponent, Mu Chen felt slightly troubled. If the opponent was someone that went overboard like Mo Lun, he wouldn't hesitate to teach her a lesson. However, Su Ling'Er wasn't as annoying as Mo Lun. Therefore, it was evident that it would be too mean if he gravely injured her, yet it wouldn't be easy to calm down such a person if he went too lightly.

Su Ling'Er stared at Mu Chen with her beautiful eyes as she grit her teeth. Then, her hands danced as she suddenly charged towards him. Judging from her elegant movements, it was clear that she'd learned a rather special Movement Spiritual Art.

Furthermore, her mastery of this Spiritual Art was many times higher than the Shadowspirit Step that Mu Chen had trained in.

Mu Chen was slightly shocked. Although Su Ling'Er had a boyish

attitude, her strength was no joke. It was no wonder that she'd managed to occupy the 1st Rank on the Spirit Ranking for so long; it seemed she hadn't solely relied on her sister to obtain her reputation within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

In an instant, Su Ling'Er had emerged in front of Mu Chen. At the same time, a flame-like whip had appeared within her slender hands. Scarlet scales were plastered all along the whip, and an extraordinary Spiritual Energy was emanated from it. It was evident that this whip was a Spiritual Artifact. Moreover, it was definitely a higher ranked one compared to the Black Pot Spiritual Artifact that Mu Chen had obtained previously...

At the very least, it was a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact.

Mu Chen's lips twitched. It was the first time that he'd fought against someone who'd directly brought out such a Spiritual Artifact. Although there were many Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact within the Spiritual Values Hall, these Spiritual Artifact had an extremely high price. The cheapest ones could be bought with a few thousand Spiritual Value Points, while the more expensive ones could be bought with hundreds of thousands. However, with Su Ling'Er's personality, it was obviously that she wouldn't purchase the former...

Therefore, the power of the scarlet whip made Mu Chen slightly afraid.

Yet Su Ling'Er didn't hesitate at all in her fight against Mu Chen. She waved her hand and the scarlet whip flew out like a fiery dragon. It forcibly created a rip in the water along the surface of the lake as it headed towards Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen noticed this scarlet whip approaching him, he hurriedly retreated, not daring to take the attack directly. After all, Su Ling'Er was half-a-step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. With the help of her scarlet whip, she could probably fight for a while against a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase.

Therefore, it was only natural that Mu Chen would take evasive actions against the attack.

However, it was clear that Su Ling'Er was quite skilled at using her whip. Once she noticed that Mu Chen was evading her attacks, she quickly flicked her wrist, and the whip tore through the air. It swirled through the sky at an alarming speed and caught up with Mu Chen. Then, it smashed down angrily towards him.

When the whip smashed down, the wind pressure caused the lake to explode and to be divided into two pieces. Even with his evasive actions, the violent whip was like a dragon's tail, and it smashed into Mu Chen's shoulder.

As the lake burst open, Mu Chen's figure was seen flying into the lake. A large hole was formed within the surface of the lake.

Surprised voices rang out from the nearby audience. Since Su Ling'Er had managed to occupy the Spirit Ranking's 1st Ranked position for so long, she was indeed quite capable. The previous attack was extremely violent and accurate. Not to mention Mu Chen, even another Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase powerhouse wouldn't have been able to avoid it.

Seeing this, Su Ling'Er snorted and let out a light 'hmph' sound. Her hand shook for a moment, and the whip covered with fiery scales was retracted by her. It was wrapped around her slender waist.

"Oi. Just how long do you plan to hide inside the water?" Su Ling'Er gently patted her hand as she stared at the calm lake.

However, there was no response to her question. This stunned Su Ling'Er. Could it be that that bastard was gravely injured already? He couldn't even last for a long fight? But he'd managed to obtain the Spirit Ranking's 1st Rank...

Su Ling'Er waited for a moment. Upon seeing that there hadn't been any movements, she frowned. She'd only wanted to vent

some of her frustration, she hadn't intended to seriously injure Mu Chen.

"Plop!"

Just as Su Ling'Er frowned, the water surface that she was standing on was suddenly tore open. A water vortex formed, and a hand pierced through the water and grabbed onto her slender foot. Then, with a fierce tug, it dragged Su Ling'Er, who panicked, into the icy cold water.

When Su Ling'Er was forced into the lake, she hurriedly activated her Spiritual Energy. At the same time, her hand quickly grasped the scarlet whip on her waist.

But before she could perform any actions, a pair of arms appeared from behind her and completely locked down her hands. Then, a boy that permeated a manly smell emerged close to her.

"You!"

At this moment, Su Ling'Er's petite body was being locked down as if she was being embraced. Her expression changed, and she quickly struggled. However, Mu Chen knew that it wouldn't be easy to deal with this girl if she went berserk. Therefore, he also activated his Spiritual Energy and dragged her to the bottom of the lake.

"Bastard, release me!"

Su Ling'Er struggled fiercely, and Spiritual Energy surged out from her endlessly. Yet, her struggles were in vain, as her limbs were all locked down by Mu Chen.

Moreover, as she'd struggled, their bodies had brushed against each other. This feeling instantly made Su Ling'Er's face turn as red as a tomato; rage filled her eyes.

"Don't move!"

Mu Chen shouted. This girl was indeed quite wild.

“Mu Chen, you bastard!” Su Ling’Er stared furiously at Mu Chen. She then stared down at the arm that had locked down her hands. She bit down fiercely, without any hesitation, on it.

Under the infusion of Spiritual Energy, her bite wasn’t inferior to a tiger’s bite. Therefore, fresh blood soon overflowed from Mu Chen’s arm.

Mu Chen inhaled deeply. The pain that he felt from his arm made him doubt whether or not his entire arm had snapped due to her bite. This girl wasn’t that old, yet why were her teeth so strong?

“Let go!” Mu Chen’s lips twitched as he shouted.

However, Su Ling’Er ignored him, and instead bit down even harder when she noticed Mu Chen’s twitching expression.

At this instant, Mu Chen’s eyes turned fierce. He pulled fiercely with his arms and directly pulled Su Ling’Er into his arms. Then, he freed one of his arms and spanked the girl.

Even though his palm had to pass through the icy-cold lake, it was still filled with strength as he spanked the girl on the butt. A crisp sound resounded out slightly within the bottom of the lake.

When Mu Chen’s palm connected, he noticed that the girl within his arms had instantly stiffened. Then, he noticed that Su Ling’Er’s face had turned fiery red. Even her eyes were showing signs of redness within them.

“Bastard! Bastard!”

At that moment, Su Ling’Er went mad. She didn’t relax her biting attack, and instead began clawing at Mu Chen. She seemed to have forgotten about utilizing her Spiritual Energy, and displayed the sharpness of her claws like an ordinary girl.

After Mu Chen was scratched a few times, he was slightly angered as well. He didn’t care about anything anymore, and spanked her once again.

Spank! Spank!

Clear sounds spread out at the bottom of the lake, which caused ripples to form. Mu Chen didn't hesitate, and spanked her a dozen times without any mercy. After enduring these dozen hits, Su Ling'Er finally cried, and didn't dare to act violently.

"Are you going to continuing biting me?!" Mu Chen said with a furious expression.

"Mu Chen, you bastard!" The girl cried and didn't have the boyish attitude that she'd had previously. The pain that had appeared from her butt had made her both embarrassed and ashamed.

Seeing her like this, Mu Chen stopped and pushed her aside quickly. Then, he retreated backwards and stared at her as he guarded himself against her. He was afraid that she would enter that berserk state again. After all, Su Ling'Er wasn't that weak, and it was evident that she was stronger than Yang Hong even when he'd utilized the Ancient Tiger Dragon. Therefore, it would be quite tricky for him to defeat her before he advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

Su Ling'Er grit her teeth and her eyes turned red after she'd finished crying. When she noticed that Mu Chen had released her, her hand immediately touched the scarlet whip at her waist.

"You dare!"

Mu Chen shouted out with a fierce expression.

At this moment, Su Ling'Er's body shuddered. It was evident that she was quite afraid. As she stared at Mu Chen, who had a dark expression, fear slowly began to creep into her fearless heart. Fortunately, they were at the bottom of the lake, and nobody had seen what had happened. Otherwise, she might have died due to the embarrassment.

"You were asking for what happened to you today. A girl should

act more gentle. You shouldn't spend all day looking for trouble." Seeing Su Ling'Er stop when he shouted at her, Mu Chen had a strange feeling, and said in an emotionless tone.

In response, Su Ling'Er covered her butt with her petite hands as she stared at Mu Chen. Her eyes were red and filled with rage. Then, she shouted, "Mu Chen. Remember this! I'll never forgive you!"

After saying this, she actually turned away and burst out from the lake. Once she'd exited the lake, she wouldn't talk with anyone, and instead dashed towards the outside of the Spirit Convergence Array.

At the bottom of the lake, Mu Chen stared at the departing Su Ling'Er and was slightly relieved. He stared at his bloody arm and let out a bitter smile. That girl was truly like a dog. Those teeth of hers...

Luckily, he'd finally managed to send her away. It wasn't a bad result, considering that he hadn't had to pay a high price in order to defeat her. Although his means used to defeat her were somewhat unauthentic, they had occurred only because Mu Chen hadn't wanted to have a true battle with her. If they were to truly face each other, Mu Chen wasn't afraid of her at all.

"I hope that she won't tell her sister about this matter."

Mu Chen curled his lips. Currently, he might be able to deal with Su Ling'Er. However, if she called out to her sister, Su Xuan, who was ranked third on the Heavenly Rankings, it would definitely be trouble.

"It seems that I must hurry and advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage."

Mu Chen's expression turned serious. His current strength was truly lacking. Therefore, he had to make a breakthrough as soon as possible!

Table of Contents

- The Great Ruler
  - Synopsis
  - Acknowledgement
  - Chapter 101 – Heavenly Fusion Stage
  - Chapter 102 – Deal
  - Chapter 103 – Borrowing Strength
  - Chapter 104 – Fighting Liu Jingshan
  - Chapter 105 – Rank 3 Spiritual Array
  - Chapter 106 – Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array
  - Chapter 107 – Exterminate
  - Chapter 108 – Conclusion
  - Chapter 109 – Recovery
  - Chapter 110 – Departure
  - Chapter 111 – Northern Heavens World
  - Chapter 112 – Girl in a Black Dress
  - Chapter 113 – Targeted
  - Chapter 114 – Slaughter the Chicken to Warn the Monkey
  - Chapter 115 – The Third Limitless Death Seal
  - Chapter 116 – SunEr
  - Chapter 117 – Three-Man Journey
  - Chapter 118 – Ye Qingling
  - Chapter 119 – Ge Hai
  - Chapter 120 – Blood Calamity
  - Chapter 121 – In the Past, Right NowYet Still Strong
  - Chapter 122 – Terms and Conditions
  - Chapter 123 – Fighting For Treasures
  - Chapter 124 – Golden Revolution Soulreaver Array
  - Chapter 125 – Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia
  - Chapter 126 – Spirit Stage
  - Chapter 127 – Subdue
  - Chapter 128 – Spoils of War
  - Chapter 129 – Spread of Information
  - Chapter 130 – Dragon Elephant Array
  - Chapter 131 – Chu Qi
  - Chapter 132 – Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast

Chapter 133 – Vajra Pagoda
Chapter 134 – Mysterious Spirithail Dragon
Chapter 135 – Formation
Chapter 136 – Ten Thousand Men Slaying Spirithail Dragon
Chapter 137 – Geocentric Flame Japalura
Chapter 138 – Snatch
Chapter 139 – The Great Chase
Chapter 140 – Changes inside Body
Chapter 141 – Bloodline Bond
Chapter 142 – Reunion
Chapter 143 – Resolve
Chapter 144 – Might of the Dragon Elephant Array
Chapter 145 – Old Rival
Chapter 146 – Meeting Place
Chapter 147 – Shi Familys Brothers
Chapter 148 – Fighting Against Shi Jingtian
Chapter 149 – Black Flames
Chapter 150 – Northern Heavens Hall
Chapter 151 – The Final Challenge
Chapter 152 – An Ran
Chapter 153 – The Freshman's Counterattack
Chapter 154 – Spirit Bird Suppresses the Ice Seahawk
Chapter 155 – Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy
Chapter 156 – Yang Hong
Chapter 157 – Importance of Spiritual Value Points
Chapter 158 – Spiritual Value Hall
Chapter 159 – Storming into the Spirit Ranking
Chapter 160 – Rank 3 of the Spirit Ranking
Chapter 161 – Spirit Pill
Chapter 162 – Mo Lun
Chapter 163 – Breakthrough in the Lightning Territory
Chapter 164 – I will Control the Heaven and Earth
Chapter 165 – Pagoda
Chapter 166 – Blockade
Chapter 167 – Mo Lun
Chapter 168 – The Might of the Pagoda
Chapter 169 – Association
Chapter 170 – Cheating
Chapter 171 – Goddess Luo Association

Chapter 172 – Spar
Chapter 173 – Heavenly Rankings Rank 2, Li Xuantong
Chapter 174 – Face-off
Chapter 175 – Freshman Competition
Chapter 176 – Northern Spirit Mountain
Chapter 177 – Reaching the Summit
Chapter 178 – Stone Platform
Chapter 179 – Summit
Chapter 180 – Yang Hongs Hidden Strength
Chapter 181 – Mu Chen VS Yang Hong
Chapter 182 – Array of the Great Ifrit
Chapter 183 – The Nine Netherbird Appears
Chapter 184 – The Power of the Bloodline Bond
Chapter 185 – Black Tower Seals the Tiger Dragon
Chapter 186 – Who's the Number One Freshman?
Chapter 187 – Conversation
Chapter 188 – Spiritual Energy Fusion
Chapter 189 – Number One
Chapter 190 – Su Xuan, He Yao
Chapter 191 – Spiritual Arts Hall
Chapter 192 – Selecting the Spiritual Art
Chapter 193 – Four Gods Constellation Scripture
Chapter 194 – Protector
Chapter 195 – Trick
Chapter 196 – Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array
Chapter 197 – Cultivating at the Bottom of the Lake
Chapter 198 – Su LingEr
Chapter 199 – Battle between the Old and New Spirit Ranking Rank 1
Chapter 200 – Means